International Symposium on

TECHNOLOGY, JOBS AND A LOWER CARBON FUTURE: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy (The case of rice in India)

13-14 June 2013

PAPERS

Venue

Lecture Room II, India International Centre (Annexe)
40, Max Mueller Marg, New Delhi

Organised by

UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

INSTITUTE FOR HUMAN DEVELOPMENT

With support from

E·S·R·C ECONOMIC & SOCIAL RESEARCH COUNCIL

DFID Department for International Development

CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION

Barbara Harriss-White

International Symposium on

TECHNOLOGY, JOBS AND A LOWER CARBON FUTURE: METHODS, SUBSTANCE AND IDEAS FOR THE INFORMAL ECONOMY (THE CASE OF RICE IN INDIA)

INTRODUCTION

Throughout the world, the present and future dangers associated with climate change are increasingly recognized and apparent. In May 2013, the Scripps Institute, which tracks atmospheric carbon, recorded an average of 400 ppm for the first time.[1]Meanwhile, scientists, governments, business and some civil society groups are engaged in the search for ways to reduce the output of greenhouse gases.

So far international agreements have failed to generate a meaningful impact on global CO2-e emissions: energy majors have been retreating from renewable energy; cap and trade -suffering from the chronic over-allocation of permits - has failed to drive the price of carbon to levels which incentivize low-C innovation. The reporting of emissions on a production rather than consumption basis has led to false claims of emission reductions from developed nations as their industry relocates while their populations maintain unsustainable consumption behaviour. At the same time, the clean development mechanism struggles with establishing counterfactuals, with problems of measurement and rent-seeking.

An alternative - or supplementary – approach, and one backed by the Government of India, is one of co-benefits, and 'relentless pragmatism'.[2]Under the co-benefit approach, decarbonifying the economy, though desirable as an end in it self is politically contingent on *other* goals and even justifiable in non-environmental terms. While co-benefits might be energy efficiency, 'respect for ecosystems' and protection from risk (as in the international Hartwell project),[3]the British Campaign against Climate Change has identified employment as a co-benefit alongside reducing GHGs.[4]Dubash and colleagues have recently published an analysis of the co-benefits of economic growth, social inclusion, environmental gains, and GHG mitigation for a set of policy instruments including transport, bio fuel and energy efficiency in appliances.[5]

---

[1]http://www.esrl.noaa.gov/gmd/ccgg/trends/.
[2]Dubash N, D Raghunandan, G Sant and A Srinivas 2013 Indian Climate change Policy: exploring a co-benefits approach .*Economic and Political Weekly*vol XLVIII no 22 June 1st pp 47-62
[3]Hartwell Paper 2010http://www2.lse.ac.uk/researchAndExpertise/units/mackinder/theHartwellPaper/Home.aspx
[4]http://www.pcs.org.uk/en/resources/green_workplaces/green_campaigns/one-million-climate-jobs.cfm
[5]Dubash et al (2013) op cit

Yet so far this view has not found much favour in India where a vast majority claims the right to pollute. In terms of stocks, an incontrovertible argument framed in justice has it that India has played a negligible role in producing the planetary stock of pollutants. In terms of flows, India defends the right to use coal-based electricity in a development project to eliminate poverty. Indeed, its emissions are very low on a per caput basis.

By contrast it is a small minority which suggests that development based on fossil fuel is a luxury India cannot afford - owing both to the rate of degradation of the natural environment and the rate of addition to a workforce that is underemployed as a consequence of the current development model. However moving directly towards a low-C transition involves pioneering development strategies without precedent: no country – whether so-called advanced or developing – has yet achieved this.

If this were not difficult enough, while the major polluting industries have been comparatively well studied (iron and steel, energy itself, cement, aluminium, fertilizer and paper/pulp), very little attention has been paid to greenhouse gas production in the informal sector at both the national and international scales.

Informal activity dominates the economies of many countries, and is growing globally.[6] In countries like India, 9 out of 10 livelihoods, and 60% or more of GDP, are in the informal economy. The boundary between the formal and informal -the state-regulated and the socially regulated - economy is becoming ever more complex. Formally registered big polluters have a growing portion of their labour forces unregistered and in formalised. The formal sector may 'leak' materials into the informal sector – 25 % of India's coal has been estimated to seep out to be marketed in this way, and a significant part of the transmission and distribution losses in India's electricity grid is being tapped as a 'free' energy source for informal activity.[7]The informal economy is a major consumer of goods from the big polluting sectors of the economy. It is also an epicenter of poverty and provides the worst quality of jobs. India's trajectory of 'jobless growth' does not factor-in the high quantity of low quality livelihoods in the informal economy. Last but not least, the informal sector is by definition hard to reach through the normal processes of policy making and implementation. It is where policy doesn't directly reach. Beyond a highly contested interface with the state, the informal economy is regulated through business associations and social institutions, including those of identity.

Any move towards lowering the carbon content of the informal economy should also offer better quality work if it is to succeed. Knowledge about the roles of informal firms and informal work/ activity is therefore also as essential as is knowledge about GHGs.

---

[6]In China it was unknown 30 years ago and now is estimated to account for over 40% of the economy (WIEGO). In Europe it has been estimated at 20%.
[7]Kuntala LahiriDutt

The economy needs to be seen in an integrated way as a provisioning system of capital (technology) and labour, producing commodities and waste. Waste may be solid, liquid or gaseous.

The research brought together in this symposium set out to measure materiality in the form of inputs – not confined to conventional factors of production but focusing on energy and water; and outputs - not confined to products and by e-products but focusing also on gaseous waste - greenhouse gases - in the informal economy.

Why choose rice?

The honest answer is that most of the team of researchers who joined forces for this project[8] have backgrounds in biological sciences and rural/agrarian development. And though the British researchers are actively involved in strengthening the inadequate British response to climate change there, by training they are India specialists.

Rice has been chosen **NOT** because it is a big polluter (though the global food system and land-based activity is thought to account for up to 32%[9]of total GHGs) but because:

i) Rice is **bio-physically complex** – emitting a range of different GHGs as well as sequestering carbon, so it is scientifically interesting;
ii) Rice is **socio-technically complex** – not only in production but also in marketing , hence of social scientific interest;
iii) **Resources, employment and poverty** are entwined in production-distribution systems so rice is of interest for policy;
iv) Production and distribution in rural and urban sites and flows weave in and out of **the informal economy**–making it of **theoretical and policy interest;**
v) **Food** is said to be generally exempt from the international scenarios lowering emissions (Anderson/Royal Society 2011) i.e. it is a **political special case** (but how special?)

The growing literature on climate change and rice[10] stresses its vulnerability to temperature rises, weeds and pests; rain and crop failure. It predicts future yield declines in many areas where rice is presently grown. These will have a critical impact on food prices and food security especially if there is no substantial change in access and utilisation (for India's great achievement in production is not mirrored in nutrition where 47% of under-5s are malnourished - throughout the income distribution).

[8]The host is the Institute of Human Development, New Delhi where Prof D Narasimha Reddy represents the project. Other institutions are: the Madras School of Economics (Prof Hema); Jawarhalal Nehru University (Prof Deepak Mishra); Jindal Global University (Prof Aseem Prakash); National Institute of Rural Development, Hyderabad (Prof D Narasimha Reddy), the New Trade Union Initiatives, Delhi (Mr Gautam Mody), the Centre for Worker's Management, Bangalore (Mr Mohan Mani) and Chennai (Ms Meghna Sukumar). The Life Cycle Analyst is Dr Alfred Gathorne–Hardy, Area Studies, Oxford University. The team is co-ordinated by Prof Barbara Harriss-White, Area Studies, Oxford University.barbara.harriss-white@qeh.ox.ac.uk
Seehttp://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/resources-greenhouse-gases-technology-and-jobs-indias-informal-economy-case-rice

[9]Bellarby J, Foereid B, Hastings A and Smith P (2008).*Cool farming: climate impacts of agriculture and mitigation potential*. Amsterdam, Greenpeace

[10]Reviewed inNelson et al, IFPRI, 2009

The scientific agenda for the response of rice to climate change homes in on i) crop-livestock research on inter-relationships of physical stress; ii) irrigation management; iii) biotech innovations (including hybridity and GM); iv) collective action/farmers' groups (for information and dissemination, watershed management and perhaps for economies of scale in marketing).[11]It is evident that the agenda has a focus on adaptation rather than mitigation.

The research reported in this symposium however has a normative focus on mitigation rather than adaptation.

Our research has had to grapple with non-trivial problems of epistemology and method. The way knowledge is being constructed in the 21stcentury obstructs integrated research. Climate science and climate change policy, material life cycle assessment, the informal economy, value/supply chains, labour studies, policy studies, science and technology studies, agriculture, agricultural markets and rice are all specialist subfields with their own terminology, literatures and career tracks. For instance the value chain literature neglects labour; as do most climate change scenarios. Science and technology studies while routinely neglecting labour also neglect the informal economy - and so on. Multi-disciplinary research rarely succeeds in integrating these knowledge fields. In spanning science and social science, our research problem is trans-disciplinary and faces even more theoretical and methodological inconsistencies and quirks than does multi-and inter-disciplinary research.

We have addressed these problems in an on-going process of mutual teaching and learning. [12]

Starting with a sector of the economy[13] and with the science, life cycle assessment (LCA) has been grafted onto supply/value chain analysis (VCA). LCA measures GHGs at all stages of a production-consumption process from raw materials procurement to the waste disposal at the end of a consumption process. VCA has a similar concept of a ladder/chain and seeks to compute value added, rents and potential for technological / managerial upgrading. In biophysical and social terms these subfields from environmental science and management economics take as systems approach, one which is appropriate for the institutions of production and distribution of rice.

Fieldwork on the physical and economic parameters of every stage of production-distribution has been conducted in three states (Odisha, Andhra Pradesh and Tamil Nadu) on four systems of rice production (rain fed, SRI, HYV and organic) and 3-4 distribution circuits (informal; registered firms; supermarket supply chains and the Public Distribution System (the last is unfinished as yet)). We had also hoped to differentiate small and large farms and firms but while this was possible for parts of the

[11]ibid

[12]http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/learning-workshop-materiality-rice-world-institute-sustainable-energy-pune-and-contemporary-south

[13]The alternative scientific approach, material flow analysis, takes a unit of territory – a region (e.g. the EU, country (Austria), town (York and Limerick have been studied) or village (a case in Turkey). It is too data intensive to be appropriate for a pilot project in the informal economy.

distribution system, the data on production is from a set of overwhelmingly small farms. In the Orissa and Andhra research the micro-level variations in production technologies known and labeled as rain-fed' and 'SRI' have been explored.

Research on energy and materials efficiency leads to normative questions: how to scope and to analyse technologies and policies reducing environmental impact in the informal economy? Here we experiment with one of the family of multi-criteria analytical methods – multi-criteria mapping. These methods are being developed to examine the trade-offs between multiple objectives (co-benefits) and incommensurable dimensions of social choices.

Over the past two decades, research on the quality of work and production relations has led to a conceptual forest of indicators - 125 in the ILO's Decent Work framework – failing to develop a multi-dimensional summary indicator fit for comparisons. While labour unions are frequently airbrushed out of public debate as 'stakeholders' of development, an Indian trade union initiative, with a focus on unorganised as well as unionised labour, has actively contributed to two aspects of the project. First using their experience to identify key aspects of the quantity and quality of work from the ILO's multitude of indicators, and second developing a labourist analysis of the supply chain. Meanwhile the material life cycle analyst has developed new summary indicators of work by means of which the trade-offs between costs and returns, work and GHGs may be ascertained.

Finally the research reported here provoked a series of cross-cutting themes, all concerning the informal economy:

- **i)** Why does regulation formally intended to cover the entire economy not do so? This required attention to the socio-political limits to the reach of the state's regulative policy, the interface between state and non-state regulation, and the forms of regulation of the informal economy. These have been studied through cases of transport (Haryana) and the parallel electricity system in Bihar.
- **ii)** Given that real casual wages have been rising since 2005, how does *un*organised labour make *gains* in the informal economy and what kind of gains have been achieved in the quality of work? This question generated a review of literature on the macro- and micro-politics of informal employer-employee relationships.[14]
- **iii)** The question, relevant to a low carbon transition, whether the informal economy is an obstacle to innovation and technical change (studied through the case of a town in northern Tamil Nadu).

---

[14] Barbara Harriss-White with Valentina Prosperi 'The Micro-Political-Economy of Gains By Unorganised Workers in India's Informal Economy' January 2013 Work in Progress Papers http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/working-papers-resources-greenhouse-gases-technology-and-jobs-indias-informal-economy-case-rice

The purpose of the symposium is to present results, to discuss and defend methods, to open our pilot project to critical scrutiny, and to speculate about the implications for public action/policy and for further research.

When all the greenhouse gases are factored in to the systems we have modeled, some of the results prove to be surprising and the implications for technological alternatives provoke debate. Our pilot project will be vindicated if further directions are taken for rice[15] and if new applications are developed for other sectors of the informal economy. [16]

[15]Candidates are hybrid/ GM rice; and the integration of biodiversity and resilience to shocks into the rice production-distribution system.

[16]The construction sector, and livestock intensification are two possible candidates.

INDIA'S INFORMAL ECONOMY AND THE VALUE OF VALUE CHAIN ANALYSIS: A CASE STUDY OF RICE

R. Hema

INDIA'S INFORMAL ECONOMY AND THE VALUE OF VALUE CHAIN ANALYSIS: A CASE STUDY OF RICE

R. Hema[17]

Introduction: Climate Change and Agriculture

The total GHG emissions from India in 2007 were estimated to be about 1904.73 million mtCO_2e, by the Indian Network for Climate Change Assessment. The agriculture sector contributed to about 19 percent of these emissions and was the third highest contributor after energy and industry. Within agriculture, rice cultivation using the puddled-transplanted technique, accounted for 21 percent of the emissions with bulk of it as methane. Globally, the agriculture sector is estimated to contribute directly about10 to 12 percent of the total GHG emissions (Smith P et al, 2007, IPCC Fourth Assessment Report) and by 2030 the emissions from this sector are expected to increase by 50 percent. Hence, there is an increasingly urgent need to tackle the impact of agriculture on climate change, by mitigating the GHG emissions from this sector.

Climate change is also having an adverse impact on agriculture. Rising mean temperature and increasing variability/volatility in precipitation rates are expected to have a negative impact on agricultural yields, more so in tropical and developing countries. In the Indian context, two thirds of the sown area in the country is drought prone and about 40 million hectares are flood prone which gives an indication of the degree of vulnerability of agricultural production to climate change. (Centre for Sustainable Agriculture).It has been estimated that over the forty year time period between the mid-fifties and mid-nineties, the climate sensitivity of net revenue from agriculture has increased over time and has been more pronounced between the eighties and nineties (Kavi Kumar, 2009). There is also growing evidence of declining agricultural productivity during the same period. In the case of rice in India, climate change is projected negatively to affect the yields of irrigated rice by about 10 percent in the majority of the coastal districts, to increase the yield of rain-fed rice in the east coast by about 15 percent and reduce the yield of rain-fed rice in the west coast by 20 percent (INCCA, 2010). Hence, from the perspectives both of mitigation and of adaptation, there is a compelling need to shift away from the current dominant technologies and farming practices and move towards low carbon, climate resilient and sustainable crop management systems.

[17]Madras School of Economics, Gandhi Mandapam Road, Chennai – 600025. E-mail: hema@mse.ac.in

Various technologies and farming methods have been identified that could potentially mitigate the GHG emissions from agriculture and also sustain ecological balances. Pathak and Aggarwal (2012), based on a two year on-farm study of rice and wheat in Punjab evaluated twenty technologies in the production of rice and ten technologies in the production of wheat for their impact on Global Warming Potential (GWP) and their impact on net returns compared to the conventional puddle-transplanted rice and conventional tilled wheat. In the case of rice they found that most of the technologies (e.g. aerobic rice, system of rice intensification, direct seeded rice, sprinkler irrigation, zero till) that had good potential to lower GWP were also significantly lowering net returns. Hence, significant transition costs exist in shifting to these regimes and appropriate policy measures and public interventions would be needed to encourage the adoption of the GWP mitigating technologies and practices.

The issue is further compounded by the fact that, currently, the agriculture sector in India and large sections of the population that derive their livelihood from it are in dire straits. Current models of farming are proving to be economically unviable for millions of farmers (Centre for Sustainable Agriculture). While public spending on chemical fertilisers is dramatically increasing on the one hand, the chemical based intensive farming technologies are degrading productive and ecological resources and causing local environmental health disasters in many regions. The indiscriminate and widespread use of groundwater is seriously compromising water security. Over 50 percent of the population still depends on this sector whose contribution to GDP accounts for only 15 percent. Over 50 percent of India’s poor population are located in rural areas. Moreover, a significant part of agricultural and related activities are part of the country’s informal economy. This means mitigation and adaptation policies or public interventions affect those who derive their livelihood from this sector not directly but instead in indirect and complex ways that may not be immediately evident. In this context, if we want to move towards an agricultural regime in India that helps reduce its GHG emissions and at the same time addresses issues of financial viability and livelihood opportunities, we need to have a holistic understanding of the feedback relation between agricultural technology and climate change. We need to understand the implications of further technological change for the long-term financial/economic viability of agriculture, and for the quantity and quality of employment opportunities. We also need to understand the formal and informal social and economic institutions in which these technologies are embedded.

This paper critically discusses the advantages of using the value chain analysis (VCA) to study production and distribution in the context of climate change and informality. First, the conceptual framework in which VCA has evolved is outlined and its origins and history are traced. The various contexts in which VCA has been used so far are then briefly surveyed. The paper then discusses critically the merits of using this tool, in tandem with Life Cycle Analysis (LCA), to understand the multi-dimensional and multi-layered implications of possible shifts towards a lower carbon growth path (see Gathorne-Hardy, session IV, here). It also presents a methodological framework for its adaptation to an informal economy, using rice in India as the case study. While the methodological design has been developed for this application, in a broader and less nuanced sense it would be applicable to informal economies in other sectors and other locations too.

Value Chain Analysis – Conceptual Background

In his seminal work on 'The Nature of the Firm', Coase (1937) raises the following questions: why do firms exist? Why can't all transactions happen through market exchanges? Alternatively, why can't all production and transactions happen in one giant firm? The 'market' is a framework where production decisions and resource allocations are coordinated by the price mechanism through a series of exchange transactions by 'firms'. Inside a firm the price mechanism is superseded by the entrepreneur/coordinator whose coordination and authority directs production and resource allocations through a 'hierarchy'. Coase indicates that the boundaries of the firm are determined by whether it is cheaper to organise an additional transaction within the firm or to carry out this additional transaction through a market exchange. (See the Appendix for the concepts and connotations of some of the terms used in this and following sections).

Williamson (1971, 1973, 1979,) expanded this argument and sharpened the focus on factors determining the costs of transacting through the market and of transacting within a firm. He recognized that when buyers and sellers have to make transaction-specific investments in human or physical capital, the costs of these investments reduce flexibility for the parties involved to transact with any other seller or buyer. Given the human potential to take advantage of this tie-in and engage in opportunistic behaviour, he argued that the parties to the transaction would prefer to enter into a contractual relation. The nature and time-frame of the contract would depend on the degree of asset specificity and the life of the asset. The costs involved in designing, monitoring and enforcing these contracts are the costs of transacting through the market. Also, as indicated by Simon (1947), human rationality is bounded, and hence designing a complete contract that can spell out the terms for all possible eventualities is almost impossible. Given this, in certain cases, vertical integration may be a cheaper option. In the case of transactions within a firm, when the firm expands, the information asymmetry between the owners, managers and workers increases and leads to agency costs and bureaucracy costs. In response to the nature and magnitude of the costs involved in transacting through the market vis-à-vis transacting within a firm, 'governance structures' evolve to determine and assign property rights so as to minimise the total transaction costs. Hence, there exists a spectrum of governance structures within which the vertically integrated firm and the market can be envisaged as governance forms at the two ends of the spectrum with a range hybrid forms in between.

Once we move away from pure market transactions that take place under conditions of perfect competition, transaction costs can exist. The resulting governance structure determines the property rights assigned to the different agents engaged in the economic activity and this will have a strong bearing on the magnitude of economic 'value' that is created and on how this value gets to be shared. Economic 'rents' could also be generated and enjoyed by some agents.

The Historical Evolution of Value Chain Analysis

Value chain analysis has evolved for global supply arrangements. The post-world-war years witnessed a phenomenal growth in technology. Many firms worldwide expanded in terms of their scale of production and also vertically integrated into backward and forward linkages in order to take advantage of economies of scale, economies of scope and potential market power. In the early post-war decades market access was largely within national boundaries and access to international markets was determined by various bilateral/multilateral trade agreements, barriers/incentives created by the importing and exporting countries, the existence and role of monopolistic state trading enterprises and so on.

Since the eighties, with the advent of globalization, the barriers to the global flow of information, ideas, technology, factors and goods have been reduced. Greater and easier access to international markets has enabled greater specialization, the exploitation of comparative advantages and the development of competitive advantages between regions, countries and firms. Firms could access inputs from anywhere in the world where costs were minimised. They could outsource production of some of their components or some of their services to wherever it could be done more efficiently and could expand their markets into new countries. 'Transnational' and 'multinational'entities emerged and their production and service activities (input sourcing, manufacturing, assembling, marketing etc.) were dispersed across different parts of the globe. To coordinate activities sited in geographically dispersed regions, within diverse socio-political institutions and macroeconomic conditions, and to ensure quality, timely delivery and acceptable environmental standards, significant transaction costs had to be incurred. In response, non-market governance structures in the form of tightly specified contractual arrangements evolved to reduce these transaction costs.

In this scenario, the global market share and profit margins of firms in a given sector within a given country would not only depend on their production efficiencies and on national policies but would also depend on trade policies in the countries of its final markets, in the market structure for retail in destination countries, in the degree of market power in input markets (which may be in another country) as well as the governance structure coordinating the activities of the globally dispersed links within the sector. As a result, the relative shares of labour and capital, of skilled and unskilled labour, of production activities and marketing services, of the different countries across which the range of activities happen, in the income generated from the given sector became more complex and dynamic. The traditional firm-specific or industry-specific approach proved inadequate to unravel these complexities.

Value Chain Analysis emerged as a useful methodological tool in this context. Value Chain Analysis (VCA)was developed largely from two strands of literature: the literature on business strategy and organization following Michael Porter's Competitive Advantage (1985) and the literature on global commodity chains following Gereffi and Korzeniewicz (1994). The 'value chain' is defined by Kaplinsky and Morris(2000) as "the full range of activities which are required to bring a product or service from conception, through the intermediary phases of production, delivery to final consumers, and final disposal after use". It is basically a descriptive construct that provides a framework for the generation of data for the entire range of activities within and across the various links in the chain. Value chain analysis is similar to the filiere analysis used by French scholars to understand the processes of contractual agreements and vertical integration in French, French-colonial and ex-French-colonial agriculture from the sixties.

Value chain analysis is a heuristic framework for the generation of data to document the nature of inter-linkages, the flow of goods & services and the pattern of value addition or income generation within a chosen commodity chain. Value chains, however, are seen to be repositories of economic rents and the role of governance is central to the power relationships within the chain. These power relations in turn influence the shares that different actors within the chain can appropriate from the total value addition in the chain. The underlying institutional arrangements (the social, political and economic environment) in which they are embedded and the nature of comparative advantages or market power for different links in the chain have a bearing on the governance structure. Hence, the value chain provides a framework to gain useful insights about the combination of technical, institutional and governance aspects within and across various links of a chain. Such insights can inform strategic decision-making and effective policy making.

VCA as an Analytical Tool

The increasing integration of economic activities across the globe starting from the eighties opened up a lot of opportunities for firms and countries to participate and derive benefits from the process. At the same time there were also potential dangers for some players, 'links' in the new global commodity chains. As the latter evolved, it was increasingly recognized that production efficiencies alone would not suffice to participate and gain from the global competition. What was needed was systemic competitiveness, where the entire chain would be ‘lean and efficient’. Firms began to identify their core competencies and chose to outsource production processes and services that were not part of their core competencies. The governance structures for these chains were mostly hybrid varieties between market and hierarchy, involving various forms of contractual arrangement. Dynamic opportunities and disadvantages were created for different economic agents. In response to changing opportunities and constraints, the composition of value chains and their governance structures were constantly changing in bids to lower the sum of production and transaction costs. For example, the Hong Kong clothing industry initially produced directly for the US market during the regime of the Multi-Fibre Arrangement which imposed quotas on textile imports. When the HK quotas were exhausted, the same entrepreneurs shifted position in the value chain and started coordinating the production of clothes in other countries like China and Mauritius and passing them to final markets in the US and Europe. Later, they started branding their products and in some cases purchased retail outlets in Europe and the US to sell their branded items (Kaplinsky and Morris, 2000). In this context, VCA became an important tool for both industry and the state to inform decision-making, develop strategies and frame policies.

VCA for Industry

During the nineties, VCA was used largely in the context of industrial manufacturing activities. Automobiles, leather shoes and accessories, textiles were among the major sectors which started to outsource in a big way. VCA was used to understand how systemic competitiveness could be developed; to learn where and how input markets could be tapped for cost efficiencies; to identify segments in the chain where economic rents would be available and could be exploited; to identify technologies and management practices for upgrading so as to improve competitiveness and ensure participation in the chain; to explore and identify potential governance structures that would help maintain quality, on-time supply, environmental standards etc that would help minimize transaction costs.

Globalization has also had significant impact on income distribution both between countries and within countries. Some countries have witnessed immense rising growth, where their economic activities have been increasing in terms of employment and output but their terms of trade are falling. The terms of trade for countries specializing in primary commodities declined with respect to manufactured commodities. Income distribution within countries and between skilled and unskilled labour became more skewed. In all these cases VCA came to be used as a convenient tool to understand the income generated– and participants’ shares - in different links of the chain.

VCA for Agriculture

In the case of agricultural commodities, Gibbon (2003) indicates that the share of agricultural products in global trade fell from 35 percent in 1950 to 9 percent in 2000 according to the World Trade Organization's (WTO) International Trade Statistics. The terms of trade of agro-commodities had declined sharply by 66 percent over the twentieth century with a 10 percent decline happening during the last decade of the century. During the sixties and seventies however, there had been an unprecedented convergence of interests among aid agencies in promoting healthy agro-commodity based economies in developing countries. Development thinking and assistance saw agro-commodities' production as a critical object of global economic stabilization and an obvious vehicle for the capitalist modernization of developing countries (Gibbon, 2003). Aid agencies invested heavily in diffusing agro-commodities and increasing their productivity. In fact, during the eighties the total volume of global agro-commodities exports went up by 40 percent. This was due to public interventions which pushed up prices. Since the mid-late eighties many of the classical instruments of public intervention in relation to agro-commodities like the international commodity agreements, public marketing boards and national cooperative unions disappeared. Against this background, agro-commodities were marginalised in development thinking and in the activities of development agencies.

At the same time, agricultural commodities continued to play a major economic role in many developing countries and more so in least developed ones. Since 2000, there has been a revival of interest in agro-commodities and aid agencies have been looking for ways in which developing countries could participate and gain from the expanding global markets. International business has been exploring the incorporation of local food production into supermarket supply chains, supported by international aid agencies, their problem being twofold: first the mobilisation of vast numbers of suppliers of small market surpluses, sometimes of perishable goods, of variable quality standards and second, the enforcement of terms and conditions of supply within economic jurisdictions lacking a legal framework for regulation.

A large number of studies have been undertaken using the VCA approach for agricultural commodities in developing countries of Africa and Asia. Most of these have been sponsored or carried out by development banks like the World Bank and Asian Development Bank and by development aid agencies like AusAID, USAID, and IDRC, Food and Agriculture Organization of the United Nations, International Food Policy Research Institute and so on. In these studies VCA has been used to address a whole range of questions and issues which may be summarised as follows:

- Understanding the various links in the chain and the functional aspects of the chain in terms of technical operations involved, inputs and outputs, economic agents involved, physical flows along the chain, bottlenecks and opportunities (e.g. wheat and rice value chain, Uttar Pradesh, India, McCarthy, 2008)

- Identifying the potential for upgrading technology, management and organizational structure for economic agents at different links to enhance efficiencies and financial gains (e.g. green bean value chain, Kenya, Webber, 2010)
- Understanding the markets for inputs and outputs, the role of market power and the implications of the market structure for the efficiency, value addition and distribution along the chain (e.g. mango value chain, Kenya, Bellu, 2013)
- Analysing the institutional set-up within which the chain is embedded and understanding the nature of organization, contracts and interactions, the potential for synergies and conflicts, the roles of formal and informal rules, the roles of the public sector through policies, investments (e.g. diary value chain, Pakistan, Australian Centre for International Agriculture Research)
- Assessing the socio-economic impact of value chains for improving food security, improving nutrition, improving local welfare, and reducing poverty (e.g. maize value chain, Zimbabwe, Bellu, 2013,rice value chain, Bhutan, Ghimiray, 2007)
- Understanding and building the potential comparative and competitive advantages for economic agents effectively to participate and gain enhanced returns (e.g. rice value chain, Cambodia, AusAID, 2006; African agriculture, Webber, 2010)
- Organizing a significant number of small, economically weaker, farmers into associations to enable them to participate directly in the final markets andto increase their financial rewards (e.g. organic rice chain, Thailand, Van Dooren, 2005)

Decent Work and Value Chain Development

The International Labour Organization (ILO), as part of its ‘Green Jobs Initiative’, has been ‘supporting governments, employers and trade unions to promote environmentally sustainable jobs and development in an environmentally challenged world’ (Wijesena, 2009, executive summary). Green jobs are defined as jobs that are environmentally sustainable while also providing ‘decent work’ for people. The ‘decent work’ concept is based on the notion that work is a source of personal dignity, family stability, peace in the community, democracies that deliver for people, and economic growth that expands opportunities for productive jobs and enterprise development (ILO). Through this initiative, the ILO itself has been instrumental in developing value chains, one in Sri Lanka for the Waste Management Authority and one in India for the diary cluster in Jabalpur. The approach was to create a value chain with the involvement and support of local stakeholders and ensure strong ownership by them. Value chain analysis was used in these cases to understand the segment and help develop the ‘green’ value chain.

VCA and Greenhouse Gases

In the industrial and commercial sector, global companies are recognising that their GHG emissions stretch well beyond their operations. Any business that is serious about reducing its impact on climate change must assess the emissions across its entire chain. The Greenhouse Gas Protocol, which is an international accounting tool for government and business leaders to understand, quantify and manage GHG emissions, is most widely used in the business sector. For agriculture, there is not much evidence of assessments of GHG emissions across entire value chains. Bolwig et al (2008) stress the need for combining value chain analysis with livelihood and environmental analyses by integrating the vertical and horizontal aspects of the value chains that affect poverty and sustainability. For the environmental analysis, the paper suggests that it should address the local level impacts in terms of biodiversity degradation, soil erosion, soil nutrient mining, soil and water contamination and unsustainable use of water resources and the global impacts in the form of GHG emissions, acidification, eutrophication, human toxicity and eco-toxicity. They do not explain how. They emphasise instead the need to assess the rewards and risks of the vertical chain dynamics for the poverty, gender, labour and environment dimensions within each horizontal element in the chain. Examining existing social, labour and environmental standards in terms of the basis on which these are set and implemented and also how they are adopted and verified will alone not suffice. The literature suggests that the ‘positive’ impact of standards and certifications to protect workers, the environment and social conditions of production, cannot be taken for granted. Worthy abstract principles, when eventually applied in concrete situations have a variety of effects on differently endowed countries, groups and individuals. Hence, in evaluating the costs and benefits of complying with standards and certifications, it is also important to evaluate the vulnerability, risks and inequalities faced by small producers or disadvantaged groups and areas (Bolwig, 2008).

The Limitations and Advantages of VCA

A static tool: The value chain analysis is a static accounting framework that captures the technical aspects, flow and transformation of resources, creation of economic value, and generation and distribution of income in a partial segment of economic activities that are interlinked. It does not address the behavioural aspects of economic agents in response to changes in technological, institutional or economic conditions. Moreover, the composition, relationships, internal governance structure and market positioning of value chains in the liberalized and globalized economy are dynamic. A static tool like the VCA in itself cannot capture these dynamic complexities.

Data requirements: To calculate costs and returns at every stage requires a large amount of data at highly disaggregated levels and the analysis is a calculation-intensive exercise. In order to exploit the full potential of this tool, the quantitative information capturing the flows of resources, costs, returns and incomes through the chain must be complemented with a broader understanding of the organizational/contractual nature of relationships existing between the various links of the chain and

between various economic agents, the governance structure that regulates these relationships and the larger socio-political and economic institutions in and across which the chain is embedded. *Flexibility:* However, since it captures and embodies the outcome of multiple factors and dimensions across interlinked economic activities, it can significantly complement various other analytical approaches – both quantitative and qualitative, and can be a very useful resource for policy making.
Appropriateness for Policy Applications: While it may not lend itself to a dynamic analysis, it can be a very useful tool when quantum shifts in technology, policy framework, socio-political and economic ideology or legal and institutional frameworks are envisaged. We develop this aspect in the next section.

VCA as a Tool for Policy Making

The Food and Agriculture Organization of United Nations has published an exhaustive and very comprehensive set of methodological guidelines and a VCA software tool for using value chain analysis for policy making (Bellu, 2013).[18]Guidance is provided on how to set the boundaries of the chain, how to identify important activities and agents, how to quantify the flows of resources and money, how to estimate the user cost of capital, how to define and assess value addition, and so on. It demonstrates how the VCA can be used to determine and measure the likely impacts of potential policy options on the socio-economic system by using a set of appropriate indicators (e.g. net value added, profit, share of factors in value added etc) and comparing their values for the base or reference scenario without the policy and the counterfactual scenario with the policy. To build the counterfactual scenario, appropriate socio-economic models can be used to describe and quantify the most likely changes that the proposed policy is expected to have on the system. Using this information, the likely values for the chosen indicators in the counterfactual scenario can be estimated.

The guidelines also indicate how the value chain can be created and assessed for domestic prices vis-à-vis international ones and for private (or market) prices vis-à-vis social prices.

A very useful tool, policy analysis matrix (PAM), is also presented which can help compare the profitability or value added indicators based on market prices with those based on social prices, which can assess the degree of government protection and un-distort prices affected by taxes and subsidies, which can evaluate the environmental impacts of the base case scenario with a reference scenario and so on. The guidelines presented are well complemented with practical case studies and their results.

[18]These guidelines initiate the users into the conceptual background and key notions involved and provide detailed inputs for carrying out a value chain analysis in a practical way

Informal Economies, Sustainable Development and Value Chain Analysis

Informality: Agriculture and related activities in India (and in many other developing countries) are largely part of the informal economy. This situation poses a new set of questions for VCA.

First, there is *insufficient and deteriorating data* available from existing secondary sources which can capture the rich tapestry of inter-linkages between technology, organizational and governance structures, jobs, market power, government policies, taxes and subsidies, social relations and environmental and climate issues. There is no alternative to primary data collection.

Second, the informal economy is *not directly regulated by formal policy processes*. Its markets consist of firms which are unregulated or selectively regulated. There is no alternative to empirical enquiry into the manner in which markets and firms are selectively incorporated into the ambit of regulation and policy. This enquiry must also examine the alternative institutions of regulation to those of the state (Prakash, 2013).

Third, VCA has been developed for *multi-sited sourcing* and for systems of production and distribution in *multiple national jurisdictions,* whereas the value chains for an agricultural commodity like rice in India are not yet governed in a dominant manner by the demand of international destinations (even if national prices are now affected by the world market for rice and the commodity is increasingly exported). Our research approaches the adaptation of VCA to local conditions in several ways. It examines the equivalent to the national jurisdiction in a global VC inside India and takes sites in several states with their different policy environments. Instead of variation in national regulative jurisdictions it also examines variation in the effects of agro-ecology (Gathorne-Hardy, 2013; Mishra, 2013; Reddy and Venkata Naranaya 2013). It further sets out to examine the governance relations in the new scale of (supermarket) business sourcing rice from multiple sites (Mani, Mody and Sukumar, 2013).

Fourth, the concept of the *governance structure* has been necessary to develop for vertical integration and the terms and conditions of outsourcing contracts. In the informal economy the existence of equivalent relations of governance must be established. Relations of authority governing transactions in the informal economy are known to be rooted in social institutions and business associations. Debt, advance payment and delayed repayments are widely used to control the quantity and quality of supplies (Harriss-White, 2003).

Fifth, production-marketing systems in the informal economy are known to be complex, while the value chain is stylised. As in the establishment of boundaries for Life Cycle Assessment so here there is a mismatch between the comprehensive prior knowledge needed to establish the *complexity* of informal supply chain structures and relationships in the informal economy– on the one hand – and the stylised value chain – on the other. This problem is addressed by iteration: in particular by the choice of regions and technologies for which there is a prior literature, and field researchers with familiarity drawn from prior experience.

Sixth, in the informal economy the '*entrepreneur'* is a small family firm, self-employed or employing a small labour force, not a vertically integrated or flexibly specialised, multi-sited or out-sourcing international firm. Since family labour is not paid wages, the small family firm takes a residual claim that notionally covers the opportunity costs of family labour, the return on capital investments and rewards for entrepreneurial effort. This will be addressed by imputing values for family labour and for the return on capital investments and the balance would be the reward for entrepreneurial effort.

Sustainable Development: As indicated earlier, there is an urgent need to move away from the currently dominant agricultural technologies and farming practices in India to maintain food security, to increase financial viability and 'decent' livelihood opportunities while also addressing environmental and climate change challenges. This calls for a quantum shift in technologies and practices. The choice of the policy regimes to address this will determine technological outcomes and the institutional arrangements. These in turn will influence the way agricultural and related activities get organized and governed, the magnitude of value creation and the share of different economic agents in it, the nature of labour relations and the social, political and economic outcomes. Once there is a major shift, technology regimes and institutions could get locked in for a long period of time. In this context, value chain analysis would be a 'valuable' tool to assess the likely environmental implications of emerging technologies, or 'techno-systems' and their social, economic and political relationships.

The VCA methodology could help build a good accounting framework for the baseline scenario. Additionally VCA can lend itself to be complemented with various other tools and analyses like life cycle assessment, multi-criteria analysis, cost-benefit analysis, welfare analysis and so on and will help in evaluating the multidimensional implications of shifts in institutional constraints and technology regimes for the informal sector.

Case Study of Rice

Our study of rice in India seeks to develop a combination of methods of inquiry and tools (quantitative and qualitative) that enable a deeper understanding of the relations between costs and profit (value addition), work, commodities and waste (GHGs)that are determined through a complex of production-distribution systems or supply chains mostly operating in the informal economy. There is a strong and urgent need to develop these methods of inquiry. Over 80 percent of the population in the country depends on the informal economy for its livelihood and the majority of them are among the disadvantaged groups in the society. Yet we have very little understanding of their incomes, terms and conditions of work, job securities and so on.

Since this is a cross-sectional study, designed to account for regional variations in technology and differences in the socio-political and bio-physical environments, four methods of rice production - High Yielding Variety (HYV), System of Rice Intensification (SRI), rain fed rice and certified organic rice - have been chosen, spread across the three states of Tamil Nadu, Andhra Pradesh and Orissa. Four post-harvest supply chains – a traditional chain that caters to local markets (Orissa); a common chain where paddy passes through a series of transactions of regulated markets / traders, millers and wholesalers before ending up in retail stores whether supermarkets (formal registered firms) (Tamil Nadu) or small informal firms; the procurement chain for the Public Distribution System outlets (Tamil Nadu); and the chain for certified organic (Tamil Nadu).

VCA for Rice in India – Outline of a Methodological Framework

For the purpose of our study, the chain of activities from on-farm through trading, milling, transport, wholesaling and retailing is considered. A basic flow chart of the value chain we are looking at is presented below. Life Cycle Analysis is also carried out in tandem, for the same chain (Gathorne-Hardy 2013). The boundaries, links, activities and agents of the chain have been chosen so as to meet the requirements of VCA and LCA as spelled out in Gathorne-Hardy and Hema, 2013. The questionnaires were combined for these two analyses and administered simultaneously to the economic agents. Detailed information on bio-physical processes, technical processes, labour and animal inputs, capital inputs, water and energy use, use of fertilisers, other operating costs and revenues have been collected from a sample of economic agents at each stage. Capital costs are annuitized and allocated to their uses based on acreage share or proportion of time used for rice. All costs are estimated per hectare and per kilogram of rice, for normalization and for comparison with GHG emissions per kilogram of rice.

Defining 'value' in the VCA

Many of the studies that have analysed value chains examine 'value' in terms of financial profits. In some of these, it is not clear if capital costs and the opportunity costs of family labourhave been included. In some cases, the value chain is analysed in terms of the share of the final retail price that is received at each link of the vertical chain. This does not give a clear picture of the value created when we don't have information on the costs at each level.

In this study, 'value' is defined as the net value added. The value addition would be the difference between the total revenue realised by a firm (or a farm) and the cost of all intermediate inputs. This value addition accrues to labour in terms of salaries & wages (plus perks), to capital (including land) in the form of rents or interest and to entrepreneurial effort and risk in the form of profits. Value addition for each link in the chain is estimated, and compared, in terms of three conceptions of value and cost: i) market costs, ii) economic costs and iii) social costs.

Value Addition at Market prices

All costs and revenues are calculated in terms of actual or imputed market prices. In this case, after deducting payments for labour costs and cost of capital from the net value added amount, what the entrepreneur earns is the *financial* returns for her/his efforts. Now if there are no distortions in the market price for all the entrepreneur's inputs then this would be the economic return too. However, if large subsidies or taxes exist in some of the input or output markets then the financial return will be different from the economic return. For example, if a farmer is earning positive returns when s/he does not have to pay for electricity but ends up with negative returns if s/he were to pay for the true cost of electricity, then in an *economic* sense s/he is generating negative value. So the financial returns based on market value do not capture the true economic benefit of the activity. Hence, value addition will also be calculated based on economic costs.

Value Addition at Economic Prices

For this, if prices in any of the markets for inputs or outputs are significantly distorted due to large subsidies or very high taxes then these are undistorted by estimating the true cost to supply and these costs are used to calculate the net value added. It would neither be feasible nor worthwhile to address every little distortion in all markets. Hence for our context, only the prices of those inputs which would be significant in terms of their share in total costs or in terms of their share in contributing to GHG emission would be undistorted.

Market Imperfections and Value Added

Market prices undistorted by taxes or subsidies would reflect the true costs in an economic sense if the markets are characterised by perfect competition. When there are market imperfections where some sellers or some buyers have market power then the market price could be above or below the true economic cost. In this case there would be some loss of value addition, called dead weight loss, which occurs because the quantity of output produced in the market would be below the socially optimal level. Additionally, the party to the exchange which has market power will be able to absorb a larger share of the total economic surplus from the exchange. In our context we will not address this in the value addition calculations. To calculate the true economic cost and to calculate the dead-weight loss for markets characterised by market power would be a complicated exercise and has had be outside the purview of this study.

Value Addition at Social Prices

Environmental pollution from an economic activity - like the GHGs from growing rice or burning coal - are known as negative externalities because these are unintended and unvalued negative consequences of the activity undertaken by producers to meet the needs of consumers. If neither the producer nor the consumer pays for the damage caused, then the private costs of the activity differ from the cost that incorporates the damage to society as a whole. In this context, to evaluate the cost of the negative externality, the cost to society of the damage is calculated and added on. In our study the social costs of gaseous waste - GHGs - alone will be computed. There are other local or global externalities (solid: soil degradation and biodiversity loss, liquid: agro-chemically polluted water) which we are not addressing here. Calculating the cost to society of GHG emissions is very complex though. One way of doing this could be by imputing a price for the carbon. While there is a 'market' for carbon, the demand and supply of carbon in this 'market' is based on artificial constructs resulting from decisions on political targets for emission reductions and the mechanisms designed for trade. Hence the market price of carbon may not be a true indicator of the damage and its cost to society. A large number of impact studies have been carried out to assess the global damage costs of climate change. Meta-analyses based on these studies indicate potential damage costs per unit of carbon. This estimate could be used; or the cost of mitigation needed to reduce one tonne of carbon could be used as a proxy.

Conclusion

Information about the various concepts of costs, returns and value addition contained in the value chain for rice can be combined with the information from the life cycle analysis. The relationship between value added, economic costs and GHG emissions can be compared across the four different techno-systems for rice and across the different post harvest links of the chain. VCA can also identify the share of labour in value addition at each stage and the labour-profit relation (distributive share). These measures can be combined with qualitative information to gain a holistic understanding of labour benefits and labour relations within and across the different links of the chain.

Appendix

Concepts and Connotations

Agency costs: The costs to the 'principal' (shareholders of a company) who hires an agent (corporate management) to act in its interest. Suppose the agent has different interests and more information and acts in a manner that does not fully address the principal's interests then the loss of benefits or the costs of monitoring the agent or the costs of incentive mechanisms would be agency costs.

Economic agent: An individual, group of individuals or an entity (eg. a business, an authority, a non-government organization)

Economic gain or surplus: All voluntary transactions take place because the buyer and the seller are happier with the transaction than without. This means the benefit they get from the transaction is higher than the cost involved. In the case of a buyer this benefit or surplus is defined as consumer surplus and in the case of a seller it is producer surplus.

Firm: An entity within which a set of economic transactions are undertaken and are coordinated by managers rather than through the price mechanism. For example, a freelance journalist exchanges his services for monetary benefits in the market, whereas the services of a journalist working for a newspaper company are coordinated by the management of the company subject to broad contractual terms.

Governance Structure: A system of rules plus the instruments that serve to enforce the rules. It is also an explicit or implicit contractual framework within which a transaction is located.

Institutions: The rules of the game – humanly devised constraints that structure human interactions. They are made up of formal constraints (rules, laws, constitutions), informal constraints (norms of behaviour, conventions, codes of conduct) and their enforcement characteristics.

Market: A physical or virtual medium through which buyers and sellers voluntarily transact and where these transactions are coordinated by the price mechanism. In principle, any buyer or seller is free to transact with any other seller or buyer. A market is said to be characterised by perfect competition if there are infinite number of buyers and sellers, free entry and exit possibilities for all buyers and sellers and full information. This is considered an ideal market where the price notionally reflects the 'true' cost. In markets where relatively few sellers exist compared to the buyers (or the other way round), agents have market power and they can influence the price to be more in their favour and hence can derive a larger share of the total surplus. When there is a single seller and a single buyer then the price is determined through bargaining; and, depending on their bargaining strengths, the share of each in the surplus will get determined.

Property Rights: The rights vested with an individual or entity over a commodity or asset to own, use, derive benefits from directly or indirectly, exchange, contract with others on the right to earn income from or destroy. Such rights could also include right to clean air, right to decision-making, right to be the residual-claimant in a contract and so on

Transaction: The process of exchange between buyers and sellers for economic gain

Transaction Costs; Costs incurred in executing a transaction e.g. costs of drawing up and enforcing contracts, search costs, information costs, commissions to intermediaries and costs of bribes.

References:

Aghion, Philippe and Holden, Richard, 2011, 'Incomplete Contracts and the Theory of the Firm: What we Learned over the past 25 years', Journal of Economic Perspectives, vol 25, no.2, 181-197

Agrifood Consulting International and Camconsult, 2006, Cambodia Agriculture Sector Diagnostic Report, prepared for AusAID

Bellu, Lorenzo Giovanni, 2013, Value Chain Analysis for Policy Making: Methodological Guidelines and Country Cases for a Quantitative Approach, Food and Agriculture Organization of the United Nations

Bolwig, Simon et al, 2008, 'Integrating Poverty, Gender and Environmental Concerns into Value Chain Analysis', Danish Institute for International Studies, Working Paper no. 2008/16

Centre for Sustainable Agriculture, 'Sustainable Agriculture in the era of Climate Change', Position paper (undated) Civil Society Position Paper, fwsci.com/climate-change/Position-_paper_-_CSA.doc

Coase, R H, 1937, 'The Nature of the Firm', Economica, vol4, no.16, 386-405

Gathorne-Hardy, Alfred, 2013, 'LCA Results for Rice production and Distribution', International Symposium on Technology, Jobs and a Lower Carbon Future: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy - The Case of Rice in India, New Delhi

Gathorne-Hardy, Alfred and Hema, R, 2013, 'Fusing Life Cycle Analysis and Value Chain Analysis', International Symposium on Technology, Jobs and a Lower Carbon Future: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy - The Case of Rice in India, New Delhi

Ghimiray, Mahesh et al. 2007, Rice Commodity Chain Analysis (Bhutan), Food and Agriculture Organization

Gibbon, Peter, 2003, 'Commodities, Donors, Value Chain Analysis and Upgrading', paper prepared for UNCTAD, Danish Institute for International Studies

Harriss-White B, 2003, India Working: Essays on Economy and Society, Cambridge University Press

Herr, Matthias and Muzira, Taprea, 2009, Value Chain Development for Decent Work: A Guide for Private Sector Initiatives, Governments and Development Organizations, International Labour Office

INCCA, Ministry of Environment and Forests, Govt. of India, May 2010, 'India: Greenhouse Gas Emissions 2007'

INCCA, Ministry of Environment and Forests, Govt. of India, Nov 2010, 'Climate Change and India: A 4x4 Assessment - Sectoral and Regional Analysis for 2030s'

Kaplinsky, Raphael and Morriss, Mike, 2000, A Handbook for Value Chain Research, prepared for the IDRC

Kavikumar, K.S, 2009, 'Climate Sensitivity of Indian Agriculture', Madras School of Economics, Working Paper 43/2009

McCarthy, Stephen et al, 2008, Value Chain Analysis of Wheat and Rice in Uttar Pradesh, India: Partnership for Innovation and Knowledge in Agriculture, USAID

Mishra, Deepak, 2013, 'Rain fed Rice in Odisha: Production and Exchange Relations', International Symposium onTechnology, Jobsand a Lower Carbon Future: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy - The Case of Rice in India, New Delhi

Mody, Gautam, Mani, Mohan, Sukumar, Meghna, 2013, 'Labour in the Supply Chain', International Symposium on Technology, Jobsand a Lower Carbon Future: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy - The Case of Rice in India, New Delhi

Pathak, H and Aggarwal, P K, (Eds) 2012, Low Carbon Technologies for Agriculture: A Study of Rice and Wheat Systems in the Indo-Gangetic Plains, Indian Agricultural Research Institute

Prakash, Aseem, 2013 'The limits of formal policy processes in the informal economy – social, regulation and its implications for a low carbon transition', International Symposium on Technology, Jobsand a Lower Carbon Future: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy - The Case of Rice in India, New Delhi

Reddy, D.N, and Venkataranarayana, M. 2013, 'SRI Cultivation in Andhra Pradesh: Achievements, Problems and Implications for GHGs and Work', International Symposium on Technology, Jobs and a Lower Carbon Future: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy - The Case of Rice in India, New Delhi

Smith P et al, 2007, 'Agriculture in Climate Change 2007: Mitigation'. Contribution of Working group III, to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change, Cambridge University Press

Van Dooren, Corne, 2005, Rice Value Chain Analysis, IFAT/EFTA/FLO

Webber, Martin C and Labaste, Patrick, 2010, Building Competitiveness in Africa's Agriculture: A Guide to Value Chain Concepts and Applications, World Bank

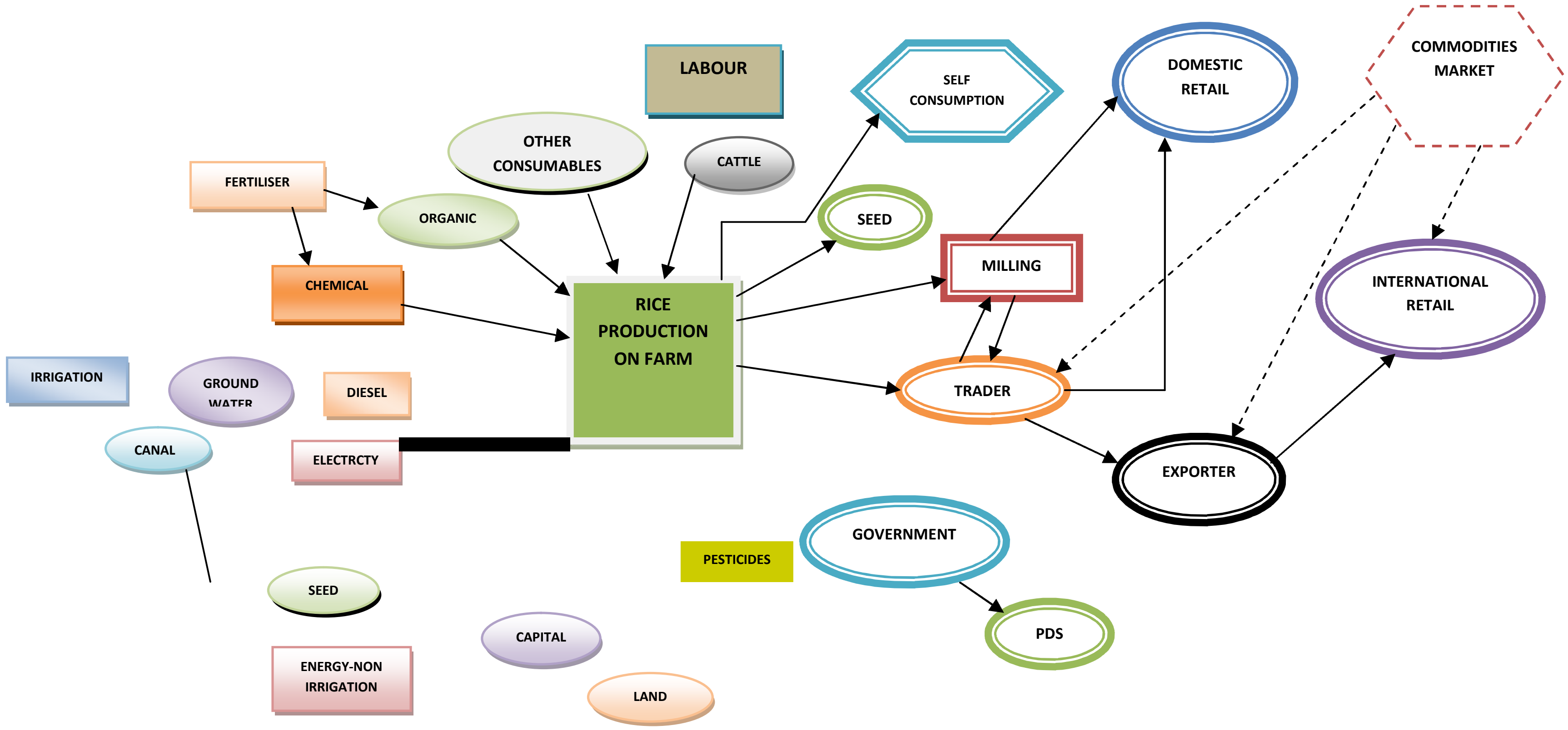
Williamson, Oliver E, 1971, 'The Vertical Integration of Production: Market Failure Considerations', The American Economic Review, vol. 61, no.2, 112-123

Williamson, Oliver E, 1973, 'Markets and Hierarchies: Some Elementary Considerations', The American Economic Review, vol.63, no.2, 316-325

Williamson, Oliver E, 1979, 'Transaction-cost Economics: The Governance of Contractual Relations', Journal of Law and Economics, vol.22, no.2, 233-261

Wijesena, Gemunu et al, 2009, 'A green Value Chain Development Exercise in Jabalpur, India', ILO & OECD conference "Routes out of the Crisis: Strategies for Local Employments Recovery, Skills Development and Social protection in Asia", Indonesia, December.

Rice Materiality – Flow Chart for VCA and LCA



COSTS, RETURNS AND VALUE ADDITIONS FOR FOUR METHODS OF RICE PRODUCTION AND ONE POST HARVEST SYSTEM

R. Hema

COSTS, RETURNS AND VALUE ADDITIONS FOR FOUR METHODS OF RICE PRODUCTION AND ONE POST HARVEST SYSTEM

R. Hema and Alfred Gathorne-Hardy

Abstract

Pilot studies were undertaken in India to understand costs, returns and value addition across the value chain of rice from on-farm production through the marketing system to retail sales. The objective is to compare across four different techniques of rice production – high yielding varieties, rain fed organic, certified organic and system of rice intensification. Two post harvest chains were also studied – a chain that caters to local markets and the dominant chain where the paddy passes through a complex network of millers, traders, wholesalers with transactions happening through regulated markets, contract agreements or government procurement (PDS) before ending up in retail stores, big and small.

The paper presents the findings of the comparative analysis.

Table 1: Net Income per Kg of Paddy – without and with Opportunity Cost of Land and Imputed Cost of Family Labour

	Figures in Rs. /kg of Paddy			
	HYV	Rainfed	SRI	Organic
Total income	10.4	9.2	14.6	16.6
Cost excl opp. cost of land and family labour	6.8	7.9	4.9	7.4
Net income excl. opp cost of land and family labour	3.6	1.3	9.7	9.2
Imputed cost of family labour	0.6	74.5	3	0.3
Net income excl. opp cost of land, incl family labour	3	-73.2	6.7	8.9
Opportunity cost of land	6.9	10.2	-	11.5
Net income including opp cost of land	-3.9	-83.4		-2.6

- The opportunity cost of land is the value of land used for rice multiplied by the interest rate of risk free government securities for 2012-13 (8.52%)

- The capital costs of agricultural assets (irrigation pumps, tractors etc) are assumed to be used up equally over the life of the asset. The per annum costs are then allocated to rice based on the proportion of total acreage under rice. Given the yield per hectare, the cost per kg of paddy is worked out.

- All intermediate input costs and labour costs were calculated for each operation (seedbed preparation, cultivation, transplantation ….harvesting and so on) and then added up

- For comparisons along the chain and for comparisons with GHG emissions, these are converted into Rs/kg of *rice*.

Table 2: Net Income per Kg of Rice – without and with Opportunity Cost of Land and Imputed Cost of Family Labour

	Figures in Rs. /kg of Rice			
	HYV	Rainfed	SRI	Organic
Total income	8.5	7.1	11.4	13
Cost excl opp. cost of land and family labour	5.5	6.4	3.9	6
Net income excl. opp cost of land and family labour	3	0.7	7.5	7
Imputed cost of family labour	0.5	60.3	2.5	0.3
Net income excl. opp cost of land, incl family labour	2.5	-59.6	5	6.7
Opportunity cost of land	6.9	10.3		11.5
Net income including opp cost of land	-4.4	-69.9		-4.8

Table 3: Net Value Addition – Comparison across the four methods of production

	Figures in Rs. /kg of Rice			
	HYV	Rainfed	SRI	Organic
Opportunity cost of land	6.9	10.3	NA	11.5
Total Labour cost (Hired and family)	1.7	61.6	3.3	2.8
Profit	-4.4	-69.5	5*	-4.3
Net Value Added	4.2	2.4		10

*We did not have land values for SRI.

- The total labour cost includes the actual cost of hired labour and the imputed cost of family labour

- Here, the return on other capital assets has not been computed separately. Ideally, this should be computed and become part of net value added

Table 4: Costs and Profit Details

For Rice Mills

	Rs. /kg of Rice
Cost of paddy	10.3
Other input costs including energy	2.2
Labour costs	0.6
Opportunity cost of capital	8.2
Profit	4.96
Sale price of rice	26.26

Table 5: Rice Mills – Net Value Addition

	Rs. /kg of Rice	% share NVA
Sale price of rice	26.26	
Cost of inputs	12.5	
Net Value Addition	13.76	
Labour compnsation	0.6	4.36
Return on capital	8.2	59.59
Profit	4.96	36.05

- The sale price of rice is actually a weighted average if income from rice, bran, husk, broken rice, disqualifiers and dust
- The return on capital is the opportunity cost of the capital value of the mill, based on risk free government security interest rates

Table 6: Transportation – Costs &Net Value Addition

	Rs. /kg of Rice	% share in NVA
Input costs	0.36	
Net Value Added	0.65	
Labour compensation	0.19	29.23
Return on capital	0.24	36.92
Profit	0.2	30.77

- Input costs are basically diesel and maintenance costs

- Labour includes driver and loaders

BASELINES AND BOUNDARIES FOR RICE LCA

Alfred Gathorne–Hardy

BASELINES AND BOUNDARIES FOR RICE LCA

Alfred Gathorne- Hardy

Introduction

Life cycle assessment aims to understand the environmental impact of a product or service (the *functional unit*) over its entire life cycle using standard methodologies. The concept of LCA is simple – determine all the processes and products needed to produce the functional unit, measure the environmental impacts associated with each, and sum these up. But the reality is more complicated for a range of reasons, two of which will be focused on in this paper; the boundaries and the baselines in LCA.

The boundaries in LCA refer to what is or is not included within the assessment. The production history of a functional unit is rarely a simple chain of inputs and outputs. Instead the final product, and all intermediate stages, is better portrayed as parts within a wider web - analogous to considering a food chain as we are taught in primary school, compared to the complicated reality of a food web, see Figure 1 below.As such, when building an LCA, which bits of this web should be included?

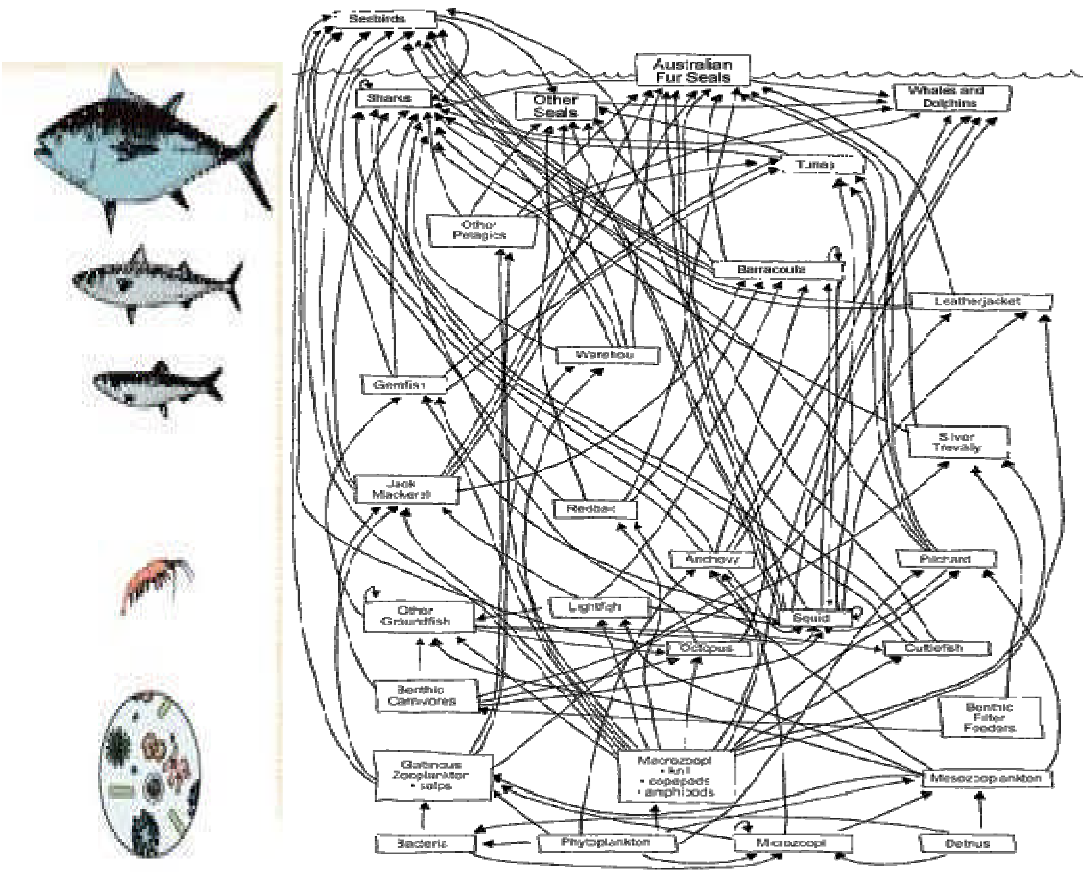


Figure 1.A simplified marine food chain, compared to a more realistic marine food web

Baselines are the counterfactuals against which we compare – for example the fuel, food, clothing, building material that would otherwise have been used if the functional unit was not. When used, the choice of baselines is important; as it is against these that the functional unit is compared. If an especially poorly rated alternative is chosen as a counterfactual, the functional unit will appear unrepresentatively 'good', and vice versa. So the baselines and boundaries to any life cycle assessment are essential to get right before the system is established.

Baselines and boundaries can be simple problems to identify, but often surprisingly complicated problems to solve. When reading any LCA, or listening to anyone promoting one technology/product/concept compared to others, consider what they are saying from the perspective of baselines and boundaries – have they considered them, and if so, have the made the right decisions? The aim of this paper is to introduce the concept, and then go into some more detail about how different types of baseline and boundary problems can be solved. It makes heavy use of bio energy LCA literature, due to its related nature (both bio fuels and rice have to deal with the problems of agriculture and land use) and tries where possible to relate the issues back to rice production.

Boundaries

Where LCA boundaries should be drawn? For practical reasons, the boundaries should be as tight as possible, as there is no benefit in collecting/measuring unnecessary information. But for perfect accuracy all products and flows should be included. So how should the trade-off between practicality and accuracy be determined in a methodical fashion?

LCA principles are set out in ISO 14040, with key additional guidelines for GHG LCA developed byPAS2050:2011 (PAS 2050:2011, 2011).PAS 2050 states that boundaries should include "all emissions and removals within the system boundary that have the potential to make a material contribution", which is defined as the contribution from any one source of GHG emission of more than 1% of the anticipated total GHG emissions, 3.31, PAS 2050:2011 (2011).While PAS 2050 is only concerned with GHG emissions, could that system be applied to all other measures of an LCA – energy use, water used, acidification etc?

ISO 14040 suggests an iterative route for determining system boundaries, but without a specific cut-off point mentioned. Boundaries should initially be established using best available data, and then using sensitivity analysis the individual components should be explored, and some taken out and others included that had previously been excluded.

Together these two systems describe a practical approach to system boundaries, yet poorly designed system boundaries are abundant within the LCA literature. Three specific problems exist: lack of data on deliberately excluded aspects, passive exclusion of components not considered at all, and incorrect assumptions

Deliberately excluded aspects. Many of the excluded processes may have never been assessed, so it is possible to underestimate their actual importance (Suh et al., 2004).An example of the importance of boundaries was shown in a paper looking at the value of recycled paper compared to virgin paper+incineration, the answer of which is more environmentally friendly was reversed depending upon the boundary location (Merrild et al., 2008).Examples applicable to rice LCAs could include the deliberate exclusion of bovine methane emissions when bullocks are used for transport, or off-site N_2O emissions from leached nitrogen fertiliser.

Ignored components. Within the area of bio energy LCAs this has been clear with respect to indirect land use change(ILUC)[19] - this was almost universally ignored from bio fuel LCAs until the issue was brought to major attention by the Gallgher Review (Gallagher, 2008) and then influentially re-iterated in Searchinger et al. (2008).Since then the inclusion of ILUC has been more widespread, but is still widely ignored or misunderstood. A second example is the considering of biomass as carbon neutral in bio energy LCA's[20](for example Fowles, 2007; Gaunt and Lehmann, 2008; Hammond, 2009; Obernbergera, 1998; Roberts et al., 2009; Slade et al., 2009; World Energy Council, 2004). This is important for slow growing sources of biomass, where carbon neutrality will only occur once a tree has re grown to the original size as the tree that was combusted. It also ignores the role of bio energy in increasing the demand for biomass, as bio energy uses the feed stocks for paper and pulp, forcing these industries to source additional biomass with potentially additional influences on GHG emissions. While recent output, for example by the RSPB(2011), has begun to place this issue into the policy area, it is still widely ignored in both policy and academic literature.

With respect to rice, both of these issues are important. A novel farming process may produce less GHG emissions ha^{-1} or t^{-1}, but if it produces substantially fewer tonnes of rice per hectare then was previously produced the global implications of reduced food production driving indirectly land use change need to be understood. Biomass is a key source of energy for producing steam and drying paddy in rice mills, but the emissions associated with this have never (as far as the author can discover) been included in carbon accounting of rice. When rice husk is used as a feedstock then the CO_2 can be safely ignored as it was only sequestered in the very recent past, but inefficient boilers are likely to produce methane in addition to CO_2 – radically changing the net global warming potential from husk combustion. Thus ignoring the emissions from biomass combustion can substantially change the net carbon balance.

[19] Indirect land use change is further discussed below under Indirect Effects

[20] Present IPCC recommendations for calculating GHG emissions suggest that energy from biomass is carbon neutral, as that energy is from a short term carbon cycle (ie trees) compared to the long term carbon cycle of fossil fuels.

Incorrect assumptions. Often LCA practitioners find a major, un-fillable gap in their data, and legitimately have to fudge a figure in order to continue – while this may sound bad practise, avoiding fudging would result in no LCA's and a transparent fudging can be more useful than no data at all. But the problems come when the fudging is very poor, for example if we used wheat N_2O emission factors for rice then this would give very misleading results. In the LCA literature, just such a poor assumption can be seen in an LCA looking at the production of PV cells. Key components of the PV cells of interest where made in China and SE Asia, but because it is "not possible" to quantify emissions from these countries it has been assumed that they have been fabricated from a European energy supply(Espinosa et al., 2011). The embodied GHG in Chinese electricity is substantially higher than that from Europe(IEA, 2012), so this was a very poor assumption, and could potentially significantly impact the final results.

Baselines

Baselines are the counterfactuals against which we compare the results for the functional unit of interest. Not all LCA projects are designed for comparison – some aim to understand where and when emissions occur during the manufacture/use of a specific product. But many LCA's deliberately compare different systems, for example organic vs conventional, bio fuels vs fossil fuels.

The complication surrounding baselines are the choice of baselines, and the baseline boundaries. If we are interested in the carbon intensity of a specific bio fuel, it can be compared to a range of bio fuels and the 'worse' the comparator, the better the bio fuel will look.

In this project we will be looking at four different rice production systems, but depending on where the data is collected we may not be able to treat them as perfect baselines, due to uncontrolled variables between the systems (for example different soil types, different labour practises, different ground water tables).If this is the case we can highlight where the different process *appear* to show different GHG emissions, but no more than that. This is discussed more in (Gathorne-Hardy, 2013; Gathorne-Hardy and Harriss-White, 2013).

Baseline boundaries suffer from the same complications as the main product boundaries, but are often given even less attention. A classic example from the bio energy literature is the assumption that European domestic wastes would degrade to methane in landfill sites if they were not otherwise burnt (for example JEC (2007)).Depending on the specifics, this may or may not be the case, but including this assumption makes the use of that feedstock for bio energy look considerably better than if such an assumption is ignored.

Specific Baseline and Boundary issues

Capital Goods

The inclusion of capital goods in LCA is complicated. They are not 'used up', or only marginally so, in the production of the functional unit (for example land and machinery respectively).They can contain considerable embodied resource use, but to allocate a fraction of this to each functional unit is difficult, as it is often unclear what the fraction should be – how long will the machinery last, for example. For these reasons, PAS2050 states "The manufacturing of production equipment, buildings and other capital goods shall not be included"(BSI, 2008).In contrast ISO 14040 says that capital goods should be included (ISO, 2006).

How would the inclusion or not of capital goods influence the results of our project? As this project goes beyond looking at just environmental implications of rice production, the use of capital is vital for the socio-economic questions of our research, and as such will be included within this research anyway, but when are embodied emissions important from the environmental perspective alone?

Nemecek (2005), quoted in Frischknecht et al. (2007), reviewed the role of capital goods in LCA, and found for agricultural studies, capital goods contributed 20% of fossil fuel demand, and significantly more in organic agriculture. The higher percentage for organic production arises because while the machinery use is similar, the lack of synthetic fertiliser use significantly reduces the total fossil fuel demand. The role of capital goods for overall GHG was lower than this due to the importance of field based emissions of methane and nitrous oxide.

Although the details of the studies making up the above results are not reported, it is likely that the majority relate to highly mechanised, intensive agriculture. The figures in some Indian rice production could be very different, with a far greater reliance on labour rather than capital.

Emission Factors

Once the boundaries of an LCA have been initially drawn, there is often too much information to gather for effective work to be carried out. For example most rice production uses urea fertiliser, so a full LCA for rice would include the emission flows that constitute the production of urea, and similarly for other fertilisers, and for pesticides, and for all machinery, and for the bullock feed and for the plastic in the electric plug connecting the irrigation pump to the electricity…Eventually an LCA of rice includes LCAs for almost all the products in the world. Additionally eternal loops are generated, for example the production of steel requires coal, the extraction of which requires steel, the production of which requires coal, etc.

Emission factors are essential for cutting through both of these problems. Emission factors are figures from previous studies that provide an off-the-shelf figure. For example work by the Centre for

Science and Environment found that the production of urea in India requires an average of 0.7kgCO_2-equrea kg^{-1}, providing an off the shelf carbon emission factor for urea fertiliser(Centre for Science and Environment, 2009) so that we do not have to generate our own.

Such use of emission factors is clearly sensible, but emission factors should be treated with caution. Say that same figure had come from a German urea factory, could it still be used as a proxy for Indian urea production? German urea factories could be newer, with more sophisticated technology, making their production significantly more efficient than Indian ones. In which case the figure would provide an under estimate of emissions associated with urea use. Alternatively higher environmental standards in Germany may require scrubbers that reduce the efficiency of urea production in Germany compared to India, so using German figures would result in an over-estimate of emissions associated with urea use.

Thus while emission factors are essential, they should be used with care. Consideration should be given to firstly: are they **reliable**? If the LCA that carried them out was poorly designed and implemented, then the figure will be of little value.

Secondly: are they **representative**? The German urea factory is an example of production that may not be representative.

Thirdly: **if they fail the above, does anything else exist?** This is a tricky but common situation to be in when building an LCA. Even if the emissions factors are neither reliable nor representative, they may have to be used, due to lack of alternative data. If data is un-representative, it may be possible to apply a correcting factor for the data. For example if you are using a soil process rate (such as organic matter decomposition) from European research for Indian soils, then applying a q10 of 2, and doubling the result, may be justified.

With emission factors, as will all aspects of LCAs, all assumptions should be clearly stated, including judgements on reliability or representatively. Finally the importance of each figures should be demonstrated using sensitivity analysis.

Allocation Problems

This is a mixture of baselines and boundaries. Do you include co-products within the boundaries of the LCA, and if you do, what baseline do you compare them too?

It is rare that only one product is produced along a supply chain. For example rice production produces rice, straw, husks and bran. What share of the GHG burden of rice production should be allocated to each co-product?

Potential Methods of Allocation

Mass Balance. This is a tempting solution due to relative ease of use, but it often bares little relationship to the energy content / environmental burden of a product, or the driver behind the products' production. A simple example is the production of bio diesel from oilseed rape. For each tonne of bio diesel, >4t of co-products are produced. Allocation by mass would inaccurately suggest that bio diesel – the primary driver for production in this case – is only responsible for 20% of the total emissions.

Energy Allocation (used in the EU RED (Renewable Energy Directive)).This has similar problems to mass allocation, and unless all the co-products are destined for energy generation, may not reflect their role in driving the product process. For example DDGS (dried distillers grains with solubles; the typically protein rich solid residue from ethanol production) or rape meal (the solid residue from oil seed rape/canola after the oil has been removed) is typically used for animal feed, so measuring its energy value to either the end user or as a driver for the original crop bares little relation to reality.

Substitution (expanding the boundary).A further option is expanding the boundary to include the final destinations for the co-products. This is preferred by many LCA practitioners. It has two major problems, how to choose which product is displaced, and secondly how to know whether the GHG emissions are actually 'avoided' (Kindred et al., 2008).The first problem is very real and also self-explanatory. The second is more complicated. An example given by Kindred et al is the use of rape meal (the co-product of rape bio diesel) substituting for soy meal (a key feed in UK livestock rations). Soy meal is itself a by-product of soy-oil production. If the rape meal substitutes the soy meal then all the allocation for soy production must be allocated to the soy oil, so although the oilseed rape biodiesel has a lower apparent GHG burden due to soy substitution, in reality there has been no change in emissions. A useful discussion of this is provided by Kindred et al (2008)

Price Mechanisms

Allocation by price is the often perceived as the most realistic and practical means of addressing co-products, but it relies on the assumption that market prices accurately reflect and drive changes in the real world. Within rural India, price allocation may provide flawed reflection of reality due to market failures, seasonality, and the 'field economy' were people do not necessarily follow the actions dictated by micro-economics. Kindred et al (2008) recommend that shadow prices 'based on careful evaluation, should be adopted for any products and services that are not traded outside the process(es) under consideration'.

What is a co-product vs by-productvs waste?

Waste is defined by ISO 14044 and PAS 2050:2011 as “substances or objects which the holder intends or is required to dispose of”. It is important to differentiate between those wastes that can be given away (for example some ashes from a rice mill) compared to those that incur a cost on disposal such as contaminated waste that should have further treatment before final disposal, or even those that incur a cost just through transport.

The implication of being a waste is that if any use for that product is found, then it will have a zero carbon history. This can make a dramatic difference to the embodied GHG of a product. For example if you compare the embodied GHG of bio diesel made from old chip oil compared to dedicated vegetable oil, the embodied emissions are dramatically lower from the chip oil, as, generally classified as a waste, it brings no embodied GHG to the bio diesel.

The guiding principle and ultimate test of any allocation procedure is that it should accurately reflect changes that actually happen or are likely to happen in the real world (Kindred et al., 2008).

Indirect effects

Indirect Land Use Change

Indirect land use change (ILUC) occurs when a change in land use in one area leads, via a market response, to land use change elsewhere. Thus change in production practises on an Indian farm can indirectly drive land use change many thousands of miles away. For example if there was a dramatic shift to lower yielding varieties throughout Tamilnadu, then the supply compared to demand of rice will decrease. This is likely to increases the demand for rice or rice substitutes from others, and subsequently the price. The global agricultural market compensates for this increased price through three mechanisms: reduced consumption, increased intensification, and expansion of the global agricultural area. While intensification of previously agricultural lands can result in important increases of GHG emissions it is the last point that can lead to the most dramatic emissions of GHGs. Depending on the habitat into which agriculture expands LUC emissions can range from less than 2 to greater than 500 tCO2 ha-1 (IPCC, 2006b). ILUC figures used in the literature include 351t CO2-eq ha-1 (Searchinger et al., 2008), 400t CO2-eq ha-1 (Fritsche et al., 2009) and 385t CO2 ha-1 from Burney et al (2010). The Gallagher Review gives a useful analysis of this debate (Gallagher, 2008). Interestingly ILUC is commonly completely ignored when discussing agricultural sustainability, for example Pretty (2008).

How to actually provide figures for ILUC from changing rice production is highly uncertain, and will not be covered here, but the potential for dramatic, offsite increases in GHG emissions from reduced production is significant, as is the potential for ILUC credits if rice yields increase and reduce the pressure at the agricultural margins for further expansion.

This section has massively simplified a very complicated set of interactions, and it is tempting to ignore the whole area, and to put the boundary simply around the field of rice we are interested in.But doing this risks ignoring a source of emissions/mitigation that dwarfs all other steps in the rice production process. For this reason it is best to expand the boundary to include ILUC, while accepting that there are many uncertainties in how it is best included.

Further Indirect Effects

Changes in supply and demand of rice inputs and co-products can also have indirect effects. For example there are projects proposed to set up rice straw power stations under the Clean Development Mechanism. At present rice straw is either returned to the field, used as animal fodder, or used for domestic fuel consumption. If demand and rewards are high enough, significant quantities of straw could be used for electricity generation, potentially providing low carbon electricity. But if this occurs previous end uses will have to find alternatives, and these two should be included within the LCA.

A further class of indirect effects are those that are not produced actually from the field, but are directly due to action on that field, of which N_2Oemissions are the prime example.N_2O emitted by bacteria as a natural part of the nitrogen cycle, but the increased quantities of active (as opposed to atmospheric nitrogen) increases the amount of N_2O released. This is recognised by LCA practitioners, who use an emission factor, typically 1.25% of applied N from the IPCC, to cover this loss.This covers both on and off field N_2O emissions. In an elegant paper Crutzen (2007)worked backwards from the total quantity of atmospheric N_2O and suggested that this figures should be up to 3x higher, as N_2O was released from waterways and other off site locations, but should still be attributed to the original N application. This is especially important to HYV rice, as due to the predominantly flooded, anaerobic soils little N_2O is released directly on site, but with an nitrogen use efficiency of around 31%(Cassman et al., 2002)significant quantities of N are lost, often with surface water, and presumably results in indirect N_2O emissions.

Rebound Effects

Increased efficiency of resource use, for example greater efficiency of water use under SRI compared to traditional high yielding varieties, can sometimes have counter-intuitive implications. For example the introduction of a more efficient diesel pump, pumping more water from less diesel, is tempting to allocate a diesel saving too. But on the ground the impact may be less clear. It is possible the reduced cost of running the pump could encourage the farmer to use more water than he otherwise would have, reducing the savings. It may even tip the balance of costs for more of the farm, encouraging him to use even more diesel then he used to! A good review of rebound effect can be found by Sorrell (2007).

Conclusion

Life cycle assessment is a very powerful tool, but can be used either very well or very badly. This paper has aimed to show a range of areas that should be considered when either building or reading a LCA, to allow them to be built and read in a more robust fashion. A well designed LCA can be very useful for giving understanding and pushing policy in the right direction, but a bad LCA can do the exact opposite.

So, use it, but do it well, explain every step, and be highly suspicious of all other LCA's that you read!

References

BSI, (2008) PAS 2050. Specification for the assessment of the life cycle greenhouse gas emissions of goods and services, in: Institution, B.S. (Ed.), Available at http://www.bsigroup.com/en/Standards-and-Publications/Industry-Sectors/Energy/PAS-2050/

Cassman, K.G., Dobermann, A., Walters, D.T. (2002) Agroecosystems, nitrogen-use efficiency, and nitrogen management. AMBIO: A Journal of the Human Environment 31, 132-140.

Centre for Science and Environment, (2009) Green Rating Project, Fertilizers,. http://www.cseindia.org/userfiles/79-90%20Fertilizer%281%29.pdf, New Delhi.

Crutzen, P.J., Mosier, A.R., Smith, K.A., Winiwarter, W. (2007) N2O release from agro-biofuel production negates global warming reduction by replacing fossil fuels. Atmospheric Chemistry Physical Discussions, 11191-11205.

Espinosa, N., Garcia-Valverde, R., Krebs, F.C. (2011) Life-cycle analysis of product integrated polymer solar cells. Energy & Environmental Science 4.

Frischknecht, R., Althaus, H.-J., Bauer, C., Doka, G., Heck, T., Jungbluth, N., Kellenberger, D., Nemecek, T. (2007) The Environmental Relevance of Capital Goods in Life Cycle Assessments of Products and Services. International Journal of Life Cycle Assessment.

Gallagher, E., (2008) The Gallagher review of the indirect effects of biofuels production, in: Department for Transport (Ed.). Renewable Fuels Agency.

Gathorne-Hardy, A., (2013) Life cycle assessment of four rice production systems: High Yielding Varieties, Rainfed, System of Rice Intensification and Organic, in: Harriss-White, B. (Ed.), Technology, Jobs and A Lower Carbon Future: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy (The case of rice in India) New Delhi.

Gathorne-Hardy, A., Harriss-White, B., (2013) Embodied emissions and dis-embodied jobs: the environmental, social and economic implications of the rice production-supply chain in SE India. , Symposium on Technology, Jobs and a Lower Carbon Future :Methods, substance and ideas for the informal economy (the case of rice in India). IHD, New Delhi.

IEA, (2012) Understanding Energy Challenges in India Policies, Players and Issues Partner Country Series. International Energy Agency, France.

ISO, (2006) Environment Management – Life Cycle Assessment – Principles and Framework. EN ISO 14040, in: International Organization for Standardization (ISO) (Ed.), Switzerland.

JEC, (2007) JRC / EICAR / CONCAWE Well to Wheels analysis of future automotive fuels and powertrain in the European Context, WELL TO TANK report version 2c. JEC, http://www.co2star.eu/publications/Well_to_Tank_Report_EU.pdf.

Kindred, D., Mortimer, N., Sylvester-Bradley, R., Brown, G., Woods, J., (2008) Understanding and managing uncertainties to improve biofuel GHG emissions calculations, HGCA Project No. MD-0607-0033. HGCA London.

Merrild, H., Damgaard, A., Christensen, T.H. (2008) Life cycle assessment of waste paper management: The importance of technology data and system boundaries in assessing recycling and incineration. Resources, Conservation and Recycling 52, 1391-1398.

PAS 2050:2011, (2011) Specification for the assessment of the life cycle greenhouse gas emissions of goods and services. BSI, London.

RSPB, (2011) Bionenergy: a burning issue, http://www.rspb.org.uk/Images/Bioenergy_a_burning_issue_1_tcm9-288702.pdf.

Searchinger, T., Heimlich, R., Houghton, R.A., Dong, F., Elobeid, A., Fabiosa, J., Tokgoz, S., Hayes, D., Yu, T.-H. (2008) Use of U.S. Croplands for Biofuels Increases Greenhouse Gases Through Emissions from Land-Use Change. Science 319, 1238-1240.

Sorrell, S., (2007) The Rebound Effect: an assessment of the evidence for economy-wide energy savings from improved energy efficiency, Technology and Policy Assessment. UK Energy Research Centre, London.

Suh, S., Lenzen, M., Treloar, G.J., Hondo, H., Horvath, A., Huppes, G., Jolliet, O., Klann, U., Krewitt, W., Moriguchi, Y., Munksgaard, J., Norris, G. (2004) System boundary selection in life-cycle inventories using hybrid approaches. Environmental Science & Technology 38, 657-664.

FUSING LIFE CYCLE ASSESSMENT (LCA) AND VALUE CHAIN ANALYSIS (VCA) IN THE INFORMAL ECONOMY

Alfred Gathorne–Hardy and R. Hema

FUSING LIFE CYCLE ASSESSMENT (LCA) AND VALUE CHAIN ANALYSIS (VCA) IN THE INFORMAL ECONOMY

Alfred Gathorne-Hardy and Hema R.

Introduction

Informal activity dominates the economy in developing countries and its importance appears to be growing globally as the formal sector struggles to cope with the economic downturn in western markets. In India the informal economy is estimated to be responsible for between 83% and 91% of the labour force, producing around 60% of GDP (Harriss-White, 2003; Harriss-White et al., 2007). Evenin OECD countries the informal sector is still substantial, responsible for an estimated 18% of Gross National Income (GNI)(Schneider, 2002).

The informal economy is especially important for poorer and unskilled people, who have the most limited access to formal jobs. The poorest are also most reliant on natural resources such as agriculture, forestry and other environmental services both for goods and for employment(Haygarth and Ritz, 2009; Ring, 2008). In turn this makes them vulnerable to environmental processes and shocks such as eutrophication and climate change (Barnes et al., 2005; Chambwera et al., 2011).

The close linkages between environmental health, environmental impact, poverty and the informal economy are largely ignored by national and international policy making arenas where until recently the informal economy had a weak voice. The informal economy, with its close links to environmental health, is also marginalised from environmental policy.

One reason for the policy neglect and incoherence is lack of available data relating to the informal economy. This is not simply due to the lack of government records for it but also due to its complexity.

It is in this dearth of information that this research project has operated. It aims to gather data using the rice production supply chain as a case study and to analyse this information in a novel manner. It fits methods designed to work in the formal sector to the informal economy in order to provide a type and level of analysis that has not been done before. The two key methods to be tested are life cycle assessment and value chain analysis. In this paper we provide a brief overview of each method, followed by an outline of how we plan to marry these methods so as to generate a novel model in order better to understand how the environmental, economic and labour relationships interact along a supply chain.

Life cycle assessment

Globally there is increasing awareness that better social decisions are needed to regulate the environmental burden of the products we use and the behaviour we practise. Unfortunately even good-will can concentrate efforts in wasteful or even damaging areas, such as the first 20 years of EU agri-environment subsidies or the EU bio fuels policy. In order to make informed decisions, the environmental burden of individual products/processes must be measured using a rigorous methodology which allows for meaningful comparisons. In this research project we are interested, amongst other things, in the environmental product history of rice, and are using Life Cycle Assessment (LCA)for this purpose.

The concept of life cycle assessment is essentially simple – determine all the activities (processes/products) needed to produce the item of interest (in our case a kg of rice) and measure the environmental impacts associated with each activity. The critical advantage of LCA is that it takes full account of a product's life cycle from the raw materials marshalled for its production through to the disposal/recycling of the product when it has ceased to be useful in consumption. This helps avoid an unwanted shifting of burdens from one area to another (for example i) the use of a high tech insulating material to reduce on-site energy losses which uses more energy in its creation than it saves; or ii) the conversion to low input agriculture to reduce emissions by one country which drives more intensive farming in neighbouring countries to take advantage of the supply restricted price gains, thereby negating the savings in the first country).

But in order for LCAs to be useful, the process of data gathering has to be controlled. There are already far too many LCAs that, due to not following a standard methodology, cannot be compared to others, and so are of little value. For example if we want to understand the relative environmental costs of a cotton compared to a nylon shirt, but if the two LCAs used unknown or different methodologies, then that comparison cannot be made.

ISO 14040 and PAS 2050

The basic tenets of LCA now have an international standard, and are set out in ISO 14040 (ISO, 2006) and carbon foot-printing methods can be found in PAS 2050(BSI, 2008). A very comprehensive guide based on ISO 14040, published by the Joint Research Centre (JRC), is also heavily relied upon for LCA (European Commission, 2010)

While PAS 2050 and the ISO standards are set out slightly differently and are reported under different headings (see Table 1) the methods and results are essentially the same - PAS 2050 builds upon ISO 14040 – except that PAS 2050 is specifically limited to GHG assessment. It does not cover biodiversity, leaching or other social/economic/ environmental factors. In this project we are specifically interested to research several of these other factors too. Later in this note we will discuss the fusion of LCA and VCA to include economic and social factors in the analysis.

In this research we are looking at limited environmental impacts (GHG emissions, ground water, and energy). A potential problem when an analysis is confined only to certain aspects is that the relative merits of a product or process has to be judged on those criteria alone. If these do not correlate with wider environmental impacts, then negative unintended consequences may occur. This is commonly seen in land-based assessments that restrict analysis to GHG emissions, for example for bioenergy assessments. This can promote activities that cause substantial damage to local and global biodiversity, water quality, landscape value and local economies.

ISO 14040	PAS 2050
1. The goal and scope definition phase, 2. The inventory analysis phase, 3. The impact assessment phase, 4. The interpretation phase	1. Building a process map 2. Checking boundaries and prioritisation 3. Collecting data 4. Calculating the footprint 5. Checking uncertainty

Table 1. The building blocks of the two major LCA methodologies: ISO 14040 and PAS 2050

Creating an LCA

Goal and scope definition

A clear initial goal is essential to set up the rest of the LCA. The goal should define who the study is for, the intended applications of the final results, reasons for carrying out the study and limitations of the study.

Once this has been established the unit of interest is defined - the functional unit. This should be a meaningful product that is relevant to how it is finally used/consumed. In this project we are interested in rice, including the post-harvest marketing chain – involving trading, milling, transport and retail. Our project is comprised of numerous smaller projects, so we have three functional units. The first is:

1kg of rice at the point of sale

One component of our research examines the agricultural stage of paddy production. In this case rice is not a useful functional unit. Instead the typical product of sale – paddy – is used. Thus we have a second functional unit specifically for this stage:

1 kg of paddy at the farm gate

Some social and economic aspects are best measured on an area basis (for example economic return, labour requirements). The additional use of an area based unit is also relevant to some environmental parameters. The total availability of ground water is often limited on an area basis, so an additional area based functional unit is also useful for some environmental criteria. This helps address some of the problems identified in Section 0, Problems with LCA. Thus the third functional unit is:

1 hectare of paddy production

There are many potential supply chains for these functional units. We are specifically looking at 4 production systems and4-3 distribution systems.21

After defining the functional unit, the project boundaries need to be identified. The boundaries consist of what is and is not included within the product life history. There is a trade-off between inclusivity on the one hand and the practicalities of time on the other. This means finding the right point along the curve of diminishing returns to problem-oriented field-research. It may be useful to work to a larger scale than the functional unit, for example per field of paddy (because farmers account in this fashion), and then calibrate it per kg afterwards so that elements of cost and physical inputs can be gathered in meaningful units for both farmer and analyst. (No farmer for instance will know how much pesticide he applies per kg of paddy, but is likely to know per field/acre).

Defining the boundaries is not a one off stage, because during the empirical development of the model new activities will be discovered, and the importance of different elements will become apparent. Instead it is an iterative process, and made more powerful as a result.

Checking boundaries and prioritisation

The significance of what is and is not included within the analytical boundaries is further developed in a supplementary paper (Gathorne-Hardy, 2013, 'Baselines and Boundaries'). For the purpose of PAS 2050 the boundaries should comply with rules set out in ISO 14040, and be of an adequate standard to create a Product Category Rule. In essence this means including all sources of emissions responsible for greater than 1% of the total, subject to not more than 5% of total emissions' being ignored. The four key points that PAS 2050 suggests should not be included are:

1. Immaterial emissions sources (less than 1% of total footprint)

This is a useful guide to determine when to ignore a stage/process/input etc. Clearly information is required before the importance of any stage/process/input can be measured, and this is one area where the iterative practical method of LCAs is relevant. In this instance, if early research shows that the item of interest is far below the 1% threshold it can be safely ignored. If it is near the 1% threshold more work will be needed to determine which side of the threshold it sits. Sometimes processes that are below the threshold will be included if they are of specific interest.

[21] The research into distribution is not yet complete. To date supply chains which might labelled as separate show considerable inter-linkages, so the full number studied may be fewer.

2. Human inputs in processes

The GHGs directly associated with human beings (i.e. embodied emissions of food, clothing etc) are not included unless they are specifically related to physical work in the sector under investigation (e.g. protective clothing). This is largely because these are deemed implausible to substitute as well as very difficult to measure. This rule comes from PAS 2050, which is only concerned with GHG emissions. But in the current project we are also interested in wider environmental measures including energy, where human energy is sometimes directly substitutable by fossil energy. Thus we include the measurement of non GHG human inputs such as energy.

3. Transport of consumers to retail outlets

If someone goes to the shops to buy rice and milk, and is then tempted to also get sweets, how should the transport emissions be allocated between these three products? It is the impossibility of effectively answering this question, together with the difficulty of allocating consumer transport to individual products, that results in the omission of consumer transport.

4. Animal transport (e.g. farm animals used in agriculture or mining in developing countries)

This is an important issue from the perspective of this project, where animals make an important contribution to GHG emissions at the farm level. We have included livestock based emissions (the enteric methane from bullocks) directly *against* the PAS 2050 guidance, as we have demonstrated that ignoring these emissions significantly alters the final GHG balance(Gathorne-Hardy, 2013c). But in order to allow our results to be comparable with other PAS 2050 LCAs we have also calculated results without these emissions.

Collecting data

Gathering data requires details on both activity and emission factors. An activity is what occurs, for example transporting a load of rice over 200km may require 50l of fuel. The emission factor is the amount of GHG that is emitted from, in this case, each litre of fuel (including in the production and transport of that fuel). Replicable, meaningful data is required for both the data activity and emission factors – for example our confidence that trucks use50l of fuel to transport that quantity of rice 200km. Were the data collected from a suitable number or trucks, from a representative region, in a representative time period, etc.?And does the emission factor include the production and transport of the fuel?

As a general rule primary data should be used, as these indicate actual emissions and give a better chance of identifying where emissions can be reduced. There are exceptions though, when it is impractical or unnecessary to collect primary data, for example when there is already adequate data for that object of research. In our case, the emissions associated with fertiliser production are a good example – already data sets exist for embodied GHG of different fertilisers, and, given our resources, it is unfeasible to collect additional raw data.

Additionally there are times when it is useful to use standard data, for example the use of global warming potential (GWP) emission factors. It would be unhelpful if every project tried to establish its own GWP. PAS 2050 also suggests that standard factors should be used for transport and agricultural emissions, but we use primary data here. Data collection out of official reach is the purpose of our research.

Primary data is available from a range of LCA databases. The golden rule is to state why, where and how each data source was used so that readers can understand, compare and judge models. Often good data is not available, in which case what is available must be used, but the analyst has to take care to be transparent and honest about this.

Calculating the footprint

Some additional complicating factors:

'**Delayed emissions'**How should the interaction emissions and time be considered, for example how should the creation, end use and disposal of a light bulb be calculated – PAS 2050 suggests using the weighted average over the product's life time.

Fixed carbon – If a product is made from organic material, then the carbon in that product can be counted as removed from the atmosphere as long as it: is not food, at least 50% is expect to last longer than a year and it comes from sustainable sources (i.e. a certified sustainable forest rather than wood from recent tropical deforestation). To use these factors, an understanding of the likely lifetime of the products and likely final fate of the products is essential.

Land use change: This must be included if the land was converted to agricultural land on /after 01/01/1990, the emissions are then assumed to be released over 20 yrs. But this does not include changes to soil carbon in existing systems

Energy – all the embodied emissions associated with energy production should be included, such as those involved in mining, distribution and disposal of waste

Capital Goods. PAS 2050 suggests that these should be ignored.

Allocation. PAS 2050 suggests expanding the system boundary, but when this is impractical to use a range of allocation methods.

The next step involves multiplying data activity and emission factors for each stage of the life cycle. It is useful to combine this activity with a mass balance analysis, to check that all material has been accounted for. A mass balance is a sum of all material entering across the boundary, and all material exiting. This is not always possible, for example in the stages of agricultural production, where material is essentially created from unmeasured streams of sunlight, carbon dioxide etc), but it works better in industrial processes.

Checking uncertainty

The adage "garbage in garbage out" is true for LCA models, as in all models. On top of drawing up a good model and using the best data, it is always useful to carry out uncertainty analysis, so that the importance of each assumption can be evaluated. The most critical assumptions can then be further analysed through simulations of alternatives.

How is Indian rice covered in life cycle assessment?

As far as the authors are aware, there are no LCAs based on primary data looking at the Indian rice supply chain. Globally there are few published LCAs of rice, and those that exist are mainly concerned with the potential for energy extraction from rice by-products - from the combustion of husk and straw. Critically they have treated these co-products as waste, allocating zero embodied pollution to them, therefore allowing the LCAs to ignore them (for example (Mai Thao et al., 2011; Prasara-A and Grant, 2011;Shie et al., 2011)). Is this a reflection of how the scientific world also

Figure 2.A selection of additional factors to consider. A wider range is available from the PAS guidelines

ignores much of the informal economy, except when it clearly interacts with the formal (in this case for power generation)?

Some studies have looked at rice production using primary data-based LCAs(Kasmaprapruet et al., 2009; Wang et al., 2010), but none in India. A discussion of them can be found in Gathorne-Hardy (2013b).

Problems with LCA

Life cycle assessment is not a perfect analytical system. Its limitations are split between methodological errors such as poor choice of boundaries, discussed in Gathorne-Hardy (2013a), and fundamental problems which will be discussed here.

1. **How impacts and products are measured**

While the production and use of products/processes are extended in both time and space, in LCA emissions tend to be aggregated across time horizons and summed across space (see Finn veden et al (2009)and Haus child(2005) for further reading). Additionally, in dividing the total emissions into a functional unit, LCA often gives emissions that are near infinitesimally small compared to the whole. There are also no obvious links between pathways of different products.

In real life, the time, location and scale of environmental impacts are critical in the impact of many pollutants, for example the same emission will be far worse if exacerbated by weather/other high emissions, in vulnerable environments, and if the level is above the absorptive capacity of the sink environment. From our project GHGs are an exception in respect to the importance of location as the only GHGs included are long lived enough to mix evenly around the globe. The same applies for ozone depleting gases listed under the Montreal Protocol for LCAs that include impacts on stratospheric ozone.

2. **Imperfect metric analysis**.

In LCAs a 'basket approach' is used to allow comparison between different pollutants. This approach derives from the Montreal Protocol methodology, where different gases are assigned different pollutant factors depending on how damaging they are to stratospheric ozone. It is very useful in allowing comparison between different pollutants, but it also provides answers that are magnifications of the assumptions that went into the calculations - the eternal trade-off between accuracy and usability!

For example GHGs are all placed in a 'single basket'. Through the use of Global Warming Potentials different GHGs are given a value along a single scale, and trade is allowed between gases using this scale (Daniel et al., 2012). The scale compares the amount of infra-red radiation different GHGs absorb to that of carbon dioxide (CO_2). Thus 1kg methane is equivalent to 25kg of carbon dioxide, and 1kg nitrous oxide is equivalent to 298kg of carbon dioxide(Forster et al., 2007).

But the comparison between different GHGs is not perfect, as they absorb different frequencies of infra-red, with different absorptive efficiencies, and have different atmospheric life-spans. For example the atmospheric lifespan of methane is about 11 years. While in the atmosphere it is highly efficient at retaining heat, but once it has degraded to CO_2 (from whence it came - if it originated from flooded paddy or livestock) its efficiency as a GHG is dramatically reduced. GWPs average out the differences over different periods of time, but there are debates in the scientific community about how individual GHGs should be judged. Some call for dramatic action on short-lived climate pollutants (such as CH_4) to provide a big impact quickly (especially as reducing many of them, including methane, black carbon and NOx will bring associated health benefits, see Shindell et al (2012)). In contrast others argue that from the long term climate perspective only long lived gases are most important, so policy makers should be most concerned by atmospheric CO_2 (see Allen et al (2009)).

Similarly when wider factors are looked at, they too are reduced to a single metric, for example eutrophication is reduced to phosphate equivalents, acid rain is reduced to sulphur dioxide equivalents.

3. It is a top down, not bottom up, system of analysis

How to approach environmental agricultural sustainability is an issue of longstanding debate since before Malthus. LCA clearly falls into a top-down as opposed to systems based approach to understanding sustainability. A bottom up approach would build upon what exists on the ground (from a domestic, catchment, to global scale) so as to understand and optimise production and other practises using the available materials. In contrast an LCA may suggest that a certain practice is ‘sustainable’ but, without a reference to scale, it may be unsustainable on the ground

4. Simplification.

Finally, from the policy perspective, there is a danger in the results of LCA - as there is in all complex models – because it can provide apparently simple numbers. LCA will provide answers to the questions that are asked of it, but this should not be mistaken for a judgement on the relative sustainability of each functional unit as a whole. A product better from the GHG perspective is not automatically more sustainable when a wider range of factors are introduced.

Value Chain VCA

The LCA helps us understand the contribution of the rice chain to GHG emissions. Economic activities in the chain are carried out based on considerations of income security and financial gain.

The social and economic outcomes of these activities are determined indirectly by the technology regime and by the nature of explicit and implicit contracts governing the activities of the chain. Thus, a shift in the technology regime to lower GHG emissions would result in a new set of social and economic outcomes. To evaluate the merits and disadvantages of potential shifts in the technology regime across multiple dimensions and for differently endowed economic agents, a good disaggregated evidence base for the economic costs and value addition is needed. Value chain analysis helps develop this knowledge base.

One of the ways in which the outcomes of any economic activity can be measured is by its ‘value addition’. Technically, value addition is defined as the difference between the ‘value’ (price) of the output of the economic activity and the ‘cost’ of all the intermediate inputs used in the activity. This value addition is essentially the sum of (a) income derived by all the labour inputs into that activity (b) returns earned by all the capital (including land) employed in that activity and (c) profits earned by the entrepreneur(s) involved in that activity (although these three may be indistinguishable in self-employment, the commonest form of production in India).

Value chain analysis becomes particularly important, when ‘non-market’ forces govern the intra-link or the inter-link activities of the chain. If the activities are regulated purely by the price mechanism then we consider them to be governed by market forces (Hema, 2013). However, in order to minimise the transaction costs arising from information asymmetry or from assets specific to the transaction or in order to secure economic rent (windfall economic gains), contractual arrangements may exist which govern some activity in the chain. Hence, if the quantitative knowledge base of the economic costs and value additions at the disaggregate level is combined with an understanding of the type of formal or informal contractual relations at various stages of the chain, a better understanding of the pathways through which the social and economic outcomes in the system are determined will follow.

Hence, the value chain analysis is the ***only existing framework*** from social science to understand, at a first cut, the implications of an existing commodity system’s shift towards lower carbon production. This can be complemented with behavioural analysis -to estimate the likely magnitudes of changes (elasticities) - and with welfare analysis to judge the social welfare implications of existing and proposed low carbon systems.

Social aspects of the rice production supply system

One of the most important aspects of welfare is work. As discussed in Gathorne-Hardy and Harriss-White (2013) and in Mani, Mody and Sukumar(2013), both the quality and quantity of work is critically important in determining the quality of life for those producing goods and services in the informal sector. Judging the quality of labour is a fraught with difficulties, and a time consuming, process that mixes up qualitative and quantitative techniques ((ILO, 1999; Lorano, 2005)). This poses an intractable barrier to inclusion in life cycle assessment, so a reductionist alternative, confined to income and the economic value of benefits in kind is being developed as a compatible substitute. While missing the holistic aspiration of Decent Work as an analytical tool, this has the benefit of collectability and can also be scaled, so that it can be compared and contrasted across different fields(Gathorne-Hardy and Harriss-White, 2013).

Linking LCA to social and economic data

It is perfectly possible to fuse VCA conceptually with LCA. By this we mean that the entire life cycle can be included as appropriate; what is and is not included within the value chain life cycle boundary can be clearly identified; and allocation between end products will be accurate. But the practical aim of this project is not to fuse the two types of model into a single output, due the difficulties of putting prices on all inputs and outputs. Instead we intend to build a model that allows the two processes to work in parallel. They share the same functional units, and (where possible/applicable) the same boundaries. Thus for each functional unit we will have an understanding of the energy, water, and labour going into it and the GHGs and value it generates. Figuring out how and why these correlate (positively, negatively or not at all), for different functional units and at different points in the supply chain is a key aim of our collective research.

As discussed above, the quality of labour has been reduced from its real-world complexities to key indicators compatible with the modelling aspect of this project. Assessing the quantity of labour required is immediately quantifiable, but when calibrated against a kg of rice it loses much of its conventional meaning. While the provision of labour is important for poverty reduction and development (Chambwera et al., 2011; Gathorne-Hardy and Harriss-White, 2013), what is the meaning of 3 minute (or 10 hours)of work per kilogram of rice to a village of 800 people? This is an example of where the lack of dimension to LCA style results restricts their meaning and social relevance. For this reason, when discussing quality and quantity of work, we gave measures in area based units too: the quantity of work/hectare

While a parallel LCA VCA model is relatively simple from a theoretical perspective, there are several complicating factors which have been summarised in a tabulated form in Table 2 – at the end.

Conclusions

The informal economy is closely linked to the environment, yet widely ignored in environmental policy. Our research aims to provide new data on the informal economy, collating data for the case of a whole rice production supply chain. In addition it develops a novel analytical tool to improve understanding of the interactions and synergies between the environmental, economic and social development goals. To do this it fuses life cycle assessment and value chain analysis, together with measures of both work quality and work quantity. Such a model has not been generated before, and inevitably its multi-disciplinary origins have required the modification of some concepts and measures. For example the quality of work will be assessed using numerical rather than more in depth qualitative variables.

Table 2. Problems and solutions for combining LCA and VCA into a single model

Issue	Solution
LCA suggests straight line amortisation, while financial analysis may discount and write off products over a far shorter time and economic analysis would require annuitized opportunity costs.	We have used straight line amortization for both systems
In industrial systems daily running emissions tend to be high relative to the daily fraction of the embodied emissions(Frischknecht et al., 2007)and subsequently PAS 2050 suggests ignoring embodied emissions - something that certainly cannot be ignored in economics.	We have included embodied emissions for all major items (mills, shops, tractors)in parallel to accounting emissions.
Resolution. LCA has a finer resolution, measuring the impact of every process individually, which is often not possible for VCA. In a farming example, LCA measures the GHG emissions from cultivation, weeding, harvest separately, while VCA cannot do this, as until the final product is sold, there is no additional value. This mismatch also applies to the post-harvest system.	We have matched the systems as closely as possible, but a perfect match was not possible
The interaction of the firm and the product. LCA approaches products/services through a narrow perspective using economic, weight or energy allocation to separate the product of interest from other products produced and distributed in the same firms. In contrast 'the firm' is an essential aspect of economic analysis. Actual firms have had a history of diversifying, creating complexity and uniqueness of function. Marketing systems are modelled horizontally (i.e. the structure and competitive conduct of a set of individual organisations at a given point in a set of transactions) or vertically (the series of transactions constituting a ladder or chain). In reality however a marketing system should be modelled as a set of complicated organisations with multiple interactions with multiple other equally complicated organisations.	Our solution has been to simplify the concept of the firm so that it is only dealing in rice based products, and when other products are included to allocate emissions/costs and labour to these using economic allocation methods.
Invisible inputs. Some aspects are invisible to one but not to the other assessment methodology, for example VCA includes the use of human labour, while LCA is blind to the GHG emissions directly released from human beings.	From the analysis perspective this has been ignored, for example while the sum of GHG emissions from paddy production will include soil derived GHGs (methane and nitrous oxide) these cost nothing to the farmer. Similarly, interests on loans are important costs, but generate zero emissions from the GHG perspective.

References

Allen, M.R., Frame, D.J., Huntingford, C., Jones, C.D., Lowe, J.A., Meinshausen, M., Meinshausen, N. (2009) Warming caused by cumulative carbon emissions towards the trillionth tonne. Nature 458, 1163-1166.
Barnes, J., Nhuleipo, O., Muteyauli, P., MacGregor, J. (2005) Preliminary asset and flow accounts for forest resources in Namibia. DEA Research, Discussion Paper 70.

BSI, (2008) PAS 2050. Specification for the assessment of the life cycle greenhouse gas emissions of goods and services, in: Institution, B.S. (Ed.), Available at http://www.bsigroup.com/en/Standards-and-Publications/Industry-Sectors/Energy/PAS-2050/

Chambwera, M., MacGregor, J., Baker, A., (2011) The Informal Economy - A primer for development professionals on the importance of the informal economy in developing countries. International Institute for Environment and Development, London.

Daniel, J., Solomon, S., Sanford, T., McFarland, M., Fuglestvedt, J., Friedlingstein, P. (2012) Limitations of single-basket trading: lessons from the Montreal Protocol for climate policy. Climatic Change 111, 241-248.

European Commission, (2010) International Reference Life Cycle Data System (ILCD) Handbook, General guide for Life Cycle Assessment,, in: Joint Research Centre Institute for Environment and Sustainability (Ed.), Publications Office of the European Union,.

Finnveden, G., Hauschild, M.Z., Ekvall, T., Guinée, J., Heijungs, R., Hellweg, S., Koehler, A., Pennington, D., Suh, S. (2009) Recent developments in Life Cycle Assessment. Journal of Environmental Management 91, 1-21.

Forster, P., Ramaswamy, V., Artaxo, P., Berntsen, T., Betts, R., Fahey, D.W., Haywood, J., Lean, J., Lowe, D.C., Myhre, G., Nganga, J., Prinn, R., Raga, G., Schulz, M., Van Dorland, R., (2007) Changes in atmospheric constituents and in radiative forcing, in: Solomon, S., Qin, D., Manning, M., Chen, Z., Marquis, M., Averyt, K.B., Tignor, M., Miller, H.L. (Eds.), Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, United Kingdom and New York, NY, USA pp. 131-234.

Frischknecht, R., Althaus, H.-J., Bauer, C., Doka, G., Heck, T., Jungbluth, N., Kellenberger, D., Nemecek, T., (): . Int J LCA, D., http://dx.doi.org/10.1065/lca2007.02.308 (2007) The Environmental Relevance of Capital Goods in Life Cycle Assessments of Products and Services. International Journal of Life Cycle Assessment.

Gathorne-Hardy, A. (2013a) Baselines and Boundaries. SIAS internal discussion document.

Gathorne-Hardy, A., (2013b) Greenhouse gas emissions from rice, Working paper, http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/sites/sias/files/documents/GHG%20emissions%20from%20rice%20-%20%20working%20paper.pdf.

Gathorne-Hardy, A., (2013c) Life cycle assessment of four rice production systems: High Yielding Varieties, Rainfed, System of Rice Intensification and Organic, in: Harriss-White, B. (Ed.), Technology, Jobs and A Lower Carbon Future: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy(The case of rice in India)New Delhi.
Gathorne-Hardy, A., Harriss-White, B., (2013) Embodied emissions and dis-embodied jobs: the environmental, social and economic implications of the rice production-supply chain in SE India. ,

Symposium on Technology, Jobs and a Lower Carbon Future :Methods, substance and ideas for the informal economy (the case of rice in India). IHD, New Delhi.

Harriss-White, B. (2003) India Working: Essays on Society and Economy. Cambridge University Press., Cambridge, UK.

Harriss-White, B., Adam, C., A., S., (2007) Chapter 7: Summary and Conclusions, in: Harriss-White, B., Sinha, A. (Eds.), Trade liberalization and India's informal economy. Oxford University Press, Oxford.

Hauschild, M.Z. (2005) Assessing environmental impacts in a life cycle perspective. Environmental Science and Technology 39 81-88.

Haygarth, P.M., Ritz, K. (2009) The future of soils and land use in the UK: Soil systems for the provision of land-based ecosystem services. Land Use Policy 26, Supplement 1, S187-S197.

ILO, (1999) Decent Work: Report of the Director General., International Labour Conference, 87th Sessions, Geneva.

ISO, (2006) Environment Management – Life Cycle Assessment – Principles and Framework. EN ISO 14040, in: International Organization for Standardization (ISO) (Ed.), Switzerland.

Kasmaprapruet, S., Paengjuntuek, W., Saikhwan, P., Phungrassami, H. (2009) Life Cycle Assessment of Milled Rice Production: Case Study in Thailand. European Journal of Scientific Research 30, 8.
Lorano, E., (2005) Quality in work: Dimension and Indicators in the Framework of the European Emplyment Strategy, in: UNECE/ILO/Eurostat Seminar on the Quality of Work (Ed.), Working Paper no. 2., Geneva.

Mai Thao, P.T., Kurisu, K.H., Hanaki, K. (2011) Greenhouse gas emission mitigation potential of rice husks for An Giang province, Vietnam. Biomass and Bioenergy 35, 3656-3666.

Mody, G., Mani, M., Sukumar, M. (2013) Labour patterns within the informal food sector.

Prasara-A, J., Grant, T. (2011) Comparative life cycle assessment of uses of rice husk for energy purposes. The International Journal of Life Cycle Assessment 16, 493-502.

Ring, I. (2008) Integrating local ecological services into intergovernmental fiscal transfers: The case of the ecological ICMS in Brazil. Land Use Policy 25, 485-497.

Schneider, F. (2002) Size and measurement of the informal economy in 110 countries around the world. Department of Economics, Johannes Kepler University of Linz, Austria.

Shie, J.-L., Chang, C.-Y., Chen, C.-S., Shaw, D.-G., Chen, Y.-H., Kuan, W.-H., Ma, H.-K. (2011) Energy life cycle assessment of rice straw bio-energy derived from potential gasification technologies. Bioresource Technology 102, 6735-6741.

Shindell, D., Kuylenstierna, J.C.I., Vignati, E., van Dingenen, R., Amann, M., Klimont, Z., Anenberg, S.C., Muller, N., Janssens-Maenhout, G., Raes, F., Schwartz, J., Faluvegi, G., Pozzoli, L., Kupiainen, K., Höglund-Isaksson, L., Emberson, L., Streets, D., Ramanathan, V., Hicks, K., Oanh, N.T.K., Milly, G., Williams, M., Demkine, V., Fowler, D. (2012) Simultaneously Mitigating Near-Term Climate Change and Improving Human Health and Food Security. Science 335, 183-189.

Wang, M., Xia, X., Zhang, Q., Liu, J. (2010) Life cycle assessment of a rice production system in Taihu region, China. International Journal of Sustainable Development & World Ecology 17, 157-161.

A LIFE CYCLE ASSESSMENT OF FOUR RICE PRODUCTION SYSTEMS: HIGH YIELDING VARIETIES, RAIN-FED RICE, SYSTEM OF RICE INTENSIFICATION AND ORGANIC RICE

Alfred Gathorne–Hardy

A LIFE CYCLE ASSESSMENT OF FOUR RICE PRODUCTION SYSTEMS: HIGH YIELDING VARIETIES, RAIN-FED RICE, SYSTEM OF RICE INTENSIFICATION AND ORGANIC RICE

Alfred Gathorne-Hardy

Acronyms:

CH_4	Methane
FYM	Farm Yard Manure
GHG	Greenhouse gas
ILUC	Indirect Land Use Change
LCA	Life Cycle Assessment
N_2O	Nitrous oxide
NUE	Nitrogen use efficiency
TNS	Simulated conditions for TN water table

Introduction

Agriculture is driving its own demise

Agriculture is a key driver of environmental degradation. It is directly responsible for *approximately*10-12% of global greenhouse gas (GHG) emissions(Smith et al., 2007) and indirectly for roughly another 10% (Canadell et al., 2007). It is the main driver of land use change and associated biodiversity loss (Foley et al., 2011), uses 92% of global fresh water (Hoekstra and Mekonnen, 2012) and approximately 20% of primary energy (Eshel and Martin, 2006).

As well as causing environmental damage, agriculture is, above all other industries, reliant upon a well-functioning environment. It is vulnerable to temperature extremes, water availability, atmospheric soil and water pollution, pest and disease outbreaks, biodiversity loss, tropospheric ozone, high winds - and the list goes on.

The global agricultural system is thus both a driver and a victim of environmental change.

This challenge is intensified with the pressure to respond to an already changing environment at the same time as increasing agricultural output to meet the expected demand of a global population growing both in numbers and wealth (Carriger and Vallee, 2007; Foresight, 2011; Singh, 2013; The Royal Society, 2012). Thus agricultural systems must simultaneously adapt to change, mitigate further change and increase production.

This paper provides the following: (i) a brief overview of three existing areas of agricultural-environmental stress, (ii) the methods, results and analysis of research exploring the relations between stages of rice production and greenhouse gas (GHG) emissions, (iii) the water use and the energy requirements of four different rice production technologies: intensive flooded High Yielding Varieties (HYV), rain-fed rice, Systems of Rice Intensification (SRI) and organic rice, (see box 1 below).

Three areas of agri-environmental pressure

1.2.1. The impact of greenhouse gas emissions on agriculture

While the planet warmed by an average of 0.74°C during the last century(Pachauri, 2007), the rate was uneven. Temperatures are increasing much faster on land compared to the ocean,[22] and certain regions are experiencing especially rapid change, for example the arctic (Duarte et al., 2012; Screen and Simmonds, 2010) and the Himalayas (Wassmann et al., 2009).

Consequences that were expected at the end of the 21st century are occurring now (Duarte et al., 2012; Hoegh-Guldberg and Bruno, 2010), and, while ascribing specific weather events to climate change is difficult, there is increasing statistical evidence to do just this, ranging from the Pakistan floods of 2010 to the Russian heat-waves in the same year (Coumou and Rahmstorf, 2012).

Temperature rises affect agriculture.Rice, in common with many cereals(including wheat and maize), is especially sensitive to high temperatures during flowering. Much work has been carried out onIR64, the most common rice variety in the tropics,showing substantial declines in yields if daily temperatures exceed 35°C. For example, spikelet fertility drops at approximately 7% per degree above 29.6°C(Jagadish et al., 2007); there is a 50% decline in spikelet fertility at 38°C compared to 29°C(Jagadish et al., 2010)and an almost 100% decline at 39°C(Santiaguel et al.). Higher night time temperatures, which rise faster than day time temperatures with climate change, increase the respirationrate, using up carbohydrate reserves so that an estimated 10% yield decline is seen with every 1°C night time temperature increase (Cheng et al., 2006; Peng et al., 2004).

1.2.2. Water

While plant breeding can address some aspects of increased temperature (for example by changing the time of day for pollen dehiscence), for everything but subsistence cropping the variable that describes most yield variation is precipitation or access to water (Sinclair, 2011). The complexity of the climate system makes predicting precipitation, as a manifestation of local weather, very difficult, but physics dictates that higher temperatures increase evaporation and thus the severity of droughts(Trenberth, 2010). Warmer air can hold more moisture (containing additional latent energy) - potentially increasing the intensity of rainfall events (Coumou and Rahmstorf, 2012). Thus even for irrigated farming, the increased evaporation increases demand for irrigation, and the increased intensity of rainfall increases associated threats from flooding and lodging.

[22] 0.24°C per decade on land compared to 0.13°C per decade for oceans IPCC, (2007) Observations: Surface and Atmospheric Climate Change, in: Solomon, S., Qin, D., Manning, M., Chen, Z., Marquis, M., Averyt, K.B., M., T., H.L., M. (Eds.), Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change, 2007. Cambridge University Press, , Cambridge, United Kingdom and New York, NY, USA, p. 237.

While water supplies may change with climate change, agriculture is already using the majority of extracted fresh water globally (Pfister et al., 2011). Assuming water is available, the use of water in agriculture is a problem when: (a)alternative uses would be better (for nature or society), (b)if water leaves the site polluted from use, or (c) if inappropriate use (for example over-irrigation) causes local problems such as salinisation.Forty per cent of the world, including much of India, suffers from water stress (Oki and Kanae, 2006)and much of the rice growing areas of India show all three problems, with high water stress, combined with the high water demand of irrigated rice leading to local and regional water conflicts, rapidly lowering water tables, and enormous demand for energy(Nelson et al., 2009; Prasad and Nagarajan, 2004).

Energy

Energy is the currency of nature's economy(Lindeman, 1942). As a component of nature, agriculture trades this currency with both inputs (from the sun, human and animal labour and increasingly from fossil fuels) and outputs (as food or fibre). One of the key developments in agriculture has been the addition of more energy into the system, for example through fossil fuels and electricity, which has allowed additional outputs through higher yields(Pelletier et al., 2011). Yet much of this energy comes at a cost - both directly (burning fossil fuels releases greenhouse gases into the environment) and indirectly allowing wider environmental damage (for example the pollution of waterways with pesticides and fertilisers or over-extraction of water).

Looking at agricultural energy use up to the farm gate it is useful to split it between direct and indirect energy. Direct energy is that expended directly on the farm, for example diesel for tractors or electricity for irrigation, while indirect energy is the embodied energy in products used on the farm, for example the embodied energy in the production of a tractor or of fertiliser. In conventional high yielding agriculture, indirect energy is often more important than the direct energy, but so far little work has been done looking at the energy balance in small scale, dry-land/organic/extensive rice production in India.

The importance of rice

Rice is important crop socially, economically and environmentally. In terms ofhuman nutrition, rice is the most important agricultural crop - while similar quantities of wheat and maize are grown globally, a substantial proportion of these are used for animal feed (and increasingly biofuels). By contrast rice is the staple food for 50- 60% of the world's population (Carriger and Vallee, 2007; Stoop et al., 2009), and in India represents 31% of total calorie intake (Anonymous, 2011b). Economically it is equally important, providing employment globally for ca. 1bn people (Dawe, 2000), and represents a major fraction of India's agricultural sector, which accounts for a fifth of GDP[23]and yet which employs 57% of India's workforce (Lerche, 2011).

From 1961 to 2007, Indian rice production has increased by 3 times to over 140m tonnes, minimally oscillating around 21% of global rice production throughout this time(FAOSTAT, 2008). During this periodthe use of fertiliser (for all crops) in India increased by approximately 40 times and India switched from being a net importer of rice to a major exporter, responsible for between 8 and 24% of global milled rice exports in the first 8 yrs of the 21st century(FAO).

The environmentalimportance of rice is due to the magnitude of its physical footprint, accentuatedby the practise of irrigation. Globally 157m hectares are down to rice, over 44m hectares of these in India (Anonymous, 2011a). Rice is unique among major crops in having flooded production conditions. Irrigated rice is responsible for most rice production – worldwide 79m hectares of irrigated lowland rice produce 75% of the annual global rice output(IRRI, 2013). This rice has been estimated to use 34-43% of global irrigated water, or 24-30% of the total freshwater withdrawals(Bouman et al., 2007). The implications of widespread production and flooded production conditions are a high dependence on energy, and a complicated set of greenhouse gas emissions. All large-scale water extraction brings with it social and environmental burdens, from dams, rivers, artificial rivers, and from large scale mining of ground water aquifers. The direct capture and use of precipitation is the least damaging, although even this can have a significant impact on water availability downstream (Belluscio, 2009).

Life cycle research

There is very little published life cycle research into the greenhouse gas emissions of Indian rice. For example the web of science has zero returns from the search 'life cycle rice India.'

While the larger project of which this is a component, examines social, economic and ecological implications of the entire rice supply chain, here we assess three measures of environmental impact: GHG emissions, energy use and groundwater use. These were chosen due to their importance, their ability to be measured, and their ability to act as proxy measures for wider environmental impacts (Huijbregts et al., 2010). We have chosen to study rice as a case study system for three reasons: its importance for food, its importance for employment, and its complicated environmental impacts.

We look specifically at four different types of rice production: i) HYV rice, as typified across much of India, and a direct grandchild of the green revolution. ii) Organic rice production, which is a largely unregulated industry in India that was initially led by the export market, but now has increasing levels

[23] having declined from over 50% at Independence Planning Commission, (2008) Eleventh Five Year Plan, (2007–2012). Agriculture, Rural Development, Industry, Services and Physical Infrastructure, in: India, G.o. (Ed.), New Delhi.

of dedicated rice grown for domestic consumption. iii)The System of Rice Intensification, and iv) Rain-fed rice. See Table 3.

The main GHG from rice production is methane (CH4). Of the 49Tg of anthropogenic CO_2–eq[24] emitted worldwide in 2004, CH_4 made up about 14% (Pachauri, 2007). Rice was estimated to be responsible for about 11% of this (USEPA, 2006), and of that 97% is from developing countries(Smith et al., 2007). Demand for rice is expected to increase, so there is pressure to produce more rice with fewer GHG emissions.

If humanity is to meet this challenge then rice, as the single most important food product globally, will have a key role. Rice, while feeding an increasingly urbanised and growing population will need increased output on the same land, with less water, a challenge recognised by the Indian government(Singh, 2013)

Methods

The most robust technique for determining the repercussions of different production techniques is to use the experimental method, where only the variable of interest differs between examined populations. Yet there are situations in both natural and social scienceswhen such a set-up is impossible. While this paper examines environmental variables, it is part of a larger project looking at socio-economicvariables and institutions – a range of variables too large for experimental control. Indeed any effort to control a large range of complex variables would require such manipulation that the results would be unreliable.Thereforethis project has used a comparative observational approach, where two or more methods for achieving the same result (production of paddy in this case) are compared on common attributes (Ott and Longnecker, 2010). As is accepted practice in social science research, we use reported practices and outcomes to ascribe different attributes to each rice production technique(Ly et al., 2012).

Data was collected using recall surveys, carried out by 3 different research teamsacross the four technological systems.

Locations

The research took place in semi-arid regions of South and East India. Data for each rice techno-system was collected from different regions, with the exception of an additional subset of HYV farms collected in conjunction with the SRI farmers as a local control in Andhra Pradesh. Intensive, High Yielding Variety rice (HYV) rice data was collected from Thiruvannamalai district, in northern Tamil Nadu, SRI paddy data was collected from Warangal district, in northern AP, data on rainfed paddy production was collected from Koraput district, in south-eastern Odisha, and data for organic paddy

[24] CO_2-eq is a form of standardising GHGs into a common baseline against carbon dioxide, as explained in section 2.1.3.

was collected from Thiruvallur, SE Tamil Nadu. At each site, a standard questionnaire was used to collect data for the previous year, but only the data for a single season – the highest (average) producing from each farm –had been intensively analysed for each production process.

LCA model of paddy from different production systems

Our objective is to understand howthe production of paddy from four different rice farming processes affects key environmental criteria. Life cycle assessment (LCA) methodology was used to analyse the data, based on ISO 14040, PAS 2050 and the ILCD handbook (European Commission, 2010; ISO, 2006; PAS 2050:2011, 2011).

System boundaries and functional unit

The functional unit for this part of the study is:

1kg of paddy at the farm gate

That is: all the processes that go into producing the paddy but, in this paper, not those processes that convert paddy to rice(Gathorne-Hardy, 2013b).

Establishing appropriate baseline and boundaries is critical for accurate, meaningful and representative results. In our study the baselines – the objects of comparison - are to a large extent taken care of, as we are comparingproduction technologies. Setting the boundaries correctly means addressing the balance between knowing which aspects can be ignored without compromising the final result, and making sure the study is practically feasible.

Figure 3 shows the boundaries to the study.The central black box shows the processes by which we collected data for paddy production. Everything within the blue box is included in the study. The additional two criteria within the red box are optionally included in the analysis, for reasons discussed

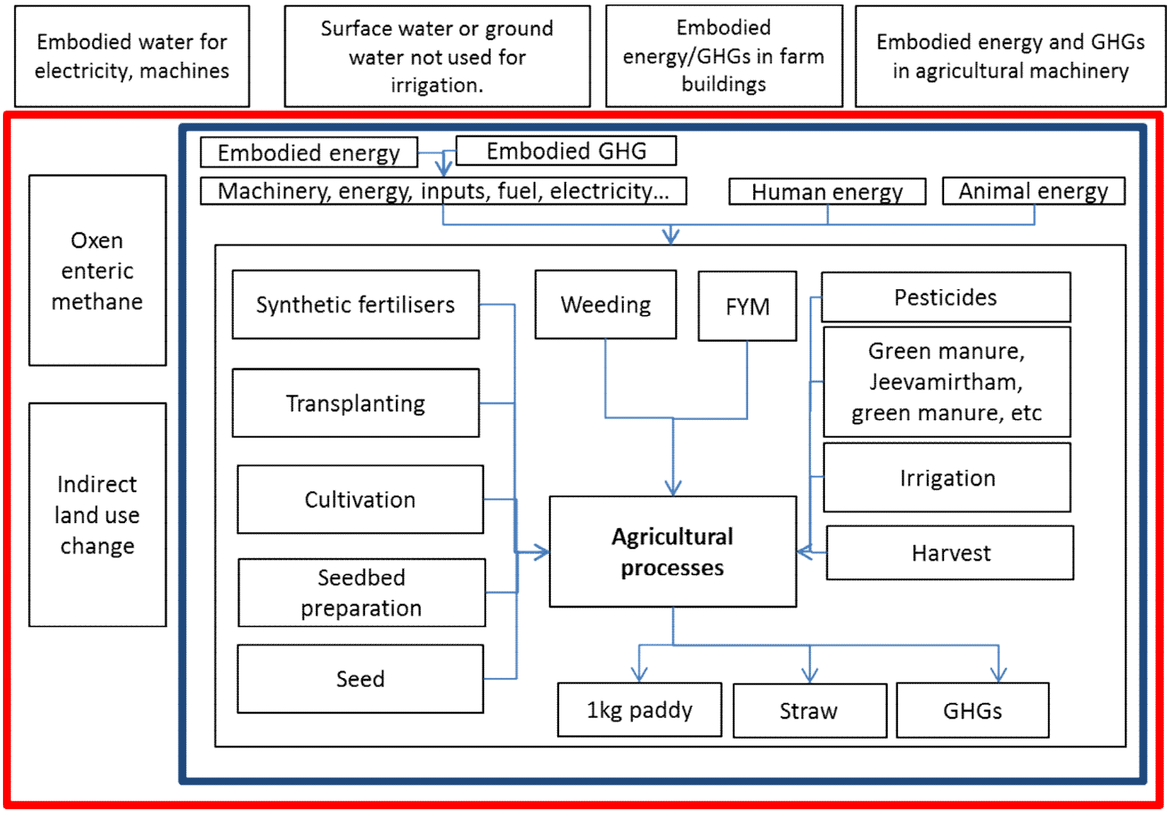


Figure 3. System boundaries for determining the environmental burden of 1kg of paddy. . Those within the dark blue line are included in all calculations. Points only within the red box are optionally included. Categories outside the red box are not included within the boundary of this LCA

below. Outside the red box are three key elements that have not been included. Embodied water was not included due to lack of data. Surface water was not included due to lack of ability to capture this data accurately using recall surveys. And embodied emissions associated with buildings were also not included because paddy is normally stored – if stored at all – in the producer's dwelling, and no other buildings were deemed relevant to the production system. Only the main items of machinery were included such as tractors and power tillers. Early analysis showed that the embodied emissions of weeders, trailers, levelling plates and ploughs fell well below the 1% threshold.

Key assumptions

Allocation

When more than one output is produced from a process, the production emissions must be allocated between them (European Commission, 2010; ISO, 2006). For example cows produce calves, manure and milk, all of which may have an economic value. To allocate the entire emissions to just one of these would give one an unfair burden, and the other two an unfair credit. Instead the overall emissions must be allocated between them. Allocation can occur through a range of measures, including by mass, energy content, or value (Directive 2009/28/EC., 2009),but allocation of co-products via economic burdens, as recommended by Williams et al (2006), normally reflects the drivers of production. In economic allocation, the proportional value of each co-product represents the proportional allocation of emissions, on the assumption that the co-products drive the total production in proportion to their economic value. The most important allocations in this research are in the livestock sub-system and between straw and grain yield. Both are described below.

2.3.1.1. Straw.

Rice production is a multifunctional process, producing straw as well as paddy, yet in rice LCAs rice straw is commonly not allocated to the emissions of rice ((Blengini and Busto, 2009) or is even more commonly not mentioned (Blengini and Busto, 2009; Hokazono and Hayashi, 2012; Wang et al., 2010). As a useful by-product, it should be allocated a share of the environmental burden associated with rice production.Approximately equal weight and energy of straw and paddy are produced from each crop, so using mass or energy, the straw and paddy would be allocated environmental costs/benefits equally. This very poorly reflects the drivers for paddy farming which isled by paddy production, with straw considered by producers as a potentially useful by-product.

Allocation to straw is made more difficult within this study for three reasons: there is rarely a market for the straw, few farmers know how much straw they harvest while straw that leaves the field can sometimes but not always return to the field as manure. Only in NE Tamil Nadu did farmers (65% of them) report selling their straw, no straw was sold in any of the other farming systems investigated, with the exception of one organic rice producer. In some cases straw is burnt, which would suggest an economic value close to zero, or even a negative value, if the labour associated with burring the straw is included. This did not occur on any of the farms we studied. Instead there is a household demand for straw to feed livestock for milk, traction or meat. We used prices from Tamil Nadu, which averaged at Rs0.51 kg^{-1} (standard deviation 0.043), for imputing straw prices in all regions.

We calculated the yield of straw by proxy, using the harvest index. Although the harvest index (the proportion of grain to total above-ground biomass) for intensive in-bred rice is approximately 50% (Islam et al., 2010; Khush, 2001), this does not account for the actual availability of straw to harvest – inevitably a portion is left in the field. We have therefore assumed the harvestable yield of straw to be 90% of total straw; thus the total straw yield is assumed to be 90% of the paddy yield (0.5*2*90%) for organic, SRI and HYV rice, and 126% for traditional varieties (where the harvest index is more commonly 0.3) (0.7*2*90%) (Khush, 2001).

Inventory analysis and data sources

This section explains how the collected data were adapted for use in the LCA model, and sources of data.

Global warming potentials

To calculate GHG equivalents we used IPCC 2007 100 year global warming potentials (GWP_{100})(Forster et al., 2007). GWP is a measure of how much heat is retained in the atmosphere for each gas, and the 100 indicates that the figures have been averaged to the heat retained over 100 years. GWPs are set up in reference to CO_2, which has a value of 1. The three main agricultural GHGs areCO_2, methane and nitrous oxide, which have GWPs of 1, 25 and 298 respectively, meaning that over 100 years 1 kg of N_2O will retain 298 times the amount of heat retained by 1 kg of CO_2. So releasing 1kg of CO_2 is 25 times less polluting than releasing 1kg of CH_4.

Farming practises

Table 3. Description of different production technologies and their acronyms

Production Technology	Abbreviation	Description
Irrigated, intensive, High Yielding Varieties in Tamil Nadu	HYV TN	Green revolution rice production technology, planted in a seedbed, transplanted sometime between 2-5 weeks with multiple plants per hill. Fertilised with synthetic fertilisers and sometimes farmyard manure too (FYM)
Rain-fed	Rain-fed	Rain-fed rice production is typically sown direct into the final field (rather than transplanting following initial sowing into a nursery), uses no groundwater irrigation, no synthetic pesticides or fertilisers. More detail is available from Mishra(2013)
System of rice intensification Tamilnadu simulated	SRI TNS	These results were the same as SRI AP, with the exception of allocation of GHGs and energy to irrigation – instead of using survey based data, we simulated what the emissions would have been if the farming had taken place in the same area as the HYV production. This was done by multiplying the amount of embodied GHG /energy the HYV TN system produced/used to produce the average quantity of ground water, by the fraction of HYV TN to SRI AP ground water use. Apart from that, all measures are identical to SRI AP.
Organic	Organic TNS	The organic rice all came from Sirkazhi Organic Farmers' Association, under the Centre for Indian Knowledge Systems umbrella. There is a stringent set of rules, two key ones of which are a ban on synthetic fertilisers a ban on synthetic pesticides. The embodied energy and GHGs associated with irrigation were calculated for organic systems in the same method as SRI TNS.

Table 4. Seed environment data

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
Seed	MJ kg^{-1}, GHG	See data	The mean energy/GHG for that production technique,

	kg^{-1}	source	+5% to account for handling and losses

Table 5. Cultivation data

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
Power tiller diesel use	l/hr	1.5	Farmer survey
GHG intensity diesel (kgCO2eq/l)	(kgCO2eq/l)	3.0168	Renewable energy directive (Directive 2009/28/EC., 2009)
P. tiller life expectancy	Yrs	20	Farmer survey, probably an underestimate.
P. tiller weight	Kg	515	(Greavescotton, 2013)
Tractor l/hr	l/hr	4	Farmer survey
Tractor weight	Kg	1952.5	(John Deere, 2012; Mahindra, 2012)
Embodied energy steel	MJ/kg	36	(Gumaste)
Embodied GHG of steel	kg CO2 -eq/kg steel	2.7	(CSE, 2012)
Bullocks	GHG /hr		Running and embodied emissions were calculated together for bullocks use. It was assumed that all livestock based cultivation was done by bullocks. Annual India specific methane emissions were taken from Singhal et al (2005) for indigenous bulls. Bulls were assumed to work for 13years (from 5yrs to 18 years (from farmer survey)). Calf emissions were also taken from Singhal et al (2005) (the total emissions over 5 years were split by the 13 years of productive life). The annual emissions plus 1/13th of calf emissions were divided by the total number of daysbullocks worked per year (as described by the owner) and 24 hours a day, then multiplied by the number of hours the animal worked day^{-1}. Thus if an animal worked 6 hours a day, each hour would represent 25% of the daily emissions, as the bullocks emit methane 24h day^{-1}. For rented bullocks, it was assumed they worked 100 days a year, and 5.5 hours a day (Fuller and Aye, 2012). This emission rate was reduced by 1.3% to account for the final value of the bullocks at the end of life. This is assumed to be Rs 5000 (G. Rodrigo, 2012, PersComm). Assuming bullocks work 100 days/yr, at 5.5 hours a day at Rs 50 hr^{-1} (assumed to be rented out at Rs100 hr^{-1} for a pair, so Rs 50 hr^{-1}bullocks^{-1}) for 13 years, and is worth Rs 15,000 to buy, then the end of live value is 1.3% of total value. It is further reduced by 4.1% for the CH_4 allocated to manure, using economic value of NPK fertiliser in manure (1166Rs/animal) compared to the potential rental value of an bullocks over a year (50Rs hr^{-1}, 5.5hr day^{-1} 100 days yr^{-1})
Tractors, embodied emissions.			Assumed to be 100% steel, and last for 20 years. Embodied GHG emissions for Indian steel taken from CSE (2012). Embodied emissions are calculated on an hourly basis by dividing the total embodied emissions by the fraction of hours for each job compared to total number of hours the tractor works in 20 years.
Male energy	MJ hr^{-1}	1.96	(Nassiri and Singh, 2009). These figures were chosen as they came from an Indian study, but the range of potential factors was high, and the justifications for any of the available figures was minimal – thus there is high uncertainty around these figures. For example from 0.36MJ hr^{-1} to 2.3MJ hr^{-1}(Smil, 2006) These vary a lot. 1.96 from (Nassiri and Singh, 2009; Singh et al., 2002) OR 0.62 in (Tippayawong et al., 2003) and then 14.05 for a pair of large bullocks. 2.3 for human labour, and 10.1 for cattle or 0.36 or 0.26 from (Smil, 2006).
Female energy	MJ hr^{-1}	1.57	(Nassiri and Singh, 2009)
Animal energy	MJ hr^{-1} pair of	14.05	(Nassiri and Singh, 2009)

	bullocks		

Table 6. Bund repair, transplanting and weeding.

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
Human energy, as detailed above			

Table 7. Pesticides and fertilisers

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
Fertilisers	Kg CO_2-eq $kg^{-1}$of bought fertiliser (ie not just active ingredient) MJ kg^{-1} (ie not just active ingredient)	GHG emissions Phosphate: 1.94 DAP: 1.79 Urea: 0.93 Complex: 0.24 Potash: 0.16 Neem: 0.10 Embodied MJ Urea: 25.6 Phosphate: 11.1 Potash energy: 6.7 DAP: 9.714 Complex: 5.436	Urea emissions were taken from India specific urea GHG emission factors from CSE (2009). Data for phosphate, amonia and potash were taken from Woods and Cowie(2004). Neem cake. 0.01kg CO_2-eq kg^{-1}. This used extraction data for jatropha from Kumar (Kumar et al., 2012) multiplied by economic values of neem oil and neem cake from (Krishi Vighan Kendra, 2012)
Pesticides	CO_2-eq kg active ingredient	4.921	Data was taken from Elsayad et al (2003)
Pesticides	MJ kg active ingredient	102	(Mandal et al., 2009)
Manure			Manure from cows/bullocks has associated CH_4 emissions from bovine enteric emissions. Methane emissions have been allocated using economic measures. The annual emissions from a dairy cow, taken from Singhal et al (2005)was split by the total value from milk production (taken from farmer surveys), and the total value of the NPK in the manure, using Tennakoon and Jemamala Bandala(2003). Calculated economic values and reported values for manure were similar (6 and 8% respectively, $p>0.05$) but economic measures were chosen due to the shortage of reported values.

Table 8.Irrigation and soil based GHG emissions

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
Methane emissions			IPCC default figures (IPCC, 2006)
Nitrous oxide emissions			IPCC default figures (IPCC, 2006)
SRI CH_4 and N_2O emissions			Calculating soil based GHG emissions from SRI rice was more complicated due to lack of appropriate IPCC default figures. In principle the methane emissions should be low due to the repeated drainage, and nitrous oxide emissions would be high due to the partially flooded soil conditions but the author could find no published evidence to confirm this. While there is SRI GHG emission data available, non that the author could find was of adequate quality to be used (ie with detailed, replicated methodologies and suitable analysis). For this reason we have relied on papers looking at controlled irrigation as an isolated factor (for methane we used Peng et al (2011b), Hou et al (2012)and Suryavanshi et al (2013) resulting in methane emissions of 57.9% of HYV and for nitrous oxide we used we used Peng et al (2011b), Hou et al (2012)and Peng et al (2011a) resulting in N_2O emissions of 211.0% of HYV. This has some advantages, for example the data isn't compounded by multiple factors which can be included in separate calculations (eg such as changes in levels of manure inputs, etc) but also has disadvantages as some specific SRI practises have no data relating to them at all (such as wider spacing between hills) and so cannot be incorporated into the GHG calculations. It is also very close to the IPCC multiple aeration figure of 52% for multiple aerations (IPCC, 2006)
Electricity based emissions from irrigation.			Calculating the amount of energy used for irrigation was difficult. Ideally we would have used meter readings, but no farmers had electricity meters. Instead we calculated the total amount of energy used through the size of the pump(s) and the number of hours they were used over the season. While pump horse power was unambiguous, the hours of pump use were from daily estimates – some farmers left pumps on whenever there was electricity available, so even these figures are imperfect.
Embodied GHG emission s associated with electricity	(kgCO2eq/KWh)	1.1095	This was generated using CEA (2011) data of 0.81 at production multiplied by 27% T and E losses (Alagh, 2010). Theft was not included in this, as stolen electricity presumably has utility, so should also take a share of overall emissions.
Embodied primary	MJ KWh^{-1}.	15.189	This is for non fossil fuel based, as defined by TN electricty board, multiplied by primary energy factors

energy associated with electricity			from http://eco3.org/wp-content/plugins/downloads-manager/upload/Demystifying%20Energy%20Use%20-%20Energy%20Equivalence%20Matrix-%20Report%20No.1029.pdf for coal (and lignite, prob should be greater) and http://go.leonardo-energy.org/rs/europeancopper/images/PEF-finalreport.pdf for nucleur and hydro. assumed diesel = coal, and gas = half coal. And multiplied by T and E losses(Alagh, 2010)
Simulated water table			A key determinant for irrigation energy use is the water table, ie the depth from which water must be brought to the surface. As we are interested in the differences between different rice production techniques, it would be unfair to compare the actual irrigation emissions, as these are likely to be highly impacted by the geography rather than the production technique as different regions have different water tables. To counter this problem we normalised the irrigation emissions according to how much water each production technique used compared to a baseline of HYV. Thus if HYV used *x* litres of water per kilogram of rice, and SRI used 0.5**x*, we have allocated SRI 50% of the HYV irrigation emissions. For clarity, modified answers have been re-named, so SRI rice is then named SRI TNS, and organic is named organic TNS, to show that they have a Tamilnadu simulated emissions.

Table 9.Harvest

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
Harvest	GHG emissions hr^{-1} MJ hr^{-1}	15.084 218.53	5ldiesel hr^{-1}. Taken from interview with combine harvester owner/operator.

Table 10. ILUC and SOC

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
Indirect Land Use Change	Kg CO_2-eq ha land use change	10000	This was calculated as the proportion of yield obtained to what could have potentially been obtained, using our comparing SRI yields to HYV yields in AP, and then multiplied by 1/20th of the ILUC factor. Fritsche's ILUC factor was used, although this was halved from 400tC ha^{-1} to 200tC ha^{-1}(Fritsche et al., 2009). The reduction in ILUC value was due to the uncertainty over the accuracy of any ILUC value, and the merits of assuming conservative values. Fritsche et al (2009) points out that the full ILUC is unlikely to occur due to other factors such as intensification and reduced demand coming into play. We have assumed this works in both directions, and that with additional yield de-intensification and increased demand are likely to

			reduce the ILUC credit that is available.
Soil Organic Carbon			Taken from IPCC (IPCC, 2006)

Gaps

Jeevamirtham, a solution of water, manure, cattle urine, jaggery and various other products is used by organic and non-organic farmers as a fertiliser and pesticide. Typically it is mixed, and retained in a barrel for a few days before it is applied to the crop, often with the incoming water. The nutrient content of its ingredients is not substantial, but it has been reported to have additional N via N fixing bacteria. If it has, the process has been left out.

Azospirillum, phosphobacteria-PP, pseudomonas-PSM Azolla and other micro products have not been given embodied emissions, or assumed to bring nitrogen with them. There is no data on which to base emissions assumptions, and when the author inspected production, there was very little capital infrastructure, so embodied emissions are likely to be minimal.

2.6. Analysis

Analysis was carried out using a LCA model built in excel, and statistics were tested in SPSS.

Results and Discussion

Impact assessment

Here the results are presented in tabulated form.

Table 11. Basic data for farm environment

	Total farmed area (ha)	FYM (t/ha)	Totally synthetic N ha (kg N/ha)	Total N/ha (kg N from FYM and synthetic)	kgN used by the crop	NUE (kg grain kg N applied)	mea n cost of tractor manure	Ground water (t/kg)	Ground water (t/ha)	Fossil energy/ha (GJ)	Fossil energy/kg (MJ/kg)	Total energy (MJ/kg)	Days pumping
HYV-TN (20 fms)	2.03	7	149	257	94	45	843	3.79	27595	32082	5.57	6.51	71.75
S.E.	0.26	1	18	30	2	5	102	0.72	5140	2082	0.36	0.38	0.91
Rainfed (24 fms)	0.50	14	0	203	34	18	1014			272	0.18	20.42	
S.E.	0.40	1	0	17	4	2	94			151	0.10	2.05	
SRI TNS (20 fms)	1.23	19	157	436	129	34	1113	1.66	16049	14604	1.90	5.10	71.50
S.E.	0.62	4	36	100	30	8	106	0.38	3682	3350	0.14	0.42	1.21
Organic (20 fms)	5.38	16	4	283	75	65	218	2.86	15795	14525	3.26	6.48	65.54
S.E.	0.87	2	0	52	3	19	1	0.325	1710	198	0.11	0.33	0.38

3.1.2GHG emissions

There is no significant difference in the GHG emissions associated with paddy production between the different production systems investigated: all produce approximately 1kg CO_2-eq for each kg of paddy , ($p>0.05$),see Figure 4.This apparent uniformity hides radical differences in the constituent emissions, which are better represented – and partially correlated – with the lack of uniformity of yields and the other environmental criteria Figure 4. In additional the GHG emissions from 1 kg paddy do not include an emissions factor associated with yield differences (Indirect Land Use Change). This will be discussed in section 0 below.

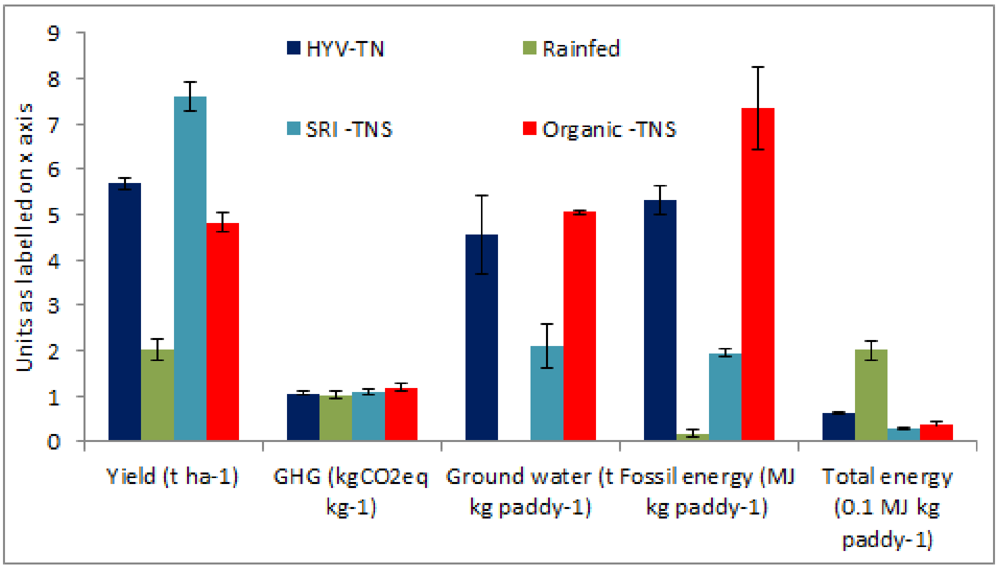


Figure 4. The key environmental criteria, all displayed per kg of paddy,with the exception of yield. Note that total energy is displayed as 0.1MJ kg paddy^{-1},

Figure 5 shows the breakdown of GHG emissions according to each activity involved in producing paddy. Any embodied emissions are included within the relevant criteria, for example the embodied emissions for tractors are included in cultivation.

Three key points are apparent; firstly ***rainfed paddyshows a different set of emissions*** compared to other farming systems, secondly,the other farming systems emissions are ***dominated by soil derived GHGs (CH_4 and N_2O) and irrigation*** and thirdly,***soil organic carbon (SOC) is consistently negative*** – acting as a sink of carbon.

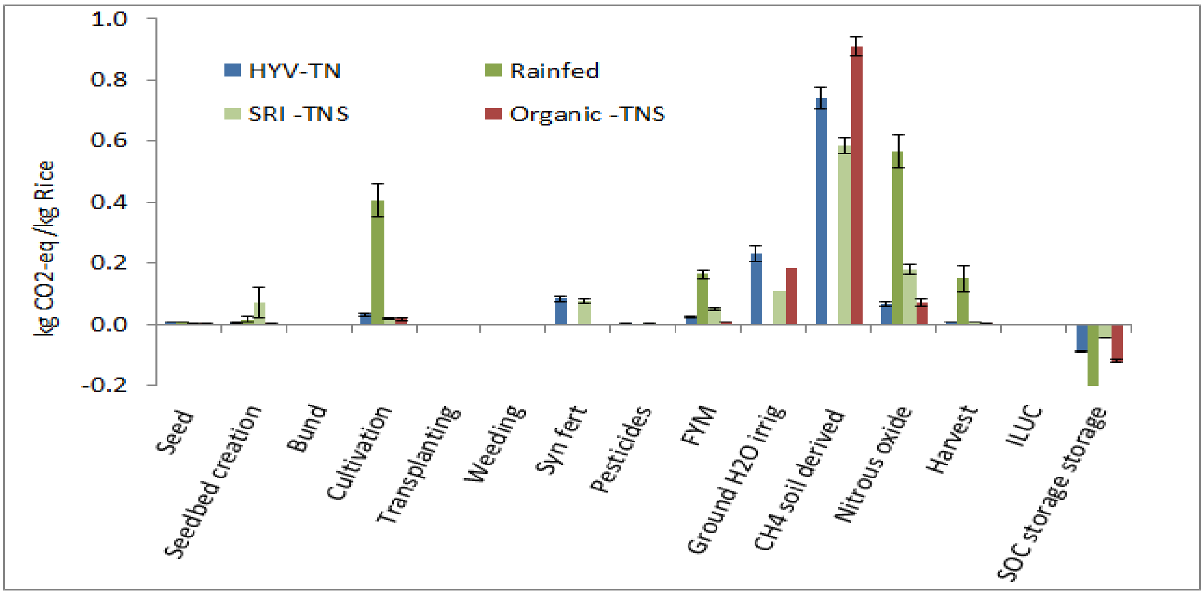


Figure 5.The main sources of GHG from the different stages of rice production between different farmers. Error bars = 1S.E.

3.1.3. Soil derived methane emissions and soil organic carbon

3.1.3.1. Methane

Methane is produced from the respiration of organic matter in anaerobic conditions. Given the existence of abiotic conditions in a paddy soil, the supply of methanogen substrate - soil organic matter – is the commonest limiting factor for methano genesis(Wang et al., 2000; Yao et al., 1999). Rain-fed soils produce no methane due to the absence of anaerobic conditions – in fact they possibly account for a minor net sequestration of CH_4 rather than production. In contrast soil methane production is the largest single category of GHG emissions for HYV, SRI TNS and Organic TNS. Organic TNS showing the greatest emissions at 1.03kg CO_2-eq kg paddy^{-1}, compared to 0.72kg and 0.64kg CO_2-eq kg paddy^{-1} for HYV and SRI TNS respectively.

Both Organic TNS and HYV grew in fully flooded, and thus anaerobic, soils (with the exception of one organic farm practising mid-season drainage), yet organic TNS paddy had significantly higherCH_4emissions than HYV paddy ($p<0.001$). Two reasons account for this: a higher input of methanogenic substrate (a mean of 14t FYM ha^{-1} compared to 7t FYM ha^{-1} for organic TNS and HYV respectively), and lower yields - so that every gram of CH_4released has fewer kgs of paddy to be split between, see Figure 4. While the CH_4 emissions are significantly different, neither of the two determining factors (FYM input quantity and yield) are significantly different between the two production systems in isolation.

Methane emissions from SRI are approximately the same as HYV emissions ($p>0.05$), Table 12. This is surprising, as SRI production techniques substantially reduces CH_4 emissions due to frequent drainage, and the SRI yield is substantially higher. YetSRI also promotes the use of organic-based fertilisers such as FYM, providing increased substrate for methanogenic bacteria. SRI farms used 18.7t FYM ha^{-1} (see **Error! Reference source not found.**); 2.5 and 1.3 times more than HYV and organic paddy respectively. So even though background CH_4 emissions were lower, the massively increased organic amendments resulted in equal soil CH_4 emissions as for HYV. In addition vermin compost was commonly used, although this has a far smaller stimulating factor for methane emissions (Yan et al., 2005).

	HYV-TN	Rainfed	SRI -TNS	Organic - TNS
Reported GHG emissions	0.58[a]	0.00[b]	0.49 [a]	0.88[C]
Methane emissions plus production emissions if FYM is replaced with synthetic fertilisers.	-0.09[d]	0.50[e]	-0.10[d]	-0.20[f]

Table 12.Mean methane emissions as modelled in the LCA, and then how these would change if FYM was replaced with synthetic fertilisers. Means with different letters are significantly different ($p<0.001$)

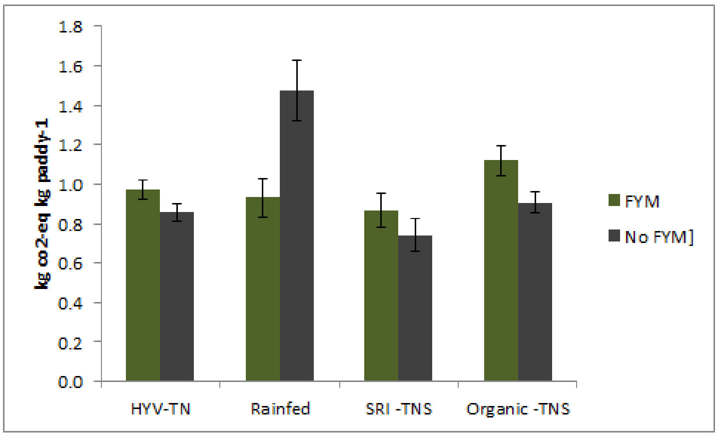


Figure 6. The importance of organic amendments in total GHG emissions. The left hand bars show the GHG emission kg paddy^{-1} as we measured them. The right hand bars show simulated emissions, where everything is constant except the organic matter which is replaced with synthetic fertilisers. The high embodied GHG emissions of synthetic fertilisershave resulted in increased GHG emissions for rain-fed agriculture where, due to aerobic soils, there are no savings from reduced methane emissions.

The importance of the role of organic amendments is demonstrated by modelling the impact of replacing all FYM based nutrients with synthetic fertiliser. Taking the nutrient content of the manure, and assuming those nutrients are produced synthetically and transported to the farm increases the indirect (offsite) GHG emissions, yet results in less organic matter entering the system[25]. The net effect of this switch significantly reduces GHG emissions for all systems ($p<0.001$) with the exception of rain-fed paddy where emissions were significantly increased ($p<0.001$), see Table 12. When these changes are included within the whole farm emissions, the impact is still noticeable, seeFigure 6, and shows a significant GHG reduction for organicpaddy and a significant GHG increase for rain-fed paddy, (both $p<0.05$). This is not to suggest that all organic manures are switched to synthetic manures, especially as such fertilisers would not be allowed in organic systems, but it clearly demonstrates *the negative impact from the GHG perspective of providing additional methanogenic substrate*.

Methane mitigating potential.

CH_4 emissions can be reduced to zero through shifting to rain-fed rice production, but this produces trade-offs with other GHG emissions (N_2O and ILUC for example) (as well as yield/ha). While higher input non irrigated rice production is also an option, it could not be investigated in this research. For high yielding irrigated production technology there are three key lessons from this research with respect to reducing CH_4 emissions: firstly ***reducing organic inputs immediately before paddy production***(even considering the useof more synthetic inputs, although this has trade-offs as far as energy is concerned, see section 0), secondly ***shift to SRI,*** where for each level of input, less CH_4 is likely to be produced and thirdly, increase yields where possible, so that any emissions are spread

[25] Two factors have not been included in this calculation, the GHG emissions associated with enteric fermentation, and the reduction in SOC associated with reduced organic amendments. Both of these are likely to be minimal, and will at least partially cancel each other out.

across greater paddy/ ha. If FYM is used, then ***adding it before a dry period*** rather than immediately before rice production will reduce emissions, as a portion of the organic matter will have decomposed aerobically without CH_4 production.

3.1.3.2. Soil organic carbon (SOC)

As well as determining soil CH_4 emissions, soil water conditions and organic amendments are also two key assumptions for SOC storage. However, these are only crudely accounted for using IPCC default figures in our model, with the result that the fully flooded organic and HYV rice both have a high SOC storage allocated to them per hectare (525kg CO_2-eq), while rain-fed and SRI rice have lower (379 and 330 kg CO_2-eq ha^{-1} yr^{-1} respectively). The difference between these figuresis less than the differences in reported yields, so the results more closely reflect the inverse of the yields. Thus the highest SOC storage is associated with rain-fed (-0.24kg CO_2-eq kg $paddy^{-1}$), the lowest from SRI.

One problem with these figures is that they suggest that an increase in organic amendments will result in a net increase in soil organic carbon. This is a poor counterfactual, as it suggests that if those amendments were not used on the farm, they would otherwise not be used in agriculture. While this may be the case – i.e. they might otherwise be burnt for fuel – we found relatively little use of manure for fuel, so increased demand from SRI or organic rice production technologies may simply result in less FYM for conventional systems – we are robbing Peter to pay Paul. The biggest difference is ***whether it is used in aerobic or anaerobic situations***. In aerobic situations there will be less SOC gain, but also less methane emitted: another trade-off.

3.1.3.3. Nitrous oxide

While flooded conditions increase CH_4 emissions and SOC storage, they reduce N_2O emissions. Globally, nitrous oxide is the dominant GHG from arable crops, especially for intensively managed crops where abundant nitrogen is applied. For example it is responsible for approximately 80% of GHG emissions for UK wheat (Woods et al., 2008). Yet in fully anaerobic soils N_2O emissions areminimal asthe N_2O is rapidly oxidised by soil biota(discussed in Gathorne-Hardy (2013a).

This is partially reflected in Figure 5, where N_2O emissions from aerobic rain-fed rice are 6 and 8 times greater than anaerobic organic TNS and HYV rice respectively. Some of this difference is due to the lower yields of rain-fed rice, ***yet N_2O emissions are also 2.5 times greater in rain-fed than either organic or HYVriceon an area basis***. In contrast the difference between rain-fed and SRI TNS is entirely due to lower yields – SRI N_2Oemissions are 1.4 times *greater* than rain-fed on an area basis, but with a yield 3.8 times higher the allocation per kg of paddy is significantly more for rain-fed rice than for SRI.

Yet these direct emissions only account for a portion of total N_2O emissions associated with N fertiliser use. A minor fraction of applied Nis used up on site, as shown by the low nitrogen use efficiencies, see **Error! Reference source not found.**. The remaining N is typically lost through volatilisation of ammonia, surface runoff or leaching (Xu et al., 2012). A portion of this still active N will be converted to N_2O off-site, and these emissions are still attributable to the original fertiliser application. This is an important process, whichfor fully irrigated systems can more than equal the on-site emissions. Interestingly the Government of India emission factors, taken from Pathak(Pathak et al., 2002), appear to ignore off-site emissions (Gathorne-Hardy, 2013a). In contrast, Crutzen et al (2007)suggest that IPCC figures for indirect N_2O emissions are far too low. Crutzen et al. used a budgeting approach starting with the total atmospheric load of N_2O, and suggested that in order for the maths to be consistent, indirect emissions from fertiliser must be 3 - 5 times higher than the emission factor commonly used. Previous analysis by others had suggested lower figures (x2 (Nevison et al., 2007) or x2.5 (Galloway et al., 2004)) but still substantially above the 1% recommended by the IPCC.

The key driver of N_2O emissions is the amount of nitrogen applied, and interestingly the proportion of N estimated to be taken up by the crop is relatively high compared to other NUE estimates for rice, for example (Haefele et al., 2008). Although nitrogen use efficiencies tend to be low in rice (Xu et al., 2012), the extremely low rates shown in **Error! Reference source not found.** suggest that ***there may be some room for cutting N without reducing yield,*** and corresponding GHG emissions.Interestingly there is a significant correlation between total N and yield for both HYV and rain-fed rice ($p<0.05$), but not for organic TNS or SRI TNS, suggesting that for them, nitrogen was not the yield-limiting factor.

Organic TNS rice showed the greatest NUE at 65%. This is very high, even for aerobic systems, and so should be treated with caution. One potential reason why such a high NUE is reported could be that lack of inclusion of some fixed nitrogen associated with added azospirillum that is not accounted for within this model due to lack of data. Any nitrogen fixed by azospirillumhas the advantage of no embodied GHG or energy associated with it, but is likely to stimulateN_2O emissions at a similar rate to other sources of N.

Ground water irrigation

Irrigation by definition requires water, which in south and eastern India commonly means pumping ground water, normally using electric pumps. Lifting a tonne of water without resistance requires 9800J. Multiplying this by low generating efficiency, and factoring-in transmission lossesgenerate significant irrigation-driven GHG emissions. GHG emissions from water are directly associated with the quantity of irrigation used, so the absolute amount of irrigation based emissions is directly proportional to the amount of ground water required.

Irrigation accounts for 21%, 10% and 17% for HYV, SRI TNS and organic TNS GHG emissions respectively. This is substantially lower than the proportion of GHG allocated to irrigation found in other studies. Nelson (2009)for example estimated that irrigation was responsible for 39-54% of paddy production emissions. This is partly because Nelson (2009) assumed a CO_2 emission factor of 1.4kg CO_2-eq kwh^{-1}, substantially higher than that used here, and also because in this study all irrigation based emissions were normalised to the HYV case study site in NE Tamil Nadu, which had an average water table depth of 7.1m. In contrast, the SRI site in AP had a water table of 27.0m, and the organic site of 12.0m.

If the same rice production techniques were used in different areas, ***the relative importance of irrigation would change considerably***. Using the original SRI AP data with a 27m deep water table, irrigation emissions are 0.35 kg CO_2 per kg of paddy, 60% *more* than that for HYV TN, even though it uses 50% *less* water, increasing the irrigation share of SRI emissions from 10 to 33% of total emissions. Similarly adjusting the TN HYV figures to AP would have resulted in an increase of irrigation based emissions of 220%, making irrigation responsible for 48% of total paddy production emissions, see Figure 7.

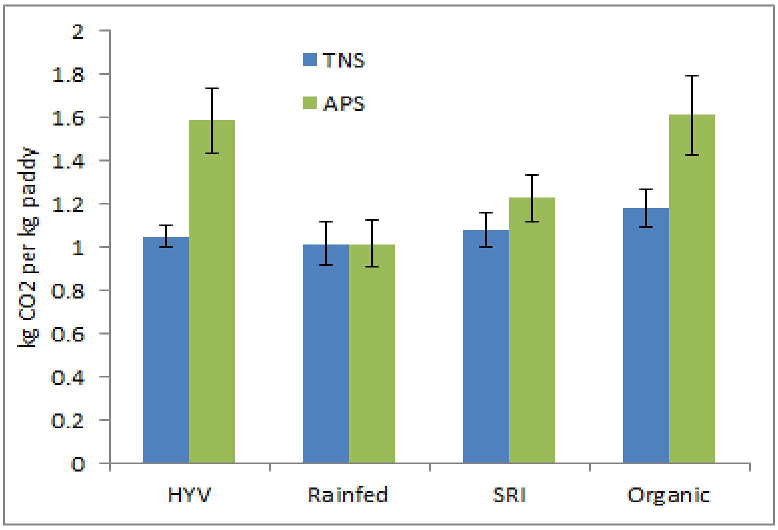


Figure 7.The overall GHG emissions if each farming situation took place in Tamil Nadu (TNS, Tamil Nadu simulated) or Andhra Pradesh (APS, Andhra Pradesh Simulated). HYV and organic rice are significantly different depending on location ($p<0.001$ for both), there is no significant difference for rain-fed for SRI. Between farming practises there are significant differences, Organic rice is significantly different to rain-fed rice and SRI ($p<0.01$ and 0.05 respectively), HYV is significantly different to rain-fed rice ($p<0.01$) but not to SRI. There remains no significant difference between SRI and rain-fed rice in AP

HYV had the highest irrigation based emissions, at 0.22kg CO_2-eq kg $paddy^{-1}$, over double that from SRI TNS, and 25% more than organic TNS (0.103 and 0.18kg CO_2-eq kg^{-1} respectively). No groundwater was used in rain-fed paddy production. Using ground water use figures as proxy for irrigation based GHG emissions[26]***SRI TNS emits significantly less GHG due to irrigation***contrasted with organic TNS or HYV rice ($p<0.01$). But there is ***no significant difference in emissions between HYV and organic rice.***

Indian electricity is extremely GHG intensive, due to three factors – the heavy use of coal, the inefficiency of production, and the inefficiency of the grid. India-wide, coal - the most carbon intensive fossil fuel per unit energy - accounted for 71% of electricity generated in 2010, with nearly all generating plantsconsisting of the less efficient subcritical technology (with average generation efficiencies of just 34%, compared to 36% and 39% for subcritical plants in China and the USA respectively) (IEA, 2012). This situation of high coal dependence and low efficiency is exacerbated by large transmission and distribution losses, estimated at 27% in 2007-08 (Alagh, 2010). These losses are before 'commercial losses' are factored in. The latter are the revenue losses from theft/non-payment/non-billing or misclassification (i.e. as agricultural rather than for domestic use). The inclusion of these losses generates aggregated ***transmission and commercial losses of 31% nation-wide***, reaching over 60% in certain states (Jammu & Kashmir) (IEA, 2012). We have not included theft in our assessment, as while this represents a commercial burden, the electricity is presumably used, presumably in the informal economy, which should bear its share of the initial GHG burden of electricity production.

The combination of these three points results in a GHG burden of 1.1kg CO_2-eq kwh^{-1}, which is about double the UK electricity GHG burden of 0.5 (Defra, 2012).

Mitigation options.

A shift to rain-fed production clearly avoids the problem of ground water emissions entirely, but has wider trade-offs associated with yield, ILUC and N_2O, as discussed below.

Assuming irrigation will continue then there are four potential methods to mitigate emissions: ***use less water, raise the water table*** so less energy is needed per unit water, ***increase yields*** so that any burden is shared amongst more paddy, and ***decarbonise the electricity supply***. Shifting to SRI production techniques generates significant savings via the first and third of these – it requires less water (although not significantly so on an area basis – 16,049t water/ha for SRI, and 27,595 tonnes of water ha^{-1} for HYV, but $p>0.05$). SRI generates substantial increases in yield, and thus a significant reduction in water use kg^{-1} ($p<0.001$). Increasing the water table is possible using ground water recharge techniques, but these are best done at a larger scale than individual farms. It was not a popular idea when talking to farmers, whose preferred solutions were to build deeper tube wells (with larger loans) rather than invest in catchment scale artificial recharge.

[26] It is not possible directly to generate statistics for ground water GHG emissions as these were calculated as a proportion of the HYV TN emissions based on the average quantity of water used for each production technique compared to the average quantity of water used by HYV TN

The final point, decarbonising the electricity supply, is in state/industry control. Reducing the massive T and D losses would clearly bring substantial benefits not just to GHG savings, but to wider society. It can occur with present technology. The generation of more efficient coal power plants, which is occurring under the Clean Development Mechanism (CDM), is an example of an interestingly politicised counterfactual. If present generating efficiencies are compared to those of new plants, the latter can produce substantially cleaner electricity. But ifefficient coal-powered electricity is compared with renewable electricity, new coal plants are highly inefficient in GHG terms. By providing more profitable coal plants, it could be argued that the CDM is encouraging long term dependence on coal. But this is too complicated a political issue to be within the scope of our project.

Bullocks

PAS 2050 specifically states not to include emissions associated with animal transport (PAS 2050:2011, 2011).Figure 4 and Figure 5 include ***bullocks*** derived GHG emissions, and ***these dominate total emissions for rain-fed rice***. For example on comparing Figure 5 and Figure 8, rain-fedrice cultivation and harvest emissions almost disappear, and the entire total GHG emissions per kg of paddy are reduced by 51% (when ILUC is not included). ***Thus the impact of including, or not including, bullock-based emissions is crucial***. We have included them because they are an inherent part of the production process. Not including them would falsely represent the emissions from all rice production practices.In contrast to rain-fed rice production, excluding livestock based emissions makes little difference to the other production technologiesdue to the predominance of tractors and harvesters. Without livestock, the total GHGs would be reduced by only 0.7, 5.6 and 0.3% for HYV, SRI TNS and organic TNS respectively.

Measured by the task, i.e. the emissions used to plough a field, ***tractors produce 45% of the GHG emissionsthat bullocks do per hectare*** ($p<0.001$) (32 and 68 kg CO_2-eq ha^{-1} for tractors and bullocksrespectively)[27]. Comparing the same task from the energy perspective rather than that of GHGs,bullocks come out best, tractors using 219% more energy than bullocks ($p<0.05$) (467 and 213 MJ ha^{-1} for tractors and bullocks respectively). Clearly when only measuring fossil energy, the difference is considerably greater!

This trade-off shows how GHG intensive every unit of bullock energy is. This is likely to be because the bullock energy factor includes the energy used during the actual hours of work, while the GHG factor includes 24hr emissions, suggesting that the bullock energy is underestimated. It is also not clear whether the quality of the bullock ploughing is consistent with that of tractors. Rain-fed rice farmers ploughed each field with bullocksan average of 5.3 times, more than in any other production technology ($p<0.05$). Yet while such a practice might reflect the quality of ploughing, it could also

[27] See Table 5 in Methods for details of how the GHG emissions are calculated.

result from the different roles of ploughing in wet vs dry-land cultivation – a question for further research.

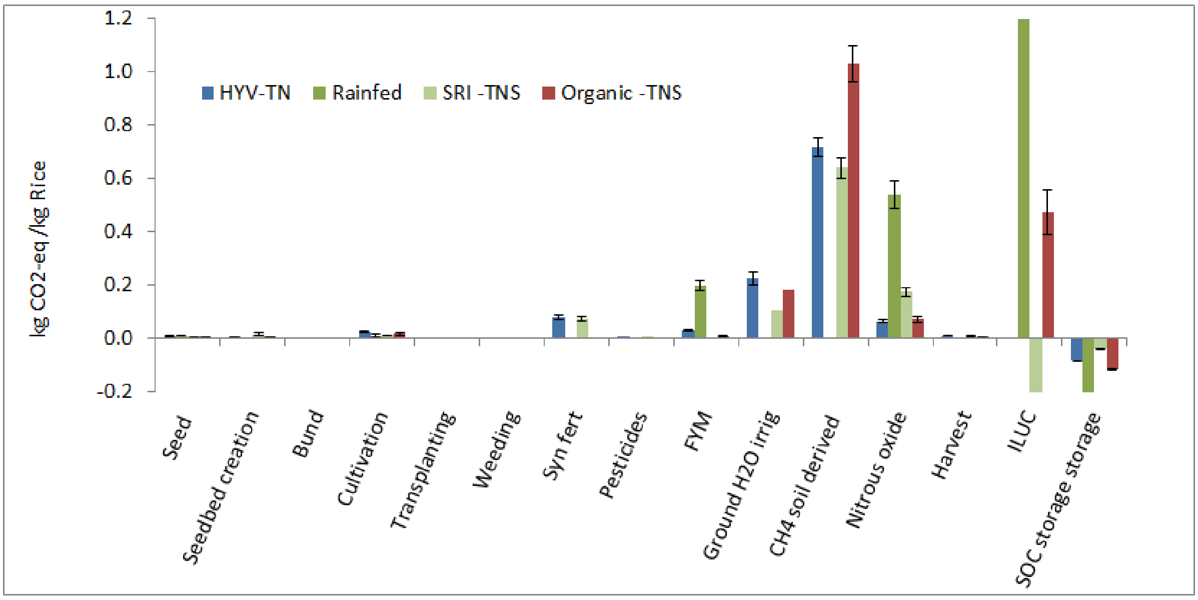


Figure 8.The impact of including ILUC and excluding enteric methane for livestock traction operations. Compare this to Figure 5. The ILUC for rain-fed rice is off the scale, reaching 19.7kg CO_2 kg paddy^{-1}

Indirect Land Use Change (ILUC)

When including bullock emissions, all production systems show similar GHG emissions per kilogram of paddy, yet rain-fed rice benefits from substantially lower water and fossil energy use. Does this suggest that rain-fed rice production systems offer a potential for savings from the environmental perspective? The problem with this assessment is that it ignores yield. As can be seen from Figure 4, rain-fed rice yields are substantially lower than HYV and organic TNS, and are approximately a quarter of those from SRI TNS.(All yields are highly statistically significantly different to all other yields.)

Suppose a hypothetical policy weresuccessfully put in place converting all irrigated paddy to rain-fed paddy, a collapse in output would occur triggering a dramatic increase in both the national and global price of rice. As well as reducing rice demand, this would encouragefarmers in other areas to produce more rice.Some areas would produce more rice through intensification and others by growing rice where other crops previously grew. In the latter case, the reduction in production of those crops would need to be compensated by additional production somewhere else. In theorythe increase in demand set in place by the reduction in Indian supply will encourage a farmer at the global agricultural margin to convert non-agricultural land to agriculture. While some of this land will be marginal land in India that was not previously profitable, by far the greatest agriculturally driven land use change is in the tropical rainforests of SE Asia, Africa and South America (Foley et al., 2011).

Thus the hypothetical Indian policy of stopping paddy irrigation drives *Indirect Land Use Change* that can range from intensification of existing land (for example land use change from an extensive to an intensive system) or conversion of non-agricultural land.

Chopping down rainforest is a very efficient way of increasing atmospheric carbon dioxide concentrations, as well as damaging numerous 'ecosystem services'. If the policy were driven by a desire to reduce global warming, it might well be counterproductive.

If a policy were put in place that dramatically increased output then the reverse would occur – national and global prices would fall, farmers would be dis-incentivised to produce rice, and might switch to other crops instead, or farm more extensively. This would give an *Indirect Land Use Change Credit* – this policy would result in reduced emissions from land use change. In either case the net GHG emissions would involve summing the difference between local savings /emissions and ILUC savings/emissions.

Most research on this area has concerned biofuels where the massive new demand for food-crops (or for land that previouslygrew food-crops) reduces the available output for pre-existing markets(Fritsche et al., 2009; Gallagher, 2008; Plevin et al., 2010; Searchinger et al., 2008) but the principle applies in exactly the same manner when there is a change in supply or demand.

The implication is that local policies can have global impacts if they encourage a dramatic change in output.

Yet ILUC is different to the other GHG sources or sinks, as it can only occur once for each change in land use. If a technology arrives that increases yields by 50%, then this will provide substantial ILUC credits as the increased supply reduces prices on global commodity markets, discouraging farmers at the agricultural margin from investing in agricultural expansion and potentially saving x hectares of rainforest. But each saved hectare can only be 'saved' once, so unlike other technological fixes such as reduced irrigation, ILUC credits will not accrue crop on crop, season after season. For this reason the ILUC factor has been reduced to 5%, to account for 20 years (or 20 cropping cycles).

The actual CO_2 saved/lost is explained in Table 10.

The proportion of ILUC credits/costs is directly proportional to the change in output. Thus SRI TNS shows substantial ILUC credits, reducing total GHG emissions per kg of paddy by 33%. The Organic TNS ILUC penalty is approximately the same but with the opposite sign, increasing emissions by 28%. Thus the inclusion of ILUC makes a substantial change to the overall emissions savings associated with rice production.

It is important to note this already substantial impact is a conservative estimate. The ILUC factor – the quantity of GHG lost or saved through ILUC, was reduced by half to account for uncertainty, so this impact could be considerably greater (seeTable 10).

Rain-fed rice is an interesting case for ILUC. The ILUC bar in Figure 8 goes off the scale, reaching 20kg CO_2-eq kg paddy, increasing the original GHG burden from paddy by almost 20 times, and totally dwarfing all other types of rice production with respect to emissions. If we believed this figure it would suggest that rain-fed rice is a terrible method of paddy production from the climate change perspective, yet this figure suggests an inaccurate counterfactual. In the site where rain-fed data was collected, irrigation facilities did not exist. Thus comparing rain-fed to HYV rice is inappropriate. What the high ILUC from rain-fed rice indicates is that from the GHG emissions perspective, we should not promote low yielding rain-fed paddy production where higher yielding alternatives are available.

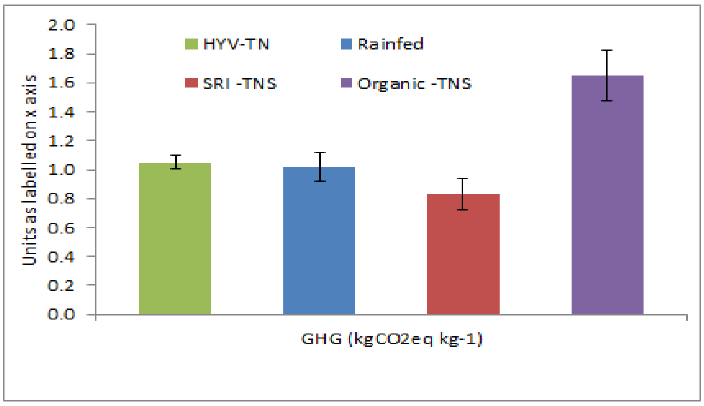


Figure 9.GHG emissions including ILUC with the exception of rainfed. In contrast to Figure 4, SRI is significantly less than HYV, and Organic TNS is significantly higher than all other production methods ($p<0.001$)

If we include ILUC, the GHG burden for each form of paddy production as shown in Figure 4 changes dramatically, see Figure 8. SRI TNS becomes a lower-emitting production system compared with HYV and organic TNS rice ($p<0.01$) while rain-fed rice is substantially higher-emitting ($p<0.01$). Yet while understanding the impact that ILUC can have on the GHG emissions of different rice production systems it is probably unwise to include ILUC in headline calculations for three reasons: first, it is not generally recognised, second, it is not used in other models, making comparisons difficult, and third, there is uncertainty over the precise figures that should be used[28].

[28]This is increased as we are forcing an essentially consequential style LCA methodology into an attribution model.

Energy

All farming systems show a positive Energy Return on Investment (EROI)[29] for fossil energy, see **Error! Reference source not found.**. Rain-fed rice is at one extreme, with 256 units of energy created from every unit of fossil energy deployed. The benefits from other farming systems are far less extreme, at 2.9, 11.0 and 3.4 for HYV, SRI TNS and organic TNS rice respectively.

How energy is measured however makes a big difference to the apparent energy efficiency of different forms of crop production. Fossil energy use is substantially greater for HYV rice compared with all other farming systems: 5.31MJ of fossil energy kg $paddy^{-1}$, compared to 0.16, 2.00 and 3.41 MJ kg $paddy^{-1}$ for rain-fed, SRI TNS and organic TNS rice respectively. The high dependence on fossil fuel of HYV rice is due to its use of both synthetic fertilisers and irrigation -forms of indirect energy which represented 35 and 55% of total fossil energy use respectively. In contrast, no synthetic fertilisers were used for rain-fed or organic rice, and minimal amounts for SRI TNS; no irrigation energy was needed for rain-fed rice, and minimal for SRI TNS. Field preparation by tractor- or power tiller, although the most apparent form of fossil energy use, was of minimal importance, representing less than 10% for HYV, SRI TNS and organic rice.[30]

The use of bullocks represents an interesting trade-off between different forms of energy, and GHG emissions, as well as the wider sustainability indicators discussed below. Bullocks produce more GHG emissions for specific operations (i.e. ploughing) than tractors. Yet they require less than half the energy (213 compared to 525 MJ ha^{-1}, $p<0.05$). They also require no fossil energy.

[29]The ratio of the energy available in the final product to the energy that went into making that product.
[30] It represents a large fraction of rain-fed rice, but this is due to the very low total, rather than reflecting the importance of field preparation. Only 2 farmers used tractors for cultivation, and both used them only once while ploughing multiple times with bullocks, yet the low alternative fossil energy use allows these two farms to distort the apparent importance of fossil based field preparation in rain-fed systems.

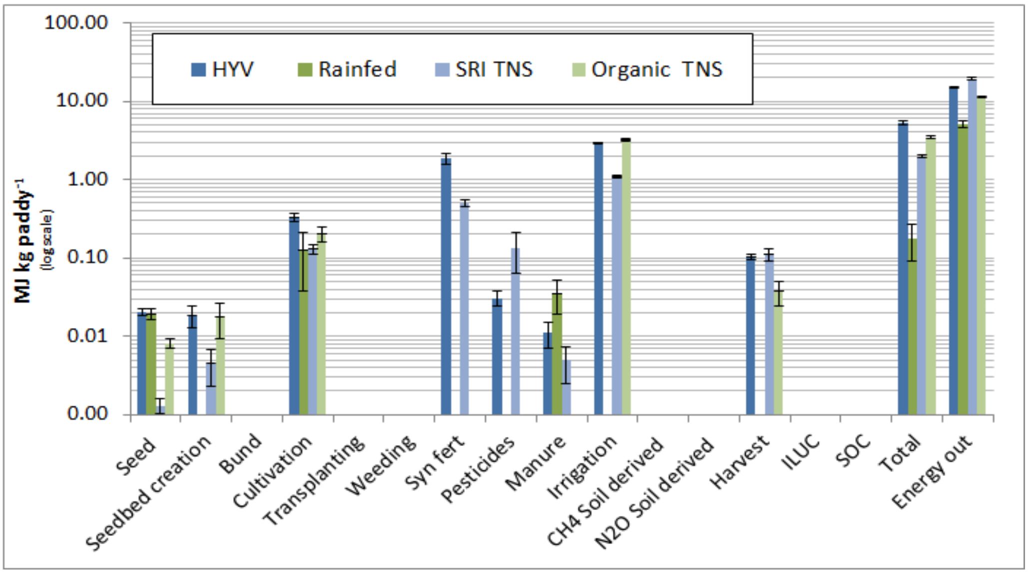


Figure 10. Fossil energy use for each stage of paddy production. Note the log scale, so energy use is dominated by synthetic fertilisers and irrigation.

Theextreme EROI of rain-fed paddy production dramatically changes when all energy inputs are included. With human and bullock energy factored in, rain-fed rice shows a negative EROI of 0.31. For every unit of energy put in, only 0.3 units are delivered.[31] The difference is much less extreme for the other production technologies, and remains positive, at 2.5, 4.4 and 1.9 for HYV, SRI TNS and organic TNS rice respectively, seeFigure 11.

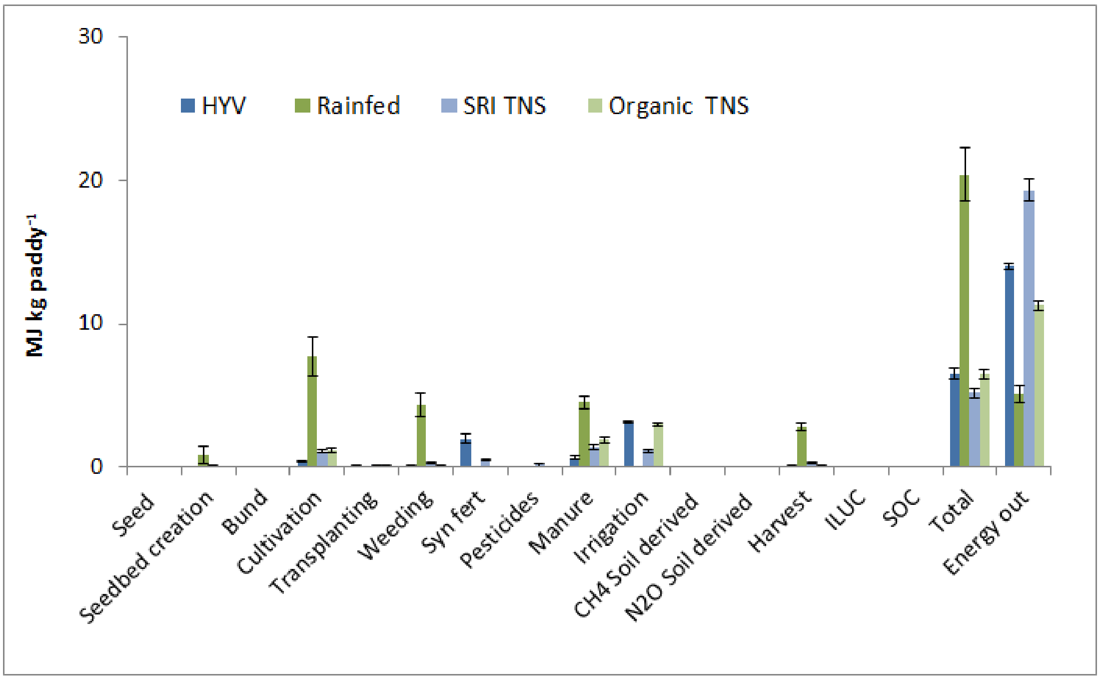


Figure 11. EROI for different rice production methods, including both fossil and human/animal energy. Error bars = 1S.E.

[31]This is using economic not energy allocation methods, energy allocation has not been calculated here.

Is it likely that rain-fed agriculturehas a negative EROI? The bulk (87%) of non-fossil fuel energy is human energy, dominated by weeding. Is the negative result due to using an inaccurately hourly energy expenditure figure for human effort? Pracha and Volk, for example, use $0.7Whr^{-1}$ compared to 1.96used in this study, taken from Nassiri and Singh (2009).Yet exchanging this input assumption,and re-calculating, continues to generate a negative EROI. This leaves three possible answers to this conundrum. First, it may be true – it is possible that farmers are willing to invest considerable energy into a product. Humans do not simply produce food as a source of energy, or simply eat to live, but also desire specific products and imbue their production with social or cultural significance. Local producers might preferlocal varieties over the other main source of rice (energy) which in Orissa is from the Public Distribution System. Negative EROI for food products are not unusual, for example meat in the USA can have an EROI of as low as 0.05(D. Pimentel and Pimentel, 1983). Yet negative EROI for unprocessed cereal grains are rare. Second, measurement error might be at work - an exaggeration in the number of hours worked or underestimate of yield (when crops are not sold, precise yield measurements may not be needed or known). And finally, some field records may have been from plots that produced multiple, inter cropped crops; which would also produce an under-estimate of yield.

The negative result is strange, as this ratio was expected to change in the opposite direction, with a falling energy ratio asagriculture intensifies, as found by Pimental in the US system. There, maize in 1910 was compared with maize in 1983, and the EROI fell from 5.8 to 2.5 (Pimentel and Dazhong, 1990).

Interestingly,non fossil energy input (including human energy) was a good predictor of yield in rain-fed rice cultivation, ($p>0.001$, $r2=0.59$) while fossil energy was not. The use of energy to predict yield did not produce significant results in any other farming types.

There is scope to look at the use of energy from a wider social perspective. The use of more energy has been repeatedly tied to economic progress and to cultural development (Bayliss-Smith 1982). Yet it seems that this, like economic wealth, is true only up to a threshold, beyond which no noticeable gain accrues. For example, while increased energy in rural India is hypothesised to increase the gains to education (through the use of lighting, computer access etc), there is a saturation point after which environmental burdens continue to increase, but personal welfare gains disappear or even reverse as increasing use of energy allows for increasingly sedentary lifestyles with a rising incidence of obesity and dietary diabetes(Smil, 2006).

Ground water

Ground water abstraction rates varied considerably between the four productions technologies. Clearly rain-fed rice is the most efficient, producing 35% of HYV yields, with zero ground water. While rain-fed rice production methods are the only possible kind of agriculture in many areas, there are major environmental problems associated with low yield, as discussed under ILUC above. Thus the extreme of zero irrigation is unlikely to be universally appropriate.

The other three production systems all relied upon ground water pumping, but to different degrees. SRI used significantly less ground water than HYV or organic rice ($p<0.001$) per kg of paddy (1.66 tonnes of water per kg of paddy compared to 2.86 and 3.6t H_2O per kg paddy for organic and HYV respectively) but not significantly less on an area basis - at 12,600tonnes/ha compared to 20,500 for HYV rice.Although there was a large difference in the mean water use between organic and HYV rice production methods, see Figure 4, the difference was not statistically significant.

Conclusions

*GHG emissions are generated from all forms of rice production.*For exampleN_2O is an inevitable by-product of arable agriculture. Flooded conditions will produce CH_4. The research reported here has aimed to identify where the main emissions occur, how these vary between production systems, and where emissions might be reduced in the future.

Irrigation is a key point for all productionsystems, and appropriate *water management* may offer a series of environmental wins without any major environmental apparent losses. Reducing demand for water reduces the associated embodied GHG and energy demands as well as potentially reducing ground-water-based GHG emissions.

If area based water demand could be reduced this would not only minimise the wider environmental damage associated with ground water extraction, but, through raising the water table, would also reduce the embodied GHG and energy needed to extract every unit of groundwater. Yet ground water tables are hard to manage at the farm scale. Instead *panchayat- or even water-shed/river-basin-level action* - would deliver greater gains, because on many of the small farms, active recharge is a difficult and un-popular activity, due to lack of physical space.

Using an area metric, *switching to SRI production appears to substantially increasepaddy yields and, with less flooding, it could also reduce CH_4 emissions if excessive FYM is not applied*. The increase in N_2O is likely to be less than potential savings from reduced CH_4, so with appropriate management conditions, our results suggest that SRI promotion is a sensible policy from the GHG perspective. Yet importantly, while converting to SRI would reduce water requirements per kg of paddy,our data showed no significant reduction in the total water extracted per hectare (although there was a mean 40% reduction in area based use, high variability left this statistically insignificant) so*the conversion of HYV to SRI may maintainpressure on the local ground water supplies.*

Any savings associated with reduced pumping could be significantly enhanced at the state/national level effort if the efficiency of both electricity generation and distribution could be improved. *T and D efficiencies* would produce substantial savings in GHG emissions, as well as reducing pressure on limited electricity supplies(Glaeser, 2013).

Yet all of these suggestions are vulnerable to rebound effects (Sorrell, 2007) from both agriculture and other electricity users;if more electricity is available, it may encourage investment in deeper wells (or more air conditioning units), perhaps encouraging some farmers to switch back from SRI, or to be lazy and keep pumps working continuously, thereby risking damaging their own soil structure as well as wasting both water and energy.

Emissions from *organic rice* approximatedthose from HYV in most instances, and there is no reason why more organic farmers would have a more difficult conversion to SRI than HYV farmers. Organic production showed the highest nitrogen use efficiency compared to all system. There is a chance that in order to maintain yields, additional FYM inputs would be needed, with the inevitable CH_4 emissions. We have not managed to include the role of azospirillum within our model due to lack of data, so it is possible that this is providing additional nitrogen that is not accounted for in the NUE calculation.

Manyfactors have trade-offsnot considered here. For example the switch from bullocks to tractors may save GHG emissions, but the wider socio-ecological-economic relations of livestock may make the switch unfeasible.

Primary research measuring GHG emissions from SRI compared to other production systems is needed to narrow down the range of uncertainty surrounding the GHG emissions from SRI.

Overall, SRI systems have potential to increase yields and reduce the use of water per kg of paddy, as well as to reduce water and associated energy demand per unit area. *From the environmental criteria we have included, there are no downsides to SRI systems, as long as excessive manure is not used*.

The development of SRI in organic systems would see further gains, with significantly reduced energy demand and potentially wider environmental gains associated with reduced pesticides and synthetic fertiliser use.

Yet the spread of SRI is unlikely to be determined by environmental gains, instead it is a socio-economic and political question, that is discussed in a sister paper (Reddy and Venkatanarayana, 2013).

References

Alagh, Y., (2010) Transmission and Distribution of Electricity in India Regulation, Investment and Efficiency. OECD, Indian Institute of Rural Management, Anand (Gijarat).

Anonymous, (2011a) Harvested area of rough rice, by country and geographical region -FAO. IRRI, http://solutions.irri.org/index.php?option=com_content&task=view&id=250&Itemid=186.

Anonymous, (2011b) Rice calorie supply as percentage of total calorie supply by country and geographical region, 1961–2005. IRRI, http://solutions.irri.org/index.php?option=com_content&task=view&id=250&Itemid=186.

Belluscio, A., (2009) Planting trees can shift water flow, in: Nature (Ed.), Nature. Nature, http://www.nature.com/news/2009/091107/full/news.2009.1057.html.

Blengini, G.A., Busto, M. (2009) The life cycle of rice: LCA of alternative agri-food chain management systems in Vercelli (Italy). Journal of Environmental Management 90, 1512-1522.

Bouman, B.A.M., Lampayan, R.M., Tuong, T.P. (2007) Water management in irrigated rice: coping with water scarcity, Los Baños (Philippines).

Canadell, J.G., Le Quéré, C., Raupach, M.R., Field, C.B., Buitenhuis, E.T., Ciais, P., Conway, T.J., Gillett, N.P., Houghton, R.A., Marland, G. (2007) Contributions to accelerating atmospheric CO2 growth from economic activity, carbon intensity, and efficiency of natural sinks. Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences 104, 18866-18870.

Carriger, S., Vallee, D. (2007) More crop per drop. . Rice Today 6, 10-13.

CEA, (2011) CO2 Baseline Databas for the Indian Power Sector, User Guide, version 6.0. Central Electricity Authority, Ministry of Powrer, Sewa Bhawan, New Delhi, India.

Centre for Science and Environment, (2009) Green Rating Project, Fertilizers,. http://www.cseindia.org/userfiles/79-90%20Fertilizer%281%29.pdf, New Delhi.

Cheng, W., Yagi, K., Sakai, H., Kobayashi, K. (2006) Effects of Elevated Atmospheric CO2 Concentrations on CH4 and N2O Emission from Rice Soil: An Experiment in Controlled-environment Chambers. Biogeochemistry 77, 351-373.

Coumou, D., Rahmstorf, S. (2012) A decade of weather extremes. Nature Clim. Change 2, 491-496.

Crutzen, P.J., Mosier, A.R., Smith, K.A., Winiwarter, W. (2007) N2O release from agro-biofuel production negates global warming reduction by replacing fossil fuels. Atmospheric Chemistry Physical Discussions, 11191-11205.

CSE, (2012) Into the Furnace. Green rating project of Indian Iron and Steel Sector., in: CSE (Ed.). CSE, Delhi, India, p. 256.

D. Pimentel, Pimentel, M. (1983) The future of American agriculture. AVI Publishing Co. Inc,, Westport, Connecticut, USA.

Dawe, D., (2000) The contribution of rice research to poverty alleviation, in: J.E. Sheehy, P.L.M., Hardy, B. (Eds.), Studies in Plant Science. Elsevier, pp. 3-12.

Deepak, K.M., (2013) Rain fed Rice in Odisha: Production and Exchange Relations, Technology, Jobs and A Lower Carbon Future: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy (The case of rice in India), New Delhi, India.
Defra, (2012) 2012 Guidelines to Defra / DECC's GHG Conversion Factors for Company Reporting: Methodology Paper for Emission Factors, PB 13792.

Directive 2009/28/EC., (2009) On the promotion of the use of energy from renewable sources and amending and subsequently repealing Directives 2001/77/EC and 2003/30/EC, in: Union, O.J.o.t.E. (Ed.), http://eur-lex.europa.eu/LexUriServ/LexUriServ.do?uri=Oj:L:2009:140:0016:0062:en:PDF.
Duarte, C.M., Lenton, T.M., Wadhams, P., Wassmann, P. (2012) Abrupt climate change in the Arctic. Nature Clim. Change 2, 60-62.

Elsayed M.A., Matthews R., N.D., M., (2003) Carbon and energy balances for a range of biofuels options. Project No. B/B6/00784/REP URN 03/836. Project carried out as part of the DTI Sustainable Energy Programme, http://www.dti.gov.uk/files/file14925.pdf?pubpdfdload=03%2F836.

Eshel, G., Martin, P.A. (2006) Diet, Energy, and Global Warming. Earth Interactions 10, 1-17.

European Commission, (2010) International Reference Life Cycle Data System (ILCD) Handbook, General guide for Life Cycle Assessment,, in: Joint Research Centre Institute for Environment and Sustainability (Ed.), Publications Office of the European Union,.

FAO, Greening Agriculture in India An Overview of Opportunities & Constraints.
FAOSTAT, (2008) Rough rice production, by country and geographical region-FAO. http://solutions.irri.org/index.php?option=com_content&task=view&id=250&Itemid=186.

Foley, J.A., Ramankutty, N., Brauman, K.A., Cassidy, E.S., Gerber, J.S., Johnston, M., Mueller, N.D., O/'Connell, C., Ray, D.K., West, P.C., Balzer, C., Bennett, E.M., Carpenter, S.R., Hill, J., Monfreda, C., Polasky, S., Rockstrom, J., Sheehan, J., Siebert, S., Tilman, D., Zaks, D.P.M. (2011) Solutions for a cultivated planet. Nature 478, 337-342.

Foresight, (2011) The Future of Food and Farming, Final Project Report, in: The Government Office for Science (Ed.), London.

Forster, P., Ramaswamy, V., Artaxo, P., Berntsen, T., Betts, R., Fahey, D.W., Haywood, J., Lean, J., Lowe, D.C., Myhre, G., Nganga, J., Prinn, R., Raga, G., Schulz, M., Van Dorland, R., (2007) Changes in atmospheric constituents and in radiative forcing, in: Solomon, S., Qin, D., Manning, M., Chen, Z., Marquis, M., Averyt, K.B., Tignor, M., Miller, H.L. (Eds.), Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, United Kingdom and New York, NY, USA pp. 131-234.

Fritsche, U.R., Hennenberg, K.J., Hermann, A., Hünecke, K., SchulzeF., Wiegmann, K., (2009) Sustainable Bioenergy: Current Status and Outlook, in: Federal Ministry for Environment Nature Protection and Nuclear Safety (Ed.). Öko-Institut, Darmstadt.

Fuller, R.J., Aye, L. (2012) Human and animal power – The forgotten renewables. Renewable Energy 48, 326-332.

Gallagher, E., (2008) The Gallagher review of the indirect effects of biofuels production, in: Department for Transport (Ed.). Renewable Fuels Agency.

Galloway, J.N., Dentener, F.J., Capone, D.G., Boyer, E.W., Howarth, R.W., Seitzinger, S.P., Asner, G.P., Cleveland, C.C., Green, P.A., Holland, E.A., Karl, D.M., Michaels, A.F., Porter, J.H., Townsend, A.R., Vörösmarty, C.J. (2004) Nitrogen Cycles: Past, Present, and Future. Biogeochemistry 70, 153-226.

Gathorne-Hardy, A., (2013a) Greenhouse gas emissions from rice, Working paper,, http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/sites/sias/files/documents/GHG%20emissions%20from%20rice%20-%20%20working%20paper.pdf.

Gathorne-Hardy, A. (2013b) The greenhouse gas emissions, energy and water use from four different rice production systems. Working paper, SIAS, .

Glaeser, B. (2013) The Green Revolution Revisited, Critique and Alternatives. Routledge London.

Greavescotton, (2013) Greaves power tiller, http://www.greavescotton.com/Upload/AgroEquipFiles/powertiller.pdf.

Gumaste, S.G., Embodied energy computations in buildings Department of Civil Engg., Walchand College of Engineering, Vishrambag, Sangli,.

Haefele, S.M., Jabbar, S.M.A., Siopongco, J.D.L.C., Tirol-Padre, A., Amarante, S.T., Sta Cruz, P.C., Cosico, W.C. (2008) Nitrogen use efficiency in selected rice (Oryza sativa L.) genotypes under different water regimes and nitrogen levels. Field Crops Research 107, 137-146.

Hoegh-Guldberg, O., Bruno, J.F. (2010) The Impact of Climate Change on the World's Marine Ecosystems. Science 328, 1523-1528.

Hoekstra, A.Y., Mekonnen, M.M. (2012) The water footprint of humanity. Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences 109, 3232-3237.

Hokazono, S., Hayashi, K. (2012) Variability in environmental impacts during conversion from conventional to organic farming: a comparison among three rice production systems in Japan. Journal of Cleaner Production 28, 101-112.

Hou, H., Peng, S., Xu, J., Yang, S., Mao, Z. (2012) Seasonal variations of CH4 and N2O emissions in response to water management of paddy fields located in Southeast China. Chemosphere 89, 884-892.

Huijbregts, M.A.J., Hellweg, S., Frischknecht, R., Hendriks, H.W.M., Hungerbühler, K., Hendriks, A.J. (2010) Cumulative Energy Demand As Predictor for the Environmental Burden of Commodity Production. Environmental Science & Technology 44, 2189-2196.

IEA, (2012) Understanding Energy Challenges in India Policies, Players and Issues Partner Country Series. International Energy Agency, France.

IPCC (2006) National Guidelines for Greenhouse Gas Inventories.

IPCC, (2007) Observations: Surface and Atmospheric Climate Change, in: Solomon, S., Qin, D., Manning, M., Chen, Z., Marquis, M., Averyt, K.B., M., T., H.L., M. (Eds.), Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change, 2007. Cambridge University Press, , Cambridge, United Kingdom and New York, NY, USA, p. 237.

IRRI, (2013) Rice production and processing http://www.irri.org/index.php?option=com_k2&view=item&layout=item&id=9151&lang=en.

Islam, M., Peng, S., Visperas, R., Bhuiya, M., Hossain, S., Julfiquar, A. (2010) Comparative study on yield and yield attributes of hybrid, inbred, and NPT rice genotypes in a tropical irrigated ecosystem. Bangladesh Journal of Agricultural Research 35, 343-353.

ISO, (2006) Environment Management – Life Cycle Assessment – Principles and Framework. EN ISO 14040, in: International Organization for Standardization (ISO) (Ed.), Switzerland.

Jagadish, S., Craufurd, P., Wheeler, T. (2007) High temperature stress and spikelet fertility in rice (Oryza sativa L.). Journal of Experimental Botany 58, 1627-1635.
Jagadish, S.V.K., Muthurajan, R., Oane, R., Wheeler, T.R., Heuer, S., Bennett, J., Craufurd, P.Q. (2010) Physiological and proteomic approaches to address heat tolerance during anthesis in rice (Oryza sativa L.). Journal of Experimental Botany 61, 143-156.

John Deere, (2012) Tractor Specifications, http://www.deere.com/en_IN/home_page/ag_home/products/5104_45HP/5104_45HP.html.

Khush, G.S. (2001) Green revolution: the way forward. Nat Rev Genet 2, 815-822.

Krishi Vighan Kendra, (2012). http://kvkpudukkottai.com/front_line_demonstrations.html.

Kumar, S., Singh, J., Nanoti, S.M., Garg, M.O. (2012) A comprehensive life cycle assessment (LCA) of Jatropha biodiesel production in India. Bioresource Technology 110, 723-729.

Lerche, J. (2011) Agrarian Crisis and Agrarian Questions in India. Journal of Agrarian Change 11, 104-118.

Lindeman, R.L. (1942) The Trophic-Dynamic Aspect of Ecology. Ecology 23, 399-417.

Ly, P., Jensen, L.S., Bruun, T.B., Rutz, D., de Neergaard, A. (2012) The System of Rice Intensification: Adapted practices, reported outcomes and their relevance in Cambodia. Agricultural Systems 113, 16-27.

Mahindra, (2012) Tractor specifications, http://www.mahindratractorworld.com/Bangladesh-en/Products-Tractors-MKM-NBP-SERIES-30-50HP/575-DI-MKM-NBP-45HP.

Mandal, K.G., Hati, K.M., Misra, A.K. (2009) Biomass yield and energy analysis of soybean production in relation to fertilizer-NPK and organic manure. Biomass and Bioenergy 33, 1670-1679.
Nassiri, S.M., Singh, S. (2009) Study on energy use efficiency for paddy crop using data envelopment analysis (DEA) technique. Applied Energy 86, 1320-1325.

Nelson, G.C., Robertson, R., Msangi, S., Zhu, T., Liao, X., Jawajar, P., (2009) Greenhouse Gas Mitigation. Issues for Indian Agriculture. In IFPRI Discussion Paper 00900. International Food Policy Research Unit, Washington.

Nevison, C.D., Mahowald, N.M., Weiss, R.F., Prinn, R.G. (2007) Interannual and seasonal variability in atmospheric N2O. Global Biogeochemical Cycles 21.

Oki, T., Kanae, S. (2006) Global Hydrological Cycles and World Water Resources. Science 313, 1068-1072.

Ott, R.L., Longnecker, M.T. (2010) An Introduction to Statistical Methods and Data Analysis, 6th Edition. Duxbury Press Belmont, USA.

Pachauri, R., (2007) Climate Change 2007: Synthesis Report IPCC Secretariat, Geneva.

PAS 2050:2011, (2011) Specification for the assessment of the life cycle greenhouse gas emissions of goods and services. BSI, London.

Pathak, H., Bhatia, A., Prasad, S., Singh, S., Kumar, S., Jain, M.C., Kumar, U. (2002) Emission of Nitrous Oxide from Rice-Wheat Systems of Indo-Gangetic Plains of India. Environmental Monitoring and Assessment 77, 163-178.

Pelletier, N., Audsley, E., Brodt, S., Garnett, T., Henriksson, P., Kendall, A., Kramer, K.J., Murphy, D., Nemecek, T., Troell, M. (2011) Energy Intensity of Agriculture and Food Systems. Annual Review of Environment and Resources 36, 223-246.

Peng, S., Hou, H., Xu, J., Mao, Z., Abudu, S., Luo, Y. (2011a) Nitrous oxide emissions from paddy fields under different water managements in southeast China. Paddy and Water Environment 9, 403-411.

Peng, S., Huang, J., Sheehy, J.E., Laza, R.C., Visperas, R.M., Zhong, X., Centeno, G.S., Khush, G.S., Cassman, K.G. (2004) Rice yields decline with higher night temperature from global warming. Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America 101, 9971-9975.
Peng, S., Yang, S., Xu, J., Gao, H. (2011b) Field experiments on greenhouse gas emissions and nitrogen and phosphorus losses from rice paddy with efficient irrigation and drainage management. SCIENCE CHINA Technological Sciences 54, 1581-1587.

Pfister, S., Bayer, P., Koehler, A., Hellweg, S. (2011) Environmental Impacts of Water Use in Global Crop Production: Hotspots and Trade-Offs with Land Use. Environmental Science & Technology 45, 5761-5768.

Pimentel, D., Dazhong, W., (1990) Technological Changes in Energy Use in U.S. Agricultural Production, in: Carroll, C.R., Vandermeer, J.H., Rosset, P. (Eds.), Agroecology. McGraw-Hill Publishing Company, New York.

Planning Commission, (2008) Eleventh Five Year Plan, (2007–2012). Agriculture, Rural Development, Industry, Services and Physical Infrastructure, in: India, G.o. (Ed.), New Delhi.

Plevin, R.J., O'Hare, M., Jones, A.D., Torn, M.S., Gibbs, H.K. (2010) Greenhouse Gas Emissions from Biofuels' Indirect Land Use Change Are Uncertain but May Be Much Greater than Previously Estimated. Environmental Science & Technology 44, 8015-8021.

Prasad, R., Nagarajan, S. (2004) Rice-wheat cropping system - food security and sustainability. Current Science 87, 1334-1335.

Santiaguel, A.F., Howell, G., Jagadish, K., "Cooler rice" for a warming planet, Annual Report 2010. IRRI.

Screen, J.A., Simmonds, I. (2010) Increasing fall-winter energy loss from the Arctic Ocean and its role in Arctic temperature amplification. Geophysical Research Letters 37, L16707.

Searchinger, T., Heimlich, R., Houghton, R.A., Dong, F., Elobeid, A., Fabiosa, J., Tokgoz, S., Hayes, D., Yu, T.-H. (2008) Use of U.S. Croplands for Biofuels Increases Greenhouse Gases Through Emissions from Land-Use Change. Science 319, 1238-1240.

Sinclair, T.R., (2011) Precipitation: The Thousand-Pound Gorilla in Crop Response to Climate Change, in: D., H., Rosenzweig, C. (Eds.), Handbook Of Climate Change And Agroecosystems Impacts, Adaptation, and Mitigation. Imperial College Press, London.

Singh, H., Mishra, D., Nahar, N.M. (2002) Energy use pattern in production agriculture of a typical village in arid zone, India—part I. Energy Conversion and Management 43, 2275-2286.

Singh, Y.V. (2013) Crop and water productivity as influenced by rice cultivation methods under organic and inorganic sources of nutrient supply. Paddy and Water Environment 11, 531-542.

Singhal, K.K., Mohini, M., Jha, A.K., Gupta, P.K. (2005) Methane emission estimates from enteric fermentation in Indian livestock: Dry matter intake approach. Current Science 88, 119-127.

Smil, V. (2006) Energy In Nature And Society General Energetics of Complex Systems. MIT Press, Boston.
Smith, P., Martino, D., Cai, Z., Gwary, D., Janzen, H.H., Kumar, P., McCarl, B., Ogle, S., O'Mara, F., Rice, C., Scholes, R.J., Sirotenko, O., Howden, M., McAllister, T., Pan, G., Romanenkov, V., Rose, S., Schneider, U., Towprayoon, S., (2007) Agriculture. Chapter 8, in: B. Metz, O.R.D., P.R. Bosch, R. Dave, L.A. Meyer (Ed.), Climate Change 2007: Mitigation. Contribution of Working Group III to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, United Kingdom and New York, NY, USA.

Sorrell, S., (2007) The Rebound Effect: an assessment of the evidence for economy-wide energy savings from improved energy efficiency, Technology and Policy Assessment. UK Energy Research Centre, London.

Stoop, W.A., Adam, A., Kassam, A. (2009) Comparing rice production systems: A challenge for agronomic research and for the dissemination of knowledge-intensive farming practices. Agricultural Water Management 96, 1491-1501.

Suryavanshi, P., Singh, Y.V., Prasanna, R., Bhatia, A., Shivay, Y.S. (2013) Pattern of methane emission and water productivity under different methods of rice crop establishment. Paddy and Water Environment 11, 321-329.

Tennakoon, N.A., Hemamala Bandara, S.D. (2003) Nutrient content of some locally available organic materials and their potential as alternative sources of nutrients for coconut. COCOS 15, 23-30.

The Royal Society, (2012) People and the planet, in: The Royal Society Science Policy Centre (Ed.). The Royal Society London

Tippayawong, N., Pittayapak, A., Jompakdee, W. (2003) Analysis of Energy Requirement for Vegetable Oil Production in Northern Thailand 's Farms. CMU Journal 2, 37.

Trenberth, K.E. (2010) Changes in precipitation with climate change. Climate Research 47, 123-138
USEPA, (2006) Global Anthropogenic Non-CO2 Greenhouse Gas Emissions: 1990 – 2020. U.S. Environmental Protection Agency, Washington.

Wang, M., Xia, X., Zhang, Q., Liu, J. (2010) Life cycle assessment of a rice production system in Taihu region, China. International Journal of Sustainable Development & World Ecology 17, 157-161.

Wang, Z.Y., Xu, Y.C., Li, Z., Guo, Y.X., Wassmann, R., Neue, H.U., Lantin, R.S., Buendia, L.V., Ding, Y.P., Wang, Z.Z. (2000) A Four-Year Record of Methane Emissions from Irrigated Rice Fields in the Beijing Region of China. Nutrient Cycling in Agroecosystems 58, 55-63.

Wassmann, R., Jagadish, S.V.K., Sumfleth, K., Pathak, H., Howell, G., Ismail, A., Serraj, R., Redona, E., Singh, R.K., Heuer, S., (2009) Chapter 3 Regional Vulnerability of Climate Change Impacts on Asian Rice Production and Scope for Adaptation, in: Donald, L.S. (Ed.), Advances in Agronomy. Academic Press, pp. 91-133.

Williams, A.G., Audsley, E., Sandars, D.L., (2006) Determining the environmental burdens and resource use in the production of agricultural and horticultural commodities. Cranfield University and Defra, Bedford.

Wood S, Cowie A, (2004) A Review of Greenhouse Gas Emission Factors for Fertiliser Production, in: IEA Bioenergy Task 38 (Ed.). Research and Development Division, State Forests of New South Wales.

Woods, J., Brown, G., Gathorne-Hardy, A., Sylvester-Bradley, R., Kindred, D., Mortimer, N., (2008) Facilitating carbon (GHG) accreditation schemes for biofuels, feedstock production REPORT 435 Part 1 HGCA.

Xu, J., Peng, S., Yang, S., Wang, W. (2012) Ammonia volatilization losses from a rice paddy with different irrigation and nitrogen managements. Agricultural Water Management 104, 184-192.

Yan, X., Yagi, K., Akiyama, H., Akimoto, H. (2005) Statistical analysis of the major variables controlling methane emission from rice fields. Global Change Biology 11, 1131-1141.

Yao, H., Conrad, R., Wassmann, R., Neue, H.U. (1999) Effect of soil characteristics on sequential reduction and methane production in sixteen rice paddy soils from China, the Philippines, and Italy. Biogeochemistry 47, 269-295.

EMBODIED EMISSIONS AND DIS-EMBODIED JOBS: THE ENVIRONMENTAL, SOCIAL AND ECONOMIC IMPLICATIONS OF THE RICE PRODUCTION-SUPPLY CHAIN IN SOUTH EAST INDIA

Alfred Gathorne–Hardy

EMBODIED EMISSIONS AND DIS-EMBODIED JOBS: THE ENVIRONMENTAL, SOCIAL AND ECONOMIC IMPLICATIONS OF THE RICE PRODUCTION-SUPPLY CHAIN IN SE INDIA

Alfred Gathorne-Hardy with Barbara Harriss-White [32]

Introduction

"Men with machines have conquered men as machines and a millennia of craft and art, celebration and belief has vanished in a decade or two, sunk from sight"(Blythe, 2011), p. 26.

Although originally describing British post war agriculture, Blythe could equally well be describing many aspects of India's contemporary food system. To many, the 'conquerors' are liberators, freeing individuals from the drudgery of being machines. To others they generate substantial collateral damage; not just the lost 'craft and art, celebration and belief', but also fundamental aspects of food security and human welfare – the quantity and quality of jobs and livelihoods, productivity, and environmental quality.

Simultaneously other transformations are taking place in India, including unprecedented economic growth; social, demographic, health and nutrition transitions; transformations in citizenship; and a political rebalancing of the tensions between capital and labour, growth and redistribution. These are all set within the less politically visible but ever shifting environment of climate change, water-shortages and competition, soil mining and degradation and the exponential rise in solid, liquid and gaseous waste.

What are the impacts of these changes? Should development policy continue to encourage them, or should it aim to modify them to maximise benefits and minimise costs? If so what kind of costs, where and how? These questions motivated our collective research project.

Social, environmental and economic spheres are inter-related, so trying to research any of them through a single discipline risks missing important trade-offs and synergies, which may in turn be a source of unintended consequences from any policy generated from our research.

This paper makes a small contribution to this knowledge void. We collected information from the perspectives of multiple disciplines, and present it here as baseline information that is currently

[32] With gratitude to D N Reddy and M Venkatanarayana, D.K.Mishra and Dinesh Kumar, Hema and Chandrasekharan, Gilbert Rodrigo, Gautam Mody, Mohan Mani and Meghna Sukumar and their team, Kavitha and Josephine for all their contributions.

missing from the development debates in any of the social, economic or environmental fields. We are not trying to provide solutions or answers.[33]

The social sphere

The importance of work, and work quality

Poor people derive most of their income from work – ranging from those employed inside the formal sector to subsistence producers, self-employed firms and farmers (Hull, 2009). As the ILO has argued, an adequate ('decent') quality and quantity of work is essential not only for economic growth but also for food security and the satisfaction of basic needs as well as wider quality of life capabilities including, in most societies, self-respect and social adulthood. While the quantity of work seems a relatively simple measure, in fact the working day is measured in terms of shifts, or hours, or through specified piece work - whether for an individual or in a gang. So in practice work quantity is complicated and our measure – hours per unit of output or land - is the severest kind of summary.

By contrast, the terms and condition of work – its 'quality' - is long established as measurable in many ways. Intensive research by the International Labour Organisation (ILO, 1999), and the EU (Lorano, 2005), suggest such an extremely large set of criteria - 125 variables in the case of the ILO's Decent Work[34] - that their conceptual refinements are un-implementable and thus irrelevant for most practical research. A reductionist alternative, confined to income and the economic value of benefits in kind, while missing the holistic aspiration of Decent Work as an analytical tool, has the benefit of collectability and can be scaled – ie , so that it can be compared and contrasted across different fields. In this paper we are forced to use income as a proxy for the quality of work. A fuller picture of work quality in the Indian food system using a subset of the 125 ILO variables selected on grounds of their relevance to worker mobilisation is being produced concurrently (Mody et al., 2013b).

From the individual perspective, Job quality and the quantity of work have been theorised as being related. In the original backward-bending labour supply curve, as suggested by Robbins in 1930, an individual increases his/her employment as the wage *increases* until s/he decides to cut back to spend more leisure time. In developing countries among poor workers the initial curve will be reversed – the amount of labour an individual *needs* is inversely related to the pay (Abraham, 2008). Our research looks at pay from the employer's perspective, but there are two points to make about this: first, that for poor agricultural labourers, the total pay (in cash and/or kind) is critical to their food

[33] A social sounding of possible alternatives addressing GHG hotspots and labour black spots is outlined in Harriss-White 2013 a and b.

security, and second, that the NREGA could be a game-changer, allowing labourers to escape the S-shape curve and poverty trap of low pay, low productivity.

The first point suggests more work is better work, but is this always the case? In order to decide if something is 'better' or 'worse' then the right baseline or counterfactual is necessary. But what is the counterfactual to an agricultural labourer's job – a better job, or no job? At its simplest, and with the exception of sanitary work, agricultural jobs are some of the 'worst' jobs that exist in terms of physical conditions of work, employer-employee relationships and pay. So fewer agricultural jobs will represent progress. But it can be counter-argued that there is a section of society, who for reasons of caste, religion, gender, site (and the inter-section of these identities) cannot escape rural labour markets or rural work. For these individuals, the counterfactual is no job, and any job is better than none. For decades, both before and after liberalisation, the Indian government has promoted labour displacing technologies (through for instance subsidies on tractors , milling equipment etc(Binswanger, 1985; Harriss, 1977a, b)) - a practice carrying the assumption that the rural labour surplus will be absorbed by industry and services. Yet at present India's economic growth is characterised as jobless. For example 60% of growth between 1990-2005 was in services, a relatively small-employing sector compared with the industry which has dominated China's growth (Corbridge et al., Forthcoming). So the displacement of agricultural labour, well attested by the spreading negative labour elasticities of agriculture and the growing literature on migration[35] results instead in increased un- or under-employment in the informal economy.[36]

Behind this paper therefore lies an assumption that must be made explicit: people stay in agricultural labour due to lack of alternative options, and more jobs are better than no jobs.

The informal economy

Although the informal economy dominates developing counties (and estimates of informal employment in India range between 83% and 91% of the labour force producing around 60% of GDP (Harriss-White, 2003; Harriss-White et al., 2007)) it is little understood; and relatively little official data pertaining to it is collected. In the informal economy social, economic and environmental laws are widely flouted and many regulative policies intended to cover the entire economy do not reach it directly (see Prakash 2013). The food system is no exception.

The informal economy is usually ignored when discussing sustainable food security, with major implications for achieving it. How do you manage water use when not even the farmers know how much they are using? How can food systems mitigate greenhouse gas emissions when no-one knows what is emitted or where? How can you improve the wellbeing of the poor when they have no knowledge of their own rights?

The environmental web

The poor state of the environment is well covered elsewhere (Crutzen, 2002; Foresight, 2011; Gathorne-Hardy, 2013b; Godfray et al., 2010; Rockstrom et al., 2009; Searchinger et al., 2008). Essentially there is a set of interlinked environmental threats that range in both importance and scale. Three of them are climate change, water availability and energy. Climate change is a global problem – driven by the atmospheric stock of global emissions – that is largely but not solely linked to the use of fossil fuels to meet societies' increasing demands for energy. Water is an essential pre-requisite to life and needed in the quantities that make long distance transport rarely practical in the way that it is for energy. Water is often a seen as a local issue, yet its local use can be heavily dependent upon (fossil) energy, and its local availability is in part driven by climate change.[37] Finally, energy use is often correlated with wider environmental concerns (Pelletier et al., 2011).

Thus these three measures are useful 'canaries'[38] for wider environmental concerns due to the pivotal positions they hold in relation to themselves, society and the economy.

Rice

The importance of rice rests upon three qualities: its significance for food, its importance for employment, and its environmental impacts (as discussed in Gathorne-Hardy, 2013). But rice farming and post-harvest processing and distribution is not an industry in isolation, instead it is enmeshed in complex socio-economic-environmental relations. The route by which paddy leaves the farm and reaches the consumer can be highly complex, with the paddy, straw, husk and bran passing through numerous hands, sometimes only on paper, before finally reaching the shop. Below is a representation of the West Bengal marketing system for rice in about 2005.

[37] Water use is under increasing competition between agriculture, industry and domestic needs.
[38] Canaries were used in British mines to detect noxious gases underground that could not be detected by smell.

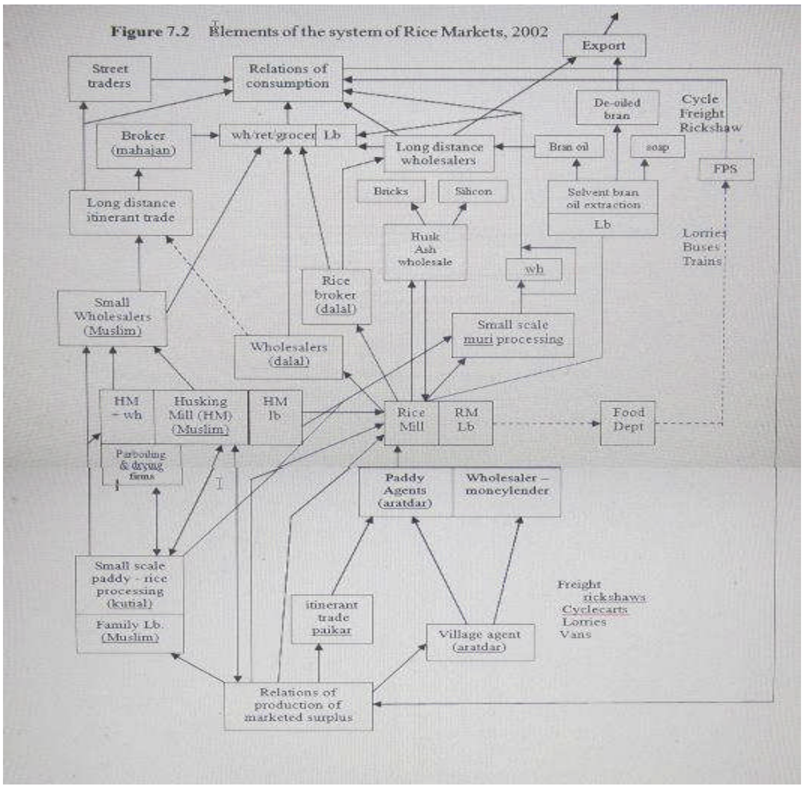


Figure 12. The West Bengal rice marketing system (Harriss-White, 2008,ch 7)

Methods

Our current research aims to understand a supply chain from multidisciplinary perspectives, using the criteria listed in Table 14. To do this a novel model was generated that fuses life cycle assessment (LCA), economic measures, and social data associated with labour quality and quantity in such a way as to allow comparisons to be made along the whole supply chain. It also makes a first attempt towards an understanding of how these criteria interact. But it has draw backs(for example as explained earlier, the need for quantitative data means the more nuanced aspects of employment are not possible to include). Recognising this gap, it has been filled through dedicated research on employment and work conditions (Mody et al., 2013a).

Table 13.Description of different rice production technologies and their acronyms.

Production Technology	Abbreviation	Description
Irrigated, intensive, High Yielding Varieties in Tamil Nadu	HYV TN	Green revolution rice production technology, planted in a seedbed, transplanted sometime between 2-5 weeks with multiple plants per hill. Fertilised with synthetic fertilisers and sometimes additional farmyard manure (FYM)
Rainfed	Rainfed	Rainfed rice production is typically sown directly in the final

		field (rather than transplanting following initial sowing into a nursery), uses no groundwater irrigation, no synthetic pesticides or fertilisers. More detail is available from Mishra(2013)
System of rice intensification in Andhra Pradesh (AP)	SRI AP	SRI is a bundle of techniques, at the core of which is a reduction in seed intensity, earlier and timelier transplanting, changes in irrigation practises, changes in weeding practices due to less water used to control seeds through flooding, less fertiliser and pesticides with higher yields. More detail is available from Reddy and Venkatanarayana(2013)
System of rice intensification Tamilnadu simulated	SRI TNS	These results where the same as SRI AP, with the exception of allocation of GHGs and energy to irrigation – instead of using survey based data, we simulated what the emissions would have been if the farming had taken place in the same area as the HYV production. This was done by multiplying the amount of embodied GHG /energy the HYV TN system produced/used to produce the average quantity of TN ground water, by the fraction of HYV TN to SRI AP ground water use. Apart from that, all measures are identical to SRI AP.
HYV AP	HYV AP	HYV farming systems, as for TN, but in Andhra Pradesh, within 2km of the SRI AP farms.
Organic	Organic TNS	The organic rice all came from Sirkazhi Organic Farmers' Association, under the Centre for Indian Knowledge Systems umbrella. There is a stringent set of rules, two key ones of which are a ban on synthetic fertilisers a ban on synthetic pesticides. The embodied energy and GHGs associated with irrigation were calculated for organic systems in the same method as SRI TNS.

Locations

The research took place in semi-arid regions of SE India. Data for each rice production technology was collected from different regions, with the exception of a 'control' subset of HYV producers collected in conjunction with the SRI farmers in Andhra Pradesh (AP). Intensive, High Yielding Variety rice (HYV) rice was examined in Thiruvannamalai district in N. Tamil Nadu; SRI paddy data were examined in Warangal Dt, in Northern AP; rainfed rice was examined in KoraputDt, SE Odisha; and organic rice production was examined in ThiruvallurDt,in Tamil Nadu. At each site, a standard questionnaire was used to collect data for the previous year, but here the data for a single season – that of the highest (average) production from each area – was analysed. Milling data were collected from

Arni (NE TN), and retail data were collected from Chennai. Transport data were collected from a range of locations in TN.

1. Greenhouse gas emissions 2. Water use 3. Costs 4. Value addition 5. Labour quality

Table 14. The sustainability criteria used in this analysis.

Model design

LCA methodology was used as the backbone on which to base all other metrics. LCA is a standardised method of quantifying all emissions and resources created and consumed during the life cycle of a product or service, butit has been designed to measure environmental, rather than socio-economic, impacts.

LCA methodology is based around four steps, (a) the goal and scope definition phase, (b) the inventory analysis phase (collection of the data), (c) the impact assessment phase (the translation of data to impacts), and (d) the interpretation phase (the meaning of the results, conclusions and recommendations).

Sampling methods

A semi -structured snowballing approach to sampling was used to gather participants. I.e.snowball sampling took place but directed according to specific criteria at every stage:

i) for farms, three criteria where used: large farms, small farms and the inclusion of farmers from a range of castes (with the exception of rain-fed, where all the farmers were Adivasis).

ii) for transport, 3 size criteria were used; large inter-state vehicles, medium-sized medium-distance destination vehicles and intra city vehicles.

iii) Most analysis was done on large mills, but data was also collected from a selection of small mills.

iv) For retail: both large (ie supermarkets) and small retail units were investigated.

This method of 'stratified snowballing' was chosen as a balance between the potentially unrepresentative nature of pure snowball sampling, and a random sample, which was impractical for this size of project. In each location at least 20 farmers were interviewed and throughout the marketing system at each stage 5-10 units have been selected.[39]

The model
Goal and scope definition

This research has two aims: firstly to understand where the main pollutants, costs, and labour requirements occur within the rice production-distribution system, and secondly, to compare between rice production/processing/retail systems in order to identify windows of opportunity to reduce GHGs and/or create jobs, alongside trade-offs and synergies using the range of sustainability indicators listed in Table 14.

Functional units

The functional unit is the central element of interest for the study. It should ideally hold practical relevance to the intended audience, and where possible to all those involved in the chain leading up to its final consumption. For this model two functional units are used:

The primary functional unit is:

1kg of rice sold to the consumer.

In addition, for its meaningfulness to agriculture, there is a second functional unit:

1 hectare of paddy production

This additional functional unit is needed in the land based part of the study, where reducing some of the social aspects to a dimensionless unit is not appropriate. First, high employment or profit per kg isnot useful if only 1kg is produced. And second, farmers themselves work with metrics of paddy and land area, and not with rice.

[39] However the field survey of the distribution system is not finished at the time of writing – June 2013.

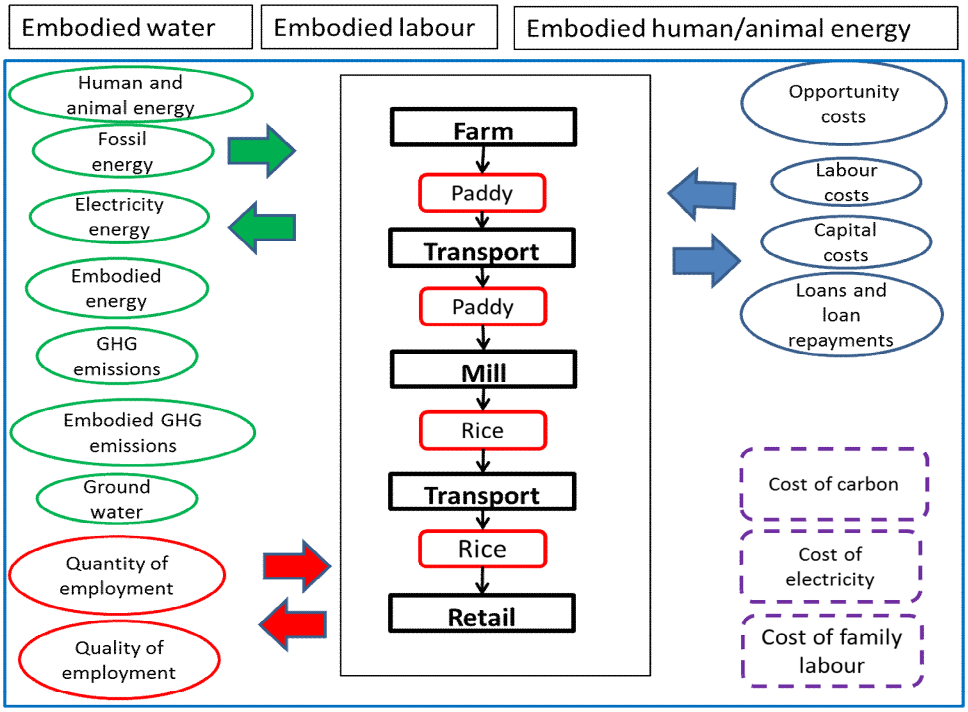


Figure 13.The framework for analysis. At each stage (indicated by the black box) environmental (green), economic (blue) and social (red) inputs and outputs will be measured when applicable. The blue boxes indicate economic values that are used to test the implications of policy, and to understand some externalities. The arrows indicate both the use and production of environmental, social and economic goods. The three boxes above the main box indicate aspects left out of the boundary.

Baselines and boundaries.

Market structure.

We are using a stylised model of the marketing system.

Researching and analysing the entire rice system, which could conceivably still retain the kind of complexity illustrated byFigure 12, has not proved feasible in this pilot project. Instead we have stylised it using prior knowledge of the evolution of the local marketing system (Harriss-White, 1996, 2008, 2012; Janakarajan. S., 2004). The stylised system has four components, production, transport, milling and retail, see Figure 13. While vastly simplifying the supply chain, this is known to be reasonably representative of much of the rice system for Tamil Nadu.

For analytical purposes all systems have to be closed. Figure 13 shows the boundaries of the model – everything included within the blue box is included in the model. At each point there were times where specific decisions had to be made concerning how to include specific aspects within the model, but these were most complicated for the agricultural sector, and are described in the accompanying paper (Gathorne-Hardy, 2013).

The ‘boundaries[40]’ were kept constant where possible, but this was not always so. For example environmental boundaries included embodied GHG and energy, but not embodied water. Economic boundaries included all costed elements upstream of the system depicted in Figure 13, as these are assumed to be embodied in inputs purchase prices. Social boundaries were largely limited to social relations directly investigated – no attempt was made to calculate the embodied jobs of goods and services not directly covered by the new model (see the three boxes outside the blue box in Figure 13). This is potentially important when considering capital-intensive labour-saving machinery such as tractors, which will have been physically produced with considerable (but unknown) factory labour. How this factory employment compares with the agricultural labour displaced over a 20 year tractor lifespan has never to our knowledge been researched.

Allocation.
As part of the baselines and boundaries of the model, it is important that the allocation of emissions between different co-products is transparent and defensible. In our research we have used economic allocation methods, as explained in Gathorne-Hardy (2013b). This is uncontroversial standard practice for environmental goods (Blengini and Busto, 2009; Williams et al., 2006), but as far as the authors are aware, it has not been used for social or economic activity before. For example only a certain amount of GHG emissions associated with the mill is allocated to the rice; some needs allocating to the bran, husk and broken rice too. A further question is the analytical handling of un-commercialised factors of production. Should the LCA use imputed values for these too? Imputed values were generated for the allocation of emissions between straw and paddy for example,in order to understand farm decisions and their influences. We did this, partially based on the assumption that the deployment of labour is decided by the farmer in the same manner that many activities with environmental impacts are. More importantly, since the primary aim of this work is to understand how different sustainability indicators interact along a supply chain, consistency in units of measurement was essential.

Allocation issues not covered in Gathorne-Hardy (2013b) are defined below.

Agricultural baselines.
The most robust technique for determining the repercussion of different production techniques is to use the experimental method, where it is only the variable of interest that differs between tested populations. Yet there are many situations when such a set-up is impossible, with implications for both natural and social science approaches to understanding. In this project we are interested in socio-economic-environmental variables – a range of variables too large to control. Indeed any effort to

[40] The boundaries define what is to be included and what excluded from analysis. LCAs are iterative processes, and a rule of thumb from PAS 2050 is to ignore anything that is less than 1% of the total. Clearly some initial analysis is needed in order to judge where issues fit with respect to this 1% boundary and none are rejected unless they are clearly substantially below it

control this range of complex variables would require such manipulation that the results would be unreliable. Consequently our research design takes the form of a natural experiment in which different regions are used to explore the impact of different paddy production techniques and post-harvest supply chains on social, economic and environmental indicators.

This still leaves a problem for comparison between-technological systems – how much of the observed difference is due to the different production-distribution technologies and institutions, and how much to geography? When it was possible, comparative data were collected from each site, for example SRI data were collected from Andhra Pradesh, and data from 10 HYV farms within 2km were also collected for comparison. It was not possible to gather evidence for the range of technologies we studied at every site so the question of comparing and explaining observed differences cannot be perfectly answered. However so as to refine the comparative analysis, where possible we collected data on an HYV 'control'.

As explained in Gathorne-Hardy (2013b), a key problem in comparisons between the different farming techno-systems was the impact of different water table depths in the different districts and states. In order to control for this, the results were modified to simulate all farming techno-systems as if they operated with a northern TN water table as explained in Table 13. We refer to the simulated farming techno-systems as TN simulated (TNS), thus SRI AP has been simulated for TN water table as 'SRI TNS', (SRI Tamil Nadu simulated). The same goes for organic rice. Rain-fed rice did not use groundwater, so such a simulation is not required. See Table 13

The life cycle inventory.
All aspects of the rice production, transport, milling and retail were studied for their emissions. Where possible data for the precise location or for India were used (i.e. India specific data was available for cement) but when local co-efficients for converting activity into emissions were not available data was collected from global sources. All capital goods (i.e. tractors, lorries, mills) were assumed to last for 20 years with the exception of pumps, which were assumed, on local advice, to last 10 years. For non -pumps, this is likely a conservative estimate considering the multiple re-use of many machines in an Indian context.[41] For this reason end of life credit/costs were not included for machinery.

The modelling approach was based on the material flows at every stage in the production-distribution system see Figure 13. The flow of materials was assessed at the appropriate stage for each criterion. Thus while environmental and cost implications could be measured at divisions within each stage (for example on-farm assessments for each task: cultivation/ploughing, irrigation, weeding etc) such

[41]In 1980 Harriss-White found cotton ginning machines a century old in use - together with a nation-wide market for second hand machinery Harriss-White, B. (1996) A Political Economy of Agricultural Markets of South India: Masters of the Countryside. Sage Publications, New Delhi.

granularity of data was not possible to gather for changes in value, which could only be ascertained when the product was sold/bought.

Table 15. Farm environment data assumptions and inputs

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
Farm environmental operations	MJ kg^{-1}, GHG kg^{-1} Water kg^{-1}, MJ ha^{-1}, GHG ha^{-1} Water ha^{-1},	See (Gathorne-Hardy, 2013b)	See (Gathorne-Hardy, 2013b)

Table 16. Transport GHG and energy

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
Diesel use	l/km.	Dependent upon lorry type, age.	Survey data
GHG and energy emissions of diesel use	kgCO2eq/l MJ/l	3.0168 43.71	Renewable energy directive (Directive 2009/28/EC., 2009)
Embodied energy of steel	MJ/kg	36	(Gumaste)
Lorry maximum age	Yrs	20	Assumed, in reality we never found a lorry owner who had sold a vehicle for scrap
Embodied GHG of steel	kg CO2 -eq/kg steel	2.7	(CSE, 2012)
Ground water	NA	NA	NA With the exception of a few litres every now an then for the radiator, no ground water was used for lorries – they were regularly washed, but using tank/river water.
Total transport distance			This varied considerably, from less than 20km when the rice was produced, milled and eaten in the same region, to far longer distances when paddy was bought in from other states, and sold to long distance destinations. We have modelled 750km for total (i.e. of both paddy and rice) transport. Choosing a longer distance allows understanding of more extreme transport use.

Table 17. GHG, energy and water from mills

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
Embodied GHG emissions: Concrete.	kg CO2 -eq/kg	0.72	CSE (Kumar Mandal and Madheswaran, 2010), amortised over 20 yrs and divided by the number of tonnes of rice produced / yr
Embodied GHG emissions: steel	kg CO2 -eq/kg	2.7	(CSE, 2012)and amortised over 20 yrs
Methane emissions from husk burning in mill	(kg CH4/kg fuel)	0.00739	(Bhattacharya et al., 2000). Without better data we assumed all mills produced equal GHG emissons per kg of fuel. Only CH_4 was considered, CO_2 emitted was assumed to be recently sequestered and thus carbon neutral. This is a controversial issue, see .
Allocation to rice	%	81%	Derived from the economic value of rice compared to co-products from each unit of paddy. Figure produced from mill owners
Embodied GHG emission s associated with electricity	(kgCO2eq/KWh)	1.1095	This was generated using CEA (2011) data of 0.81 at production multiplied by 27% T and E losses (Alagh, 2010). Theft was not included in this, as stolen electricity presumably has utility, so should also take a share of overall emissions.
Embodied primary energy associated with electricity	MJ KWh^{-1}.	15.189	This is for non fossil fuel based, as defined by TN electricty board, multiplied by primary energy factors from http://eco3.org/wp-content/plugins/downloads-manager/upload/Demystifying%20Energy%20Use%20-%20Energy%20Equivalence%20Matrix-%20Report%20No.1029.pdf for coal (and lignite, prob should be greater) and http://go.leonardo-energy.org/rs/europeancopper/images/PEF-finalreport.pdf for nucleur and hydro. assumed diesel = coal, and gas = half coal. And multiplied by T and E losses(Alagh, 2010)

Table 18. Environmental emissions from retail

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
Embodied emissions of concrete and steel	See mills above		
Electricity	See mills above		

Table 19.Labour use (all sectors)

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source

All operations	Minutes/kg Hours/ha	Dependent upon individual operation	From survey data

Table 20.Costs

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
All operations	Rs kg^{-1} Rs ha^{-1}	Dependent upon individual operation	From survey data
Economic allocations	Unit	Figure	Source of data/comment
Agricultural land values		0	Land value for agriculture has not been included in the following results, as most farmers inherited land, so it is unlikely to be considered in decision making. In contrast, total land value was included for mills and retail, as this is more likely to be considered within financial accounts.
Mill land values	Rs/kg of rice	Mill dependant	Gathered from mill owners
Capital value of mill equipment	Rs/ kg of rice	Mill dependant	Gathered from mill owners. Owners were asked to estimate the value of their entire machinery set up, if it was to be bought in present condition.
Opportunity cost of capital	%	8.52	Rates On Central and State Government Dated Securities http://www.rbi.org.in/scripts/PublicationsView.aspx?id=14475)

Table 21. Economic allocations

Operation	Reference unit (s)	Figure	Data source
Carbon price	Rs/kg CO_2	0.736	Taken from Certified Emission Certificate prices in June 2010, before the big crash (€12.87) and exchange rate June 2010 (€1= Rs 57.16).
Simulated price for irrigation electricity	Rs / unit	2.0	From TN electricity board, low use domestic customer rate. http://tneb.tnebnet.org/tariff_new.html
Family labour	Rs/hr	Location dependent	Used the mean casual labour rate for males or females from every site.

Sources: Primary data for all systems was collected using recall questionnaires, collected from July to December, 2012, under the direction of A Gathorne-Hardy, R Hema, D N Reddy and D K Mishra.

Family labour.

The LCA approach to labour used here has considered the labour necessary for the unit of production (a 'marginal cost' approach to labour). Other labour is necessary, for example family labour, but, since the analysis is derived from the actual costs of the techno-system they will not be included here. This will slightly underestimate labour requirements from the farm, because the farm is the site of a large range of labour activity. Some farms report zero family labour, but we can assume that everywhere family labour did a certain amount of management work.

Social costs and externalities.

Simulated alternatives or 'options' were developed to include a range of costs that do not appear on the financial balance sheet.

Family labour. As explained above, the default has been to exclude family labour costs, as we these are unlikely to be included in the accounting perspective of the farmer. They are included in alternative calculations – and are based on the relevant casual labour rate in agriculture. In the same way, the opportunity cost of manure was by default not considered by farmers but imputed for sensitivity calculations here.

While electricity was free for all farmers interviewed in this study who used well-irrigation, a price was optionally included. Electricity was free for all farms, but when imputed was at Rs2/unit. The values of GHG emissions by default were not known to GHG producers, but when they were imputed, a CO_2 price of (Rs0.74/kgCO2-eq) (€ 12.87 /tonne, see Table 21) was used. For the purpose of simulations and modelling, labour pay (actual and imputed) could be increased (or decreased) at a flat rate across all sectors.

Simulating four additional costs

One of the advantages of generating a model to compare between multiple criteria is the ability to test policy options through simulation. Three policy options were tested:

i) **Including a price for family labour**. The use of family labour may have an opportunity cost associated with it – if not working on the farm family labour could potentially provide additional income through taking on alternative employment. Including a price for family labour imputes this loss of alternative earnings.

ii) **Including a price for GHG emissions**. Charging for carbon is a common mechanism used to internalise the climate change externalities (Millennium Ecosystem Assessment, 2005)

iii) **Increasing casual labour wages**. Pay is a key measure of job quality. Wages are important not only for farmlabour but also for mill, transport and store employees. Simulating an increase in wages provides a basic understanding of how improving job quality will affect the profitability of firms

iv) **Imputing a price for electricity.** The embodied emissions from electricity are key to GHG emissions, yet electricity is supplied free for most farms providing little incentive to reduce its use. Simulating a charge for electricity indicates how electricity charging would affect the profitability of paddy production.

Statistical analysis
The analysis was carried out using a LCA model built in excel, and statistics were tested in SPSS.

Results

'First level' whole chain results

These are presented here in tabulated form prior to analysis and discussion in section 4.

Table 22. Whole farm GHG emissions using HYV TN as an example farming system

	GHG (0.1kgCO2eq/kg)	Ground water (t/kg)	Fossil energy (MJ/kg)	Total energy	Labour (minute/k	Daily wage (M) (100Rs)	Daily wage (F)	Costs (Rs/kg)	Profit (Rs/kg)
HYV farm	0.91	3.79	5.57	6.51	6.02	2.07	1.37	2.40	2.40
S.E.	0.01	0.72	0.41	0.31	0.53	0.00	0.00	0.51	0.51
Transport	78.96	0.00	1.90	1.99	2.79	6.30		0.999	0.001
S.E.	0.00		0.04		0.02			0.16	
Large mill	0.11	0.43	1.81	1.81	0.70	2.80	1.63	17.97	3.84
S.E.	0.02	0.06	0.61	0.61	0.11	0.40	0.08	2.99	3.82
Small retail	0.03		0.25	7.81	3.89		2.49	29.98	2.70
S.E.	0.01		0.09	3.56	1.80			0.49	0.38
Large retail	0.22		2.57	3.42	0.43	3.70	3.70	44.22	1.35
S.E.	0.18					0.9	0.9		
TOTAL	1.28	4.21	11.85	13.73	9.94	14.87	6.70	65.59	7.59

First level farm results

Due to the complexity of the farming system, with a range of farming systems and a range of tasks within each, we presenthere the basic data for farm results, upon which our later analysis is based.

Table 23.Basic data for farm environment

	Total farmed area (ha)	FYM (t/ha)	Totally synthetic N ha (kg N/ha)	Total N/ha (kg N from FYM and synthetic)	kgN used by the crop	NUE (kg grain kg N applied)	mea n cost of tractor manure	Ground water (t/kg)	Ground water (t/ha)	Fossil energy/ha (GJ)	Fossil energy/kg (MJ/kg)	Total energy (MJ/kg)	Days pumping
HYV-TN (20 fms)	2.03	7	149	257	94	45	843	3.79	27595	32082	5.57	6.51	71.75
S.E.	0.26	1	18	30	2	5	102	0.72	5140	2082	0.36	0.38	0.91
Rainfed (24 fms)	0.50	14	0	203	34	18	1014			272	0.18	20.42	
S.E.	0.40	1	0	17	4	2	94			151	0.10	2.05	
SRI TNS (20 fms)	1.23	19	157	436	129	34	1113	1.66	16049	14604	1.90	5.10	71.50
S.E.	0.62	4	36	100	30	8	106	0.38	3682	3350	0.14	0.42	1.21
Organic (20 fms)	5.38	16	4	283	75	65	218	2.86	15795	14525	3.26	6.48	65.54
S.E.	0.87	2	0	52	3	19	1	0.325	1710	198	0.11	0.33	0.38

Farm results, environment
The following tables show results prior to analysis.

Table 24.GHG emissions for the each process involved in rice agriculture (kg of CO_2-eq / kg of rice).

	HYV-TN	S.E.	Rainfed	S.E.	SRI - TNS	S.E.	HYV -AP	S.E.	Organic -TNS	S.E.
Seed	0.005	0.000	0.006	0.001	0.001	0.000	0.007	0.001	0.003	0.000
Seedbed creation	0.003	0.001	0.012	0.008	0.054	0.039	0.105	0.081	0.002	0.001
Bund	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Cultivation	0.025	0.003	0.297	0.040	0.014	0.002	0.015	0.003	0.013	0.003
Transplanting	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Weeding	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Synthetic fertiliser	0.068	0.008	0.000	0.000	0.060	0.006	0.128	0.012	0.000	0.000
Pesticides	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.003	0.002	0.000	0.000
FYM	0.025	0.004	0.161	0.015	0.051	0.006	0.073	0.010	0.006	0.001
Irrigation	0.190	0.021	0.000	0.000	0.083		0.199	0.055	0.14	

based emissions										
CH4 soil derived	0.609	0.033	0.000	0.000	0.519	0.031	1.082	0.083	0.880	0.047
Nitrous oxide	0.054	0.006	0.438	0.042	0.140	0.013	0.114	0.010	0.064	0.008
Harvest	0.007	0.000	0.107	0.030	0.006	0.001	0.005	0.001	0.002	0.001
ILUC	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
SOC storage	-0.074	0.001	-0.184	0.017	-0.035	0.001	-0.087	0.004	-0.096	0.003
TOTAL	0.913	0.052	0.837	0.080	0.892	0.063	1.645	0.140	1.019	0.065

Table 25. GHG emissions for each stage of rice production (kg of CO_2-eq /ha). S.E. = standard error

	HYV	S.E.	Rainfed	S.E.	SRI - TNS	S.E.	HYV -AP	S.E.	Organic	S.E.
Seed	37	3	13	0	8	2	39	3	17	3
Seedbed creation	26	5	44	33	414	275	554	402	10	6
Bund	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Cultivation	181	23	710	128	130	19	92	19	73	16
Transplanting	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Weeding	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Synthetic fertiliser	483	68	0	0	548	45	786	77	0	0
Pesticides	3	0	0	0	4	2	18	12	0	0
FYM	188	29	354	30	478	59	447	64	33	5
Irrigation based emissions	1281	143	0	0	745	334	5309	520	733	220
CH4 soil derived	4384	238	0	0	4622	321	6534	349	4876	253
Nitrous oxide	388	47	964	84	1310	123	696	64	357	47
Harvest	45	4	205	35	58	9	32	6	13	5
ILUC	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
SOC storage	-525	0	-379	0	-330	0	-525	0	-525	0
TOTAL	6491	394	1911	204	7986	768	13980	696	5588	365

Table 26. Fossil energy requirements for each process (MJ/kg rice)

	HYV	S.E.	Rainfed	S.E.	SRI TNS	S.E.	HYV AP	S.E.	Organic TNS	S.E.
Seed	0.02	0.00	0.02	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.00
Seedbed creation	0.02	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.04	0.02	0.02	0.01
Bund	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
Cultivation	0.35	0.05	0.13	0.09	0.13	0.02	0.13	0.03	0.21	0.05
Transplanting	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
Weeding	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00

Synthetic fertiliser	1.96	0.35	0.00	0.00	0.50	0.06	2.65	0.64	0.00	0.00
Pesticides	0.03	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.14	0.07	0.44	0.32	0.00	0.00
FYM	0.01	0.00	0.04	0.02	0.00	0.00	0.03	0.01	0.00	0.00
Irrigation	3.06	0.05	0.00	0.00	1.02	0.04	3.76	0.15	2.99	0.10
Soil derived CH4	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
Soil derived N2O	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
Harvest	0.11	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.11	0.02	0.10	0.02	0.04	0.01
ILUC	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
SOC storage	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
TOTAL	5.57	0.36	0.18	0.09	1.90	0.10	7.14	0.90	3.26	0.11
Energy out	13.91	0.24	5.10	0.57	19.21	0.79	12.20	0.50	11.20	0.38
EROI	2.65	0.14	254.22	66.66	10.86	0.97	1.90	0.21	3.59	0.27

Table 27. Fossil energy requirements for each process (MJ/ha)

	HYV		Rainfed		SRI		HYV AP		Organic	
Seed	210	40	2958	2153	393	178	473	98	236	65
Seedbed creation	77	17	66	38	307	37	105	29	92	12
Bund	2069	255	11903	2273	7988	1149	7454	2280	5181	454
Cultivation	553	155	151	103	1040	146	810	160	489	88
Transplanting	404	103	8385	1279	2074	361	1194	239	271	106
Weeding	11417	2072	0	0	3992	418	13381	3384	27	8
Synthetic fertiliser	217	39	0	0	1247	638	2411	1723	0	0
Pesticides	3876	597	8171	661	10772	1269	9542	1340	8647	1133
FYM	17693	10	0	0	8460	161	19089	197	13356	0
Irrigation	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Soil derived CH4	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Soil derived N2O	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Harvest	761	77	3725	620	1602	287	806	141	525	100
ILUC	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
SOC storage	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
TOTAL	37417	2205	35395	4174	37898	1729	55324	4275	28894	1358
Energy out	81006	1408	29696	3340	111857	4588	71057	2894	65211	2187
EROI	2.3	0.1	1.0	0.1	3.1	0.2	1.3	0.1	2.4	0.1

Table 28. Energy requirements from all energy sources (fossil, animal and human) for each process (MJ/kg rice)

	HYV	S.E.	Rainfed	S.E.	SRI TNS	S.E.	HYV AP	S.E.	Organic TNS	S.E.
Seed	0.02	0.00	0.02	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.00	0.02	0.00
Seedbed creation	0.04	0.01	0.89	0.60	0.08	0.02	0.14	0.03	0.06	0.02
Bund	0.01	0.00	0.03	0.01	0.04	0.01	0.02	0.01	0.02	0.00
Cultivation	0.38	0.05	7.69	1.35	1.11	0.15	1.57	0.42	1.18	0.11
Transplanting	0.09	0.03	0.05	0.03	0.14	0.02	0.17	0.04	0.11	0.02
Weeding	0.07	0.02	4.36	0.80	0.29	0.06	0.25	0.05	0.06	0.02
Synthetic fertiliser	1.97	0.35	0.00	0.00	0.52	0.06	2.67	0.64	0.01	0.00
Pesticides	0.04	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.15	0.07	0.46	0.32	0.00	0.00
FYM	0.67	0.10	4.54	0.43	1.42	0.16	1.93	0.27	1.91	0.25
Irrigation	3.08	0.05	0.00	0.00	1.12	0.06	3.89	0.18	3.00	0.10
Soil derived CH4	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
Soil derived N2O	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
Harvest	0.13	0.01	2.84	0.29	0.22	0.04	0.17	0.03	0.12	0.03
ILUC	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
SOC storage	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
TOTAL	6.51	0.38	20.42	1.87	5.10	0.31	11.28	0.75	6.48	0.33
Energy out	13.91	0.24	5.10	0.57	19.21	0.79	12.20	0.50	11.20	0.38
EROI	2.25	0.12	0.31	0.04	4.18	0.42	1.14	0.11	1.89	0.19

Table 29. Energy requirements from all energy sources (fossil, animal and human) for each process (MJ/ha)

	HYV		Rainfed		SRI		HYV AP		Organic	
Seed	249	42	3155	2284	580	202	638	119	238	65
Seedbed creation	77	17	66	38	307	37	105	29	92	12

Bund	2164	263	14951	2408	8644	1146	7954	2258	5204	457
Cultivation	553	155	151	103	1040	146	810	160	489	88
Transplanting	404	103	8385	1279	2074	361	1194	239	271	106
Weeding	11417	2072	0	0	3992	418	13381	3384	27	8
Synthetic fertiliser	217	39	0	0	1247	638	2411	1723	0	0
Pesticides	3876	597	8171	661	10772	1269	9542	1340	8647	1133
FYM	17693	10	0	0	8460	161	19089	197	13356	0
Irrigation	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Soil derived CH4	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Soil derived N_2O	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Harvest	761	77	5415	686	1613	284	806	141	525	100
ILUC	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
SOC storage	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
TOTAL	37551	2203	40329	4498	38751	1805	55988	4159	28919	1362
Energy out	81006	1408	29696	3340	111857	4588	71057	2894	65211	2187
EROI	2.3	0.1	0.8	0.1	3.0	0.2	1.3	0.1	2.4	0.1

Farm results: labour

Table 30. Labour required for each process (minutes / kg of rice) S.E. – standard error

	HYV	S.E.	Rain fed	S.E.	SRI AP	S.E.	HYV AP	S.E.	Organic	S.E.	Organic	S.E.
Seed		10		10		10		10				
Seedbed creation	0.41	0.06	4.20	2.43	0.32	0.12	1.15	0.33	0.59	0.11	0.59	0.11
Bund	0.28	0.02	0.15	0.08	0.28	0.02	0.29	0.06	0.45	0.04	0.45	0.04
Cultivation	0.18	0.02	5.64	0.81	0.34	0.06	0.41	0.09	0.09	0.02	0.09	0.02
Transplanting	2.29	0.21	0.35	0.20	1.12	0.10	3.14	0.22	2.70	0.27	2.70	0.27
Weeding	1.81	0.20	19.41	2.67	1.96	0.21	4.68	0.45	1.31	0.33	1.31	0.33
Synthetic fertiliser	0.25	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.16	0.03	0.46	0.11	0.11	0.02	0.11	0.02
Pesticides	0.12	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.12	0.03	0.49	0.11	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
FYM	0.14	0.02	1.82	0.24	0.76	0.14	0.92	0.22	0.65	0.11	0.65	0.11
Irrigation	0.11	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.62	0.09	1.59	0.32	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
Soil	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0.00	0	0

derived CH4												
Soil derived N2O	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0.00	0.00	0.00
Harvest	0.44	0.07	8.27	0.86	0.77	0.10	1.38	0.26	1.92	0.33	1.92	0.33
ILUC	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0.00	0	0
SOC storage	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0.00	0	0
Insurance	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Loans	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
TOTAL	6.02	0.53	39.84	3.55	6.46	0.55	14.51	1.46	7.83	0.70	7.83	0.70

Table 31. Labour required for each process (Hours/ha) S.E. – standard error

	HYV		Rainfed		SRI TNS		HYV TNS		SRI TNS		Organic TNS	
Seed	0	0	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0	0
Seedbed creation	49	7	265	175	54	21	111	32	54	9	54	9
Bund	34	3	6	3	44	3	29	6	41	2	41	2
Cultivation	22	2	220	31	52	8	39	8	8	2	8	2
Transplanting	272	26	17	10	173	11	314	15	245	21	245	21
Weeding	215	24	759	100	300	25	468	34	124	31	124	31
Synthetic fertiliser	29	4	0	0	26	5	46	11	10	2	10	2
Pesticides	14	1	0	0	18	5	48	10	0	0	0	0
FYM	16	3	67	9	121	24	90	21	62	10	62	10
Irrigation	13	2	0	0	97	12	156	28	0	0	0	0
Soil derived CH4	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Soil derived N2O	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Harvest	52	9	307	28	120	14	136	25	167	24	167	24
ILUC	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
SOC storage	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Insurance	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Loans	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
TOTAL	716	66	1641	236	1006	67	1436	98	710	51	710	51

Farm results economic

Table 32. Costs for each activity without including family labour, electricity charges, carbon price or the opportunity cost of capital (Rs/kg rice) SE=standard error

	HYV	S.E.	Rainfe	S.E.	SRI	S.E.	HYV	S.E.	Organi	S.E.

	TN		d		TNS		TNS		c	
Opportunity cost of capital	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.0 0	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.0	0.00
Seed	0.41	0.03	0.04	0.0 2	0.19	0.09	0.29	0.02	0.4	0.08
Seedbed creation	0.43	0.06	0.05	0.0 4	0.13	0.04	0.26	0.04	0.6	0.08
Bund	0.12	0.02	0.00	0.0 0	0.03	0.01	0.04	0.03	0.3	0.03
Cultivation	0.71	0.15	1.09	0.2 0	0.53	0.11	0.59	0.13	0.5	0.07
Transplantin g	0.39	0.03	0.00	0.0 0	0.24	0.02	0.76	0.08	0.9	0.09
Weeding	0.31	0.04	0.69	0.3 0	0.26	0.04	1.19	0.10	0.5	0.12
Synthetic fertiliser	0.99	0.08	0.00	0.0 0	0.52	0.05	1.09	0.10	0.1	0.01
Pesticides	0.21	0.03	0.00	0.0 0	0.19	0.06	0.47	0.23	0.0	0.01
FYM	0.40	0.07	4.00	0.5 2	0.25	0.08	0.51	0.26	0.7	0.15
Irrigation	0.14	0.02	0.01	0.0 0	0.18	0.04	0.32	0.04	0.078	0.01
Soil derived CH4	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.0 0	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.0	0.00
Soil derived N2O	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.0 0	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.0	0.00
Harvest	0.81	0.09	0.04	0.0 2	0.80	0.11	0.80	0.13	1.3	0.25
ILUC	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.0 0	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.0	0.00
SOC storage										
Insurance	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.0 0	0.01	0.00	0.01	0.01	0.0	0.00
Loans	0.56	0.40	0.46	0.4 4	0.62	0.05	0.81	0.18	0.6	0.26
TOTAL	5.5	0.6	6.4	0.7	4.0	0.3	7.1	0.7	6.0	0.5
TOTAL INCOME	8.5	0.0	9.1	0.1	14.6	0.1	13.8	0.5	16.6	0.2
Net profit	2.4	0.5	2.2	0.5	8.6	0.3	5.4	0.8	8.6	0.5

Table 33. Costs for each activity without including family labour, electricity charges, carbon price or the opportunity cost of capital (Rs/ha) SE=standard error

	HYV		Rainfed		SRI		HYV AP		Organic	
Opportunity cost of capital	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Seed	2357	191	84	50	1210	502	1412	45	1238	272
Seedbed creation	2467	305	156	115	861	302	1272	152	2270	318
Bund	707	122	12	12	205	113	213	115	1197	83
Cultivation	4151	898	1978	263	3772	1112	2926	426	1908	164
Transplanting	2223	156	0	0	1682	201	3673	222	3025	253
Weeding	1779	217	1227	452	1848	346	5773	223	1569	345
Synthetic fertiliser	5724	508	0	0	3721	502	5388	363	282	34
Pesticides	1209	154	0	0	1340	616	2265	781	144	45
FYM	2304	443	7223	670	1798	833	2392	831	2655	567
Irrigation	781	113	12	1	1256	318	1533	132	289	55
Soil derived CH4	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Soil derived N2O	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Harvest	4590	540	123	78	5589	1087	3937	454	4748	868
ILUC	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
SOC	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Insurance	23	7	0	0	106	47	46	23	56	13
Loans	3122	2198	544	398	4858	701	3927	568	2526	1156
Total	31438	3291	11358	947	28245	3079	34757	1969	21910	1847
Total Income	48582	832	19376	2206	113972	6322	68484	2493	61178	2012
Profit	17144	3251	7909	1776	84515	7729	33727	3935	39268	2580

First level results for transport, milling and retail.

Due to the simpler nature of the transport, milling and retail sectors, the data will be discussed in the text.

Table 34. Number of respondents for transport, mills and retail

	Number of respondents
Transport	8 partial, 2 full
Mills	16 large, 4 small
Retail	4 small, 3 large

Analysis

The whole chain

For HYV TN rice produced, and distributed through mills and a large retail outlet, *1kg of rice is responsible for*

1.01 kg CO_2-eq,

4.24t ground water,

9.52MJ fossil energy,

13.4 minutes of labour,

andRs9.9 of accumulated net profit[42].

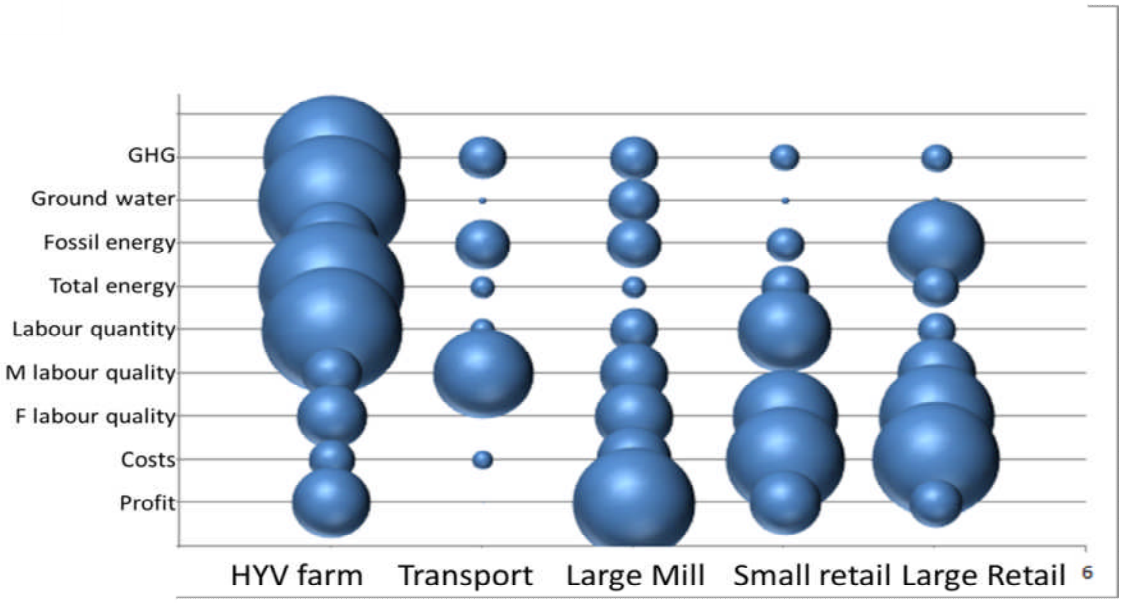


Figure 14. The social, economic and environmental impacts as rice moves along the production supply chain. All criteria have been made dimensionless, so that the sum for each criterion is the same. All circles used 'Large retail', with the exception of the small retail column. This assumes the paddy/ rice is transported 750km.

Figure 14 shows the relative importance of each evaluative criterion at the different stages in the rice supply chain. Each criterion (y axis) should be 'read' from left to right, to represent the movement from the farm to transport, milling and retail. Only one retail type is included for each set of criteria, so for the farm, transport, mill, the total is confined to large retail, and as such is minimally out of proportion compared to small retail.

[42]The sum of net profits at each stage.

From the environmental indicators, *production rather than post-harvest processing and distribution dominates the supply chain* with the exception of total energy. production is responsible for 78%, 90%, 57% and 32% of GHG emissions, water use, fossil and total energy use respectively. The difference between the proportion of GHG emissions and fossil energy is indicative of agricultural based systems where substantial GHG emissions are *not* connected to energy use. In this case it represents soil based methane and nitrous oxide emissions.Production also dominates the deployment of labour(responsible for 56% of total labour requirements). *Labour quality (pay) is highest for males in transport (drivers) and for females in retail*, while profits / rates of return are highest from the mill sector. Costs, as shown in Figure 14, are highest at later stages of the supply chain as expected, as the purchase price of rice/paddy embodies all the costs (and profit) of previous stages in the chain.

Why does agriculture dominate the environmental indicators?

One factor is agriculture's large footprint. Farming has the largest physical footprint of any of the stages in the supply chain, by several orders of magnitude. It takes between 1.3 and 5 m^{-2} of field space to produce 1kg of paddy, while the most land- efficient modern rice mills can process over 400kg paddy from a single square meter of mill land over a single season, or three times that over a year (0.002 m^{-2} or 0.0008 m^{-2} to process each kg of paddy per season year respectively). The most 'area efficient' unit of production is retail, where the smallest shop examined in our research delivered 15,500kg of rice for every square metre. (This result uses uses an economic allocation of floor space. Simply dividing the quantity of rice sold by the *entire* shop area, although still a large throughput per sqmetre, drops to 3,100kg rice m^2)[43]. But while direct footprints can correlate well with obligate land-based environmental impacts such as biodiversity (Foley et al., 2011), they are not always efficient indicators of the metrics we are concerned with: GHG emissions, energy use, water or labour use. For example a single large power station can release substantially more CO_2 than an area of agricultural land many thousands of times larger.

Agriculture.

Environment

It is widely accepted that sustainable development must build from environmental sustainability, as environmental sustainability dictates the limits to total sustainability. This logic, together with Figure 14, suggest that *rain-fed rice and SRI* rice should be promoted, because compared to either HYV TN or organic rice they produce equal GHG emissions, and use substantially less ground water or fossil energy per kilogram ($p<0.001$ for both measures). Of these two systems, rain-fed rice delivers substantially lower yields, 26% of SRI and 36% of HYV TN. Yields are important for two reasons:

[43] We have not included transport or traders here, due to lack of appropriate data to calculate their footprint

first, if translated into Indirect Land Use Change[44] (ILUC), low yields dramatically increase GHG emissions (Gathorne-Hardy, 2013b), and second, because food production must continue to increase both within India and worldwide (Foresight, 2011; Singh, 2013). Yet the disadvantages of low yield are only relevant if irrigated production were to be shifted to rain-fed, as otherwise an irrigated counterfactual is inappropriate. Unirrigated rain-fed rice technology, however, is in a separate environmental category, and it would be impossible to change production methods from irrigated to rain-fed. Hence where appropriate rain-fed rice production willbe treated as a separate category of rice production.

Yet while the use of environmental sustainability as an absolute goal makes sense on paper, in reality it could only work with a centrally-planned state with powers of discipline and enforcement, while actions on the ground are more commonly determined by self-motivated behaviour - and for farming, the key actor is likely to be the farmer/farm family.

Social and economic patterns of different production methods.

Comparing social and economic factors associated with the different farming systems is difficult due to the structures of socio-economic differences associated with the different regions from which the data was collected. For example in HYV TN, weeding was solely a female activity, while 33% of weeding hours for HYV in AP were done by men. And while we could control for some aspects of the environmental differences (such is irrigation and energy) this is not possible for socio-economic relations and institutions.

[44] The unintended consequences of globalland use change driven by changes in output or demand from the site of interest. A full definition and description is given in Gathorne-Hardy, A., (2013a) Greenhouse gas emissions from rice, Working paper,, http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/sites/sias/files/documents/GHG%20emissions%20from%20rice%20-%20%20working%20paper.pdf.

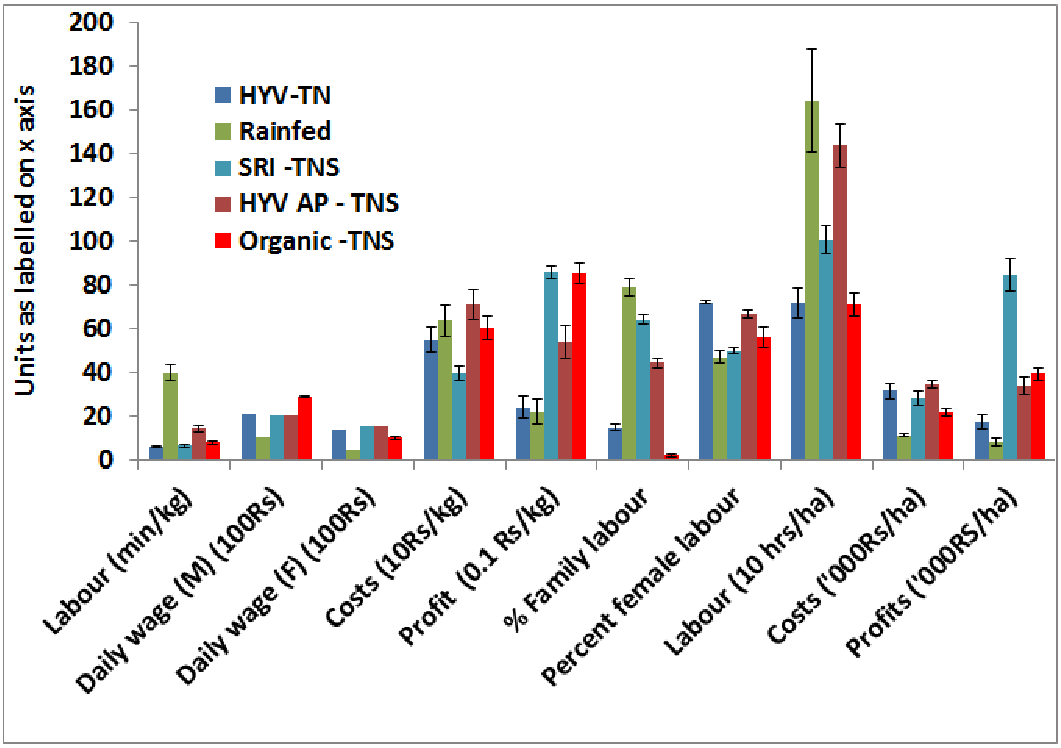


Figure 15.Key social and economic variables associated with different production systems. Note that all units are for rice not paddy. Income is imputed for rain-fed farmers from local market prices for paddy. For rain-fedpaddy 100% was consumed in the home in 2012-13.

Costs and profit

All the production systems we studied are profitable on an area and kg basis, seeFigure 15. SRI TNS and organic TNS are substantially more profitable per kg than any other production techno-systems, generating just under Rs 8/kg profit. Yet from an economically rational farmer's perspective, SRI offers markedly higher returns per unit of land, often the major limiting input, at between 2.2 and 3.6 times the profit per hectare of organic and HYV respectively ($p<0.001$). SRI's high area-based profit is largely due to the substantially higher yield – the costs per hectare are not significantly different between SRI and HYV AP or HYV TN. In contrast, organic production, the second most profitable techno-system (although not significantly more profitable than HYV – AP if an area metric is used) achieves profitability through significantly cheaper costs compared to HYV that help compensate for its lower yield. Additionally organic paddy is sold for significantly higher prices than paddy from other production systems, see Table 32 ($p<0.001$).

It is useful to be able to compare specific differences between the SRI and HYV cultivated in AP, where the major inputs such as labour costs, input costs and tractor hire are held constant and where any differences should be due to techno-systems rather than location or geography. Making this comparison, HYV has significantly higher costs for transplanting, weeding and synthetic fertiliser application compared to SRI AP. The cost structures result from the different production methods. The wider spacing of individual plants at transplanting under SRI differs from traditional transplanting methods, and the rows it produces will slow canopy closure and thus encourage weeds, but also allow quicker weeding using a mechanical weeder. SRI AP fields are weeded significantly more often than HYV AP (mean 3.1 vs 2.1 times, $p<0.001$), yet the length of time taken is significantly less ($p<0.001$) due to the use of weeders. The increased number of weedings is likely to be due to the more aerobic nature of the soils allowing a greater number of weeds to grow in addition to slower canopy closure. The economic flexibility brought about by the greater speed substantially reduces the costs (2154Rs ha^{-1} for SRI compared to 6924 Rs ha^{-1} for SRI control).In much SRI literature, SRI is reported to require 17-30% *more* labour forweeding (Latif et al (2005) providing a range of references for Madagascan SRI research). In contrast, more recent work - also in Andhra Pradesh - found savings associated with both transplanting and weeding (Adusumilli and Bhagya Laxmi, 2011). Perhaps the improved learning that Uphoffdiscusses for SRI technologies is leading to increased efficiency in Indian SRI (Uphoff, 2008).

A second difference between HYV AP and SRI AP is in labour use for irrigation, which is likely to be linked to the reduced irrigation. A third difference - the increased use of labour for HYV AP transplanting - is more surprising, as the ‘fiddliness’ of transplanting single, young rice seedlings is often quoted as a deterrent factor for SRI.

Another useful comparison is between HYV in AP and HYV in TN. There are few important differences, but the areas of cost that do vary significantly include irrigation. We obtained data for purchase costs and repair bills, and, on local advice, it was assumed that all would last for 10 years. All annual costs were split by the gross annual area of irrigated land. Irrigation costs are significantly higher in AP compared to TN, probably due to the greater workload in AP due to the deeper water table, requiring bigger pumps with more frequent repairs. The labour time for irrigation was substantially higher for HYV AP, compared to HYV TN, even though there was no difference in total water supply. A range of different, and not mutually exclusive, explanations occur for this: increased physical effort required to get the same volume of water – as above, different pump types (where more sophisticated TN pumps may be turned on from a mobile phone signal, or automatically turned on/off with the available current. Finally the differences could be due to variations in how the farmers allocated time – some may have allocated time to irrigation work during which the pump was working but farmers/workers were not directly handling the pumps for example.

Weeding cost significantly more in AP compared to TN, due to a mixture of higher wages (mean female wage for weeding in TN was Rs 46.5 day^{-1}, compared to Rs 120 day^{-1} in AP, $p<0.001$, although AP days were 6.2hrs compared to 4.6 in TN, $p<0.001$) with substantially longer hours of weeding. Interestingly there was no significantly difference in synthetic fertiliser costs, even though AP HYV farmers used substantially more than TN HYV. This was due to the significantly higher fertiliser prices in TN (with the exception of urea (7, 66 and 66% higher costs for DAP, complex and potash respectively)), allowing AP farmers to spend the same, while applying 1.9, 2, 1.5 and 3.4 times more urea, DAP, complex and phosphate respectively. Why did the AP farmers apply so much more fertiliser? Does price have an influence, or is it a function of poorer soils, or of more active advertising and marketing? Either way, it has resulted in a Nitrogen Use Efficiency[45] (NUE) of less than half that of TN ($p<0.001$), representing a waste of money, a source of water pollution and substantial additional GHG burden.

Overall, this range of differences for individual farm-level production practices means that it is not possible to use HYV in AP as a comparison with HYV in TN, even though there is no significant difference in total costs/ha.

The reduced synthetic fertiliser costs in AP are also attributable to SRI, as SRI specifically promotes FYM, and encourages reduced synthetic fertiliser use. While there is a reduction in synthetic fertiliser use in SRI, for example 69% of HYV AP synthetic nitrogen, there is no significant increase in FYM compared to HYV production in AP (18.7t ha^{-1} compared to 17 t ha^{-1} for SRI and HYV respectively, $p>0.05$) and no significant difference in the total application of N ($p>0.05$). Yet importantly the NUE is significantly higher for SRI ($p<0.01$). This is because approximately the same quantity of overall N produced a substantially increased yield. All other costs (bund repair, cultivation etc) are, as expected, not significantly different between the two AP production systems.

Rainfed Rice

Consistent with its ecology, rain-fed rice production is the odd-one-out in its structure of costs and returns. Rain-fed production makes a minimal profit. While costs per hectare are significantly lower than all other production systems ($p<0.01$), these costs are spread across such a low yield that the final (estimated) profit is only 1.1Rs/kg of rice, significantly lower than the other techno-systems ($p<0.01$).

The structure of rain-fed costs is also markedly different to other systems. It is dominated by farm-yard manure (FYM), costing Rs 4.0 for every kg of rice - 63% of the total costs. This is the highest of all input costs for all production systems (over 3 times the next greatest single input cost (Rs 1.2/kg for weeding in HYV TNS)), and significantly higher than any other systems spend on FYM - organic is the next highest, at Rs 0.8/kg or 16% of total costs. Most of rain-fed FYM costs are for vehicle (tractor) hire and the manure itself, only 5% of these costs are associated with labour.

Why rain-fed famers would choose to invest money in manure initially seems bizarre, but it is not necessarily an economically unsound action. After water stress, nutrients tend to be the most limiting factor in rain-fed rice (Haefele et al., 2008), so investing in manure in a situation where synthetic

[45] The percentage of nitrogen taken up by the plant compared to the total N applied from synthetic and organic sources

nutrients appear not to be an option – whether due to lack of availability or liquid income or desire – could be sensible. Table 35shows that rain-fed rice has the lowest total NUE (18%) and an agronomic NUE (kg of grain per kilogram of N of only 11. Normally such low responses to N suggest that N is not the most limiting factor, but, alone of all the crop production systems, rain-fed rice yields show a significant positive correlation with inputs, ($p<0.05$, $r^2=0.2$) which suggests that high levels of FYM application assist in increasing yield. However whether it is the NPK, micronutrients, or organic matter that promotes productivity is not possible to say from our data. (Peng et al., 2006)).

A further factor affecting the low input costs/ha to rain-fed is the high use of family labour. In rain-fed systems 79% of all hours are worked by family labour, significantly higher than all other systems,that is: 5.3, 1.3, 1.2 and 36.9 times more than HYV TN, SRI TNS, HYV TNS and organic TNS respectively($p<0.01$) - especially the HYV TN and organic TNS systems, whose labour force consisted of only 15 and 2% family labour respectively.

Labour and employment

The rice production systems analysed for this project are highly labour intensive crops. *Rain-fed uses substantially more labour than all other rice production systems per kg of rice* ($p<0.001$), 40 minutes for a single kilogram, approximately the same length of time to grow the rice as to eat it. This is 7, 6 and 3 times more than for HYV, SRI-TNS and Organic-TNS respectively. It is due first to the low yields, second, to the high weeding effort, and finally due to the use of bullocks rather than tractors for cultivation (seedbed and cultivation) and harvest. Why so much time is spent on weeding is uncertain, but is likely to be because it is physically harder to remove weeds from dry soil than from irrigated wet soil (dry soil is much harder in texture than wet soil) and because flooding inhibits weeds. Rain-fed harvesting is the only harvesting to be done without combine harvesters. While a harvester takes approximately an hour/acre, a pair of bullocks would typically need to work for over 40 hours per harvested acre.

Rain-fed rice is grown in regions with the lowest wage rates. It has the second highest costs after HYV AP, and the lowest profit ($p<0.001$) of all production systems.

	Minutes of labour kg^{-1}rice	% family labour	% female labour	Labour (hrs ha^{-1})	Total pay/kg rice	Total casual hrs ha^{-1}	Total casual pay ha^{-1}	Labour requirements hr / t *paddy*
HYV	6.1a	14.8	72.07	716	4.3	611	24802	123
Rainfe	39.9ab	78.7	46.95	1641	3.0	341	7740	820
SRI	6.5bc	64.2	51.06	1006	1.4	411	10210	133

HYV	14.5c	44.3	66.83	1436	4.1	836	19863	299
Organi	7.8a	2.1	55.81	710	4.4	661	19094	161

Table 35. Labour use and pay for rice production. Note the final column is measured as per tonne paddy rather than milled rice, for better comparison with other crops. In the first column, Means with lower case letters are significantly different ($p<0.001$)

If we assume that increased employment is a benefit, is rain-fed rice the most productive of work? It clearly is per kg of rice, but what about per hectare of farmland? From a hectare basis, the differences in labour requirements are less substantial. While it is still uses a significantly greater number of hours/ha compared to organic or HYV TN, the difference between labour demand in rain-fed rice and SRI or HYV in AP is not statistically significant.

Further, the quality of rain-fed agricultural employment is reduced by the high proportion of family labour in the rain-fed techno-system. Family labour is not paid a direct wage but obtains a share of the residual claim based on social status norms. Some farms use only family labour, and the average number of hours of wage-labour is the lowest of any farming system at 341 ha^{-1}, significantly less than organic, HYV AP or HYV TN, which provide 661, 836, and 611 hr ha^{-1} of employment respectively.

When measured as a direct contributor to the local economy, rain-fed rice fares even less well , providing Rs 7,740 of employment ha^{-1}, compared to a maximum of Rs 24,802 ha^{-1} from HYV TN. Apart from SRI TNS, rainfed rice farms contribute significantly less money to the local economy by way of employment multipliers than other production systems see Table 35.

Rainfed also requires significantly more labour ($p<0.001$), more than 5x that for organic rice, which is the next in terms of labour demand per kg. And the rate of pay for rainfed rice is lower than any of the other techno-systems. This last point is complicated to attribute – the labour rate is largely set by the local labour market characteristics. These are not independent of the production system, as without the low wage rates, such systems may not be viable at all. When we factor in the opportunity cost of family members working on the farm, it is likely that farm households are richer than labouring households, so are more likely to take advantage of better paid jobs. In Odissa, where labour costs are lowest, family labour represents 50% of the workforce, while HYV –TN and SRI-TNS represent 15% and 26% respectively.

If we compare labour in rice to that in other staples in other parts of the world, even the most efficient rice production system, SRI, is still highly labour intensive. A tonne of US wheat required 137hlabour 1800, 56 in 1880 and 1.67 in 1990s (Smil, 2006). If we multiply minutes kg^{-1} to hours per tonne (see Table 35) even the most intensive production system (SRI at 133 hr / tonne), with the use of tractors and harvesters, takes the same length of time to harvest a tonne now, as wheat did in the USA in 1800.

As mentioned above, HYV in AP requires substantially greater labour costs. But it is not just the total pay to labour that matters, but also how this is distributed, for example the balance between men (who tend to spend on themselves) and women (who tend to spend on the household). The two jobs that have been traditionally dominated by women – transplanting and weeding – have both shifted under SRI to a more equal gender balance. Transplanting has 19 times more female hours labour compared to males in HYV AP, while only 4 times the difference in SRI AP ($p<0.001$). Weeding has 25 times more female labour hours than male for HYV AP, while SRI AP has less than twice as many female labour hours compared to male. In both instances total labour also declines significantly (down to 0.57 and 0.63 of HYV for transplanting and weeding respectively to 174 and 300 respectively)[46].   In contrast, there was no significant change in gender balance between HYV AP and SRI AP for non SRI specific tasks, for example bund repair, cultivation, manure collection and spreading. The implications for the gender balance are not straightforward. For example the higher number of male labour hours increased the average hourly wage by 60%, but the overall bill was significantly lower due to reduced hours ($p<0.001$) (labour pay was constant/gender hour). Is this desirable, as the farmer saves money while labourers on average can take a higher wage, freeing women to get better jobs off the farm of become 'willing housewives' (J. Heyer, 2012, pers. comm), or undesirable as the most vulnerable in society (women) have even less access to work?

Another significant difference is the increasing proportion of family labour to non-family labour between HYV AP and SRI AP, from 0.44 to 0.61. It seems that this difference is due to the reduced total labour demand rather than the change in practices themselves, as almost identical hours of family labour are invested per hectare in both systems – 650 family hrs ha^{-1} for HYV AP, and 654 family hrs ha^{-1} for HYV AP ($p<0.001$). This suggests that the family labour is treated as a first priority resource, while casual labour is used whenever labour demand exceeds family labour supply.

The lack of family labour in organic farming suggests a high level of commercialisation in the techno-system, but with no HYV for a comparison, it is not possible to say if any of this is likely to relate to formal organic production systems, or if instead it is a reflection of the local socio-economic environment.

Including family labour

The apparent profitability of all farming techniques in part due to treating family labour as free. There is considerable literature about the appropriate way to include the value of family labour (Bauer, 2000). If the opportunity cost of family labour is assumed to be the casual labour rate, including it alters the costs and profits for all farming types, with the impact varying according to the proportion of family labour (seeTable 35) and the rate of pay for casual labour (see **Error! Reference source not found.**). The inclusion of family labour costs makes a dramatic change in costs and

[46] HYV TN is similar to HYV AP ($p>0.05$) for transplanting, HYV TN had no males involved in weeding

profitability, increasing the first by almost 1000% and decreasing the latter by over 5000%, **Error! Reference source not found. -** because the rate of return is already low . In contrast to rain-fed rice, the costs and profits of organic rice hardly change at all, due to the very low use of family labour. The inclusion of family labour has made organic production the most profitable per kg of rice, but SRI production is still the most profitable on a hectare basis.

Table 36.The impact of including an imputed cost for family labour on the different farming types. All farm types show an increase in costs, and thus a decrease in costs, but with considerable variation

	Cost increase (%)	Profit increase (%)	Actual profit /kg	Actual profit /ha
HYV AP	9	-16	2.5	17,753
Rainfed	949	-5489	-59.2	-136,873
SRI TNS	62	-31	5.4	54,843
HYV AP	68	-120	-0.8	-2,728
Organic TNS	4	-3	7.2	32,985

Increasing the rate of pay for labourers.

There is a correlation between increased farm wages and the introduction of the Mahatma Gandhi National Rural Employment Guarantee Act (NREGA) (Gulati et al., 2013). This has been attributed to the guaranteed income's enabling labourers to exercise bargaining power against farmers (Reddy, 2011) and it certainly receives adverse comments from farmers. With the exception of rain-fed rice farmers, every farmer who discussed NREGA stated that it had increased their costs, and many farmers in northern TN said that areas under crops were falling considerably due to 'lack of labour' which - on further questioning - meant lack of labour willing to work at rates farmers were willing to pay. This implies that farmers were not willing to pay more than they believed the labour would contribute to increasing profitability (Harberger, 1971). Indeed, they were prepared to forego entire seasons of production, rather than pay increased labour rates.

On simulating an increase in the rates that labour is paid, we find that the difference in costs is minimal on a percentage basis – never more than 11%, and that while profits are universally reduced, all farms still make a profit, see Table 37.

	Cost increase (%)	Profit increase (%)	Actual profit /kg	Actual profit /ha
HYV AP	6	-10	2.7	19,009
Rainfed	5	-29	0.8	4,778
SRI TNS	5	-3	7.6	75,729

HYV AP	9	-16	3.4	21,784
Organic TNS	11	-8	6.8	31,463

Table 37.The changes in costs and profits if all labour pay is increased by 25%. Note that these costs do not include imputed family labour.

Interactions

If we rank the different farming systems according to the different criteria we find that top ranking 'bests' are distributed across all techno-systems. Numerically SRI has the greatest number of 'bests' using the criteria below.

Table 38. The rank order of farming types by each criteria. The 'best' for each category is shaded in (ie the lowest water use, the highest wages)

	Yield	GHG/kg	Ground water /kg	Fossil energy /kg	Total energy /kg	Labour /kg	Daily wage (M)	Daily wage	Costs /kg	Profit /kg	% female labour	Labour / ha	Profits
HYV-TN	2	3	2	2	2	5	2	3	4	4	1	2	4
Rainfed	5	5		5	1	1	5	5	2	5	5	5	5
SRI - TNS	1	4	4	4	5	4	3	1	5	1	4	3	1
HYV AP - TNS	3	1	1	1	3	2	3	1	1	3	2	1	3
Organic - TNS	4	2	3	3	4	3	1	4	3	2	3	2	2

The clearest interaction is between energy and water. Even in HYV TN, irrigation is responsible for on average 58% of total energy use. Yet irrigation is minimally linked to any social or economic variables (Although in AP substantial labour (10%) was associated with irrigation, this was partly an attribution issue). Figure 6 shows how some sustainability criteria correlate in HYV TN farming systems. Of the three major sources of GHG emissions, reducing CH_4 emissions would have no impact on other aspects, reducing irrigation based emissions would also reduce total energy demand, as well as minor losses of labour demand and minor savings in costs. But synthetic fertilisers are the most complicated, important for GHG emissions, energy demand and costs, but not so important for labour demand. *Thus if an alternative to fertilisers were available (including using less) this could potentially offer multiple savings to the farmer, Indian energy and electricity supply, and climate change, with minimal losses in labour demand*.

In contrast, labour demand is highest for transplanting and weeding, where GHG emissions are zero, fossil energy use is zero, and while the costs are important (7 and 6% of total costs respectively) they do not dominate. Thus technological fixes for these two options could save the farmer some costs, but could also have substantial impacts on job availability.

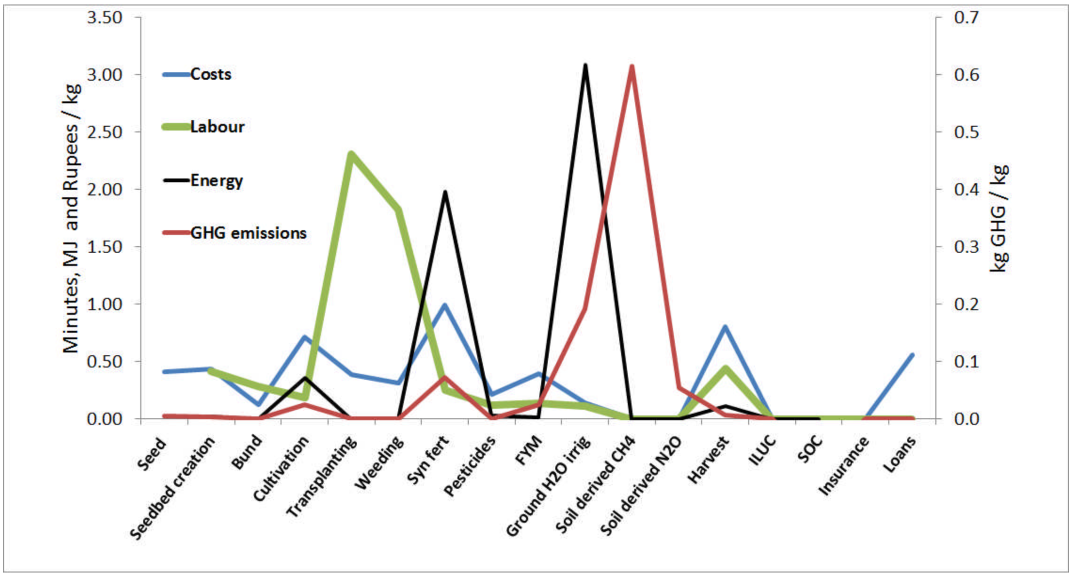


Figure 16. Costs, labour, fossil fuel energy and GHG emissions by stages inthe HYV TN rice production system per kilogram of rice. Note that the SOC should be negative (-0.075), but this is not displayed here.

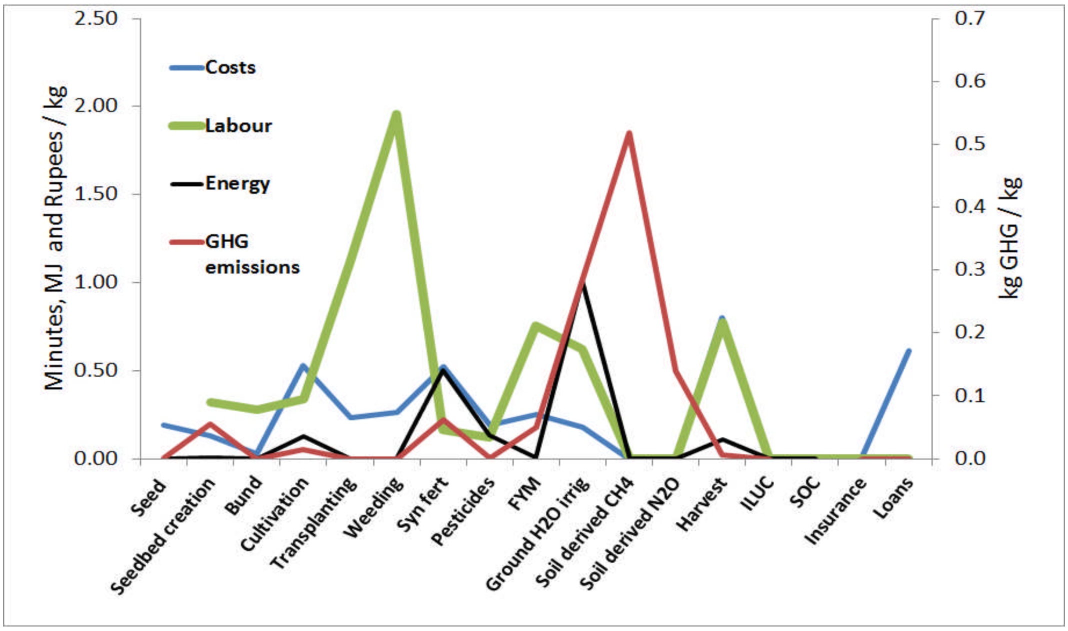


Figure 17. . Costs, labour, fossil fuel energy and GHG emissions by stage for SRI TNSper kilogram of rice. Note that the SOC should be negative (-0.035), but this is not displayed here. Note that costs entirely mirror labour at harvest

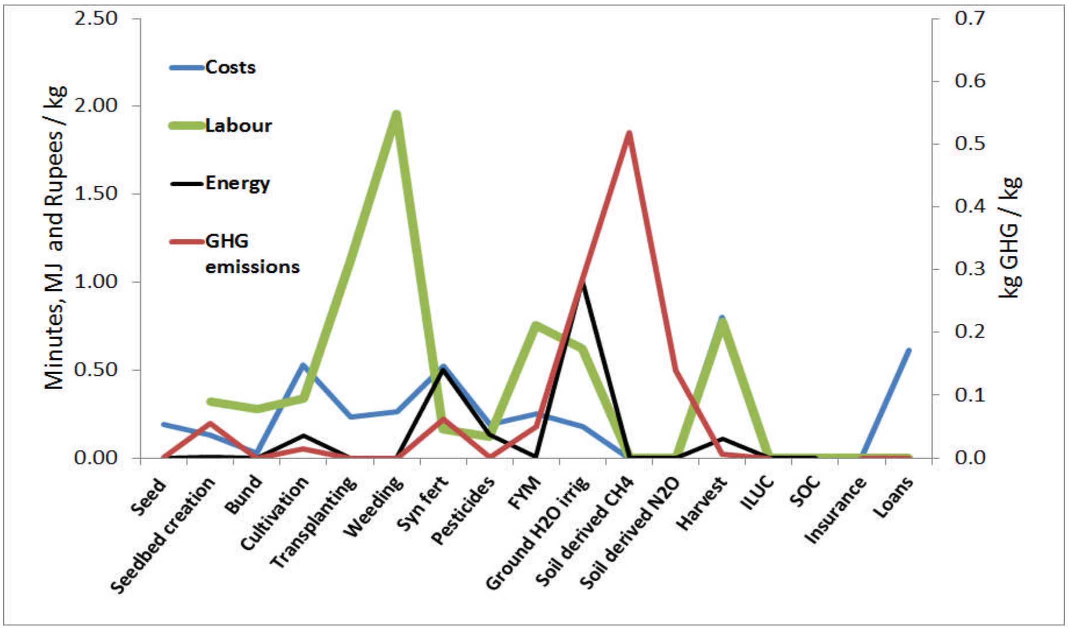


Figure 17 shows the same data, but for SRI TNS. The patterns are broadly the same, with an increase in labour use and shift in GHG emissions. While N_2O emissions are more important within the total GHG burden, like CH_4 they have no immediate correlation with costs, labour or energy. Labour is still dominated by transplanting and weeding, but transplanting now dominates both costs and labour use. Labour use, GHG emissions and costs are greater for FYM than those for HYV, and labour and its costs are now important at harvest.

Mapping out the data in this way allows a better understanding of how different aspects of rice production interact, and thus how changes in one area could affect others, but it does not provide a tool for prediction, because it is confined to identifying current correlations. The interactions also have relatively tight boundaries: for example, a shift from synthetic nitrogen to manure is likely to reduce energy demand, but does not show how other jobs in alternative sites and sectors might be affected - not only livelihoods in the fertiliser factory, but also those involved in wider service sectors to agriculture – e.g. transport and machine repair. It is possible that the loss of jobs associated with the industrialisation of agriculture is partly compensated for by increased jobs in the industries serving agriculture. These fields of work are beyond the boundaries of the model we are analysing here. Yet in the same way, informal jobs servicing ‘traditional’ agriculture (for example the manufacture and repair of bullock and hand operated tools) are also not included in this analysis – it is possible that the employment multipliers ofindustrial agriculture displace more jobs from the sector that serviced ‘traditional’ agriculture.

The pricing of electricity

Rates of return to agriculture are also enhanced by ignoring the presence of environmental externalities. Of these, two important and interlinked environmental externalities are the use of free electricity, and greenhouse gas emissions. Irrigation consumes 20% of India’s total electricity supply (Rao et al., 2009). The overuse in agriculture by farmers who have access to unmetered electricity reduces the availability of both electricity and water for the rest of society, as well as reducing the water table and thus water availability for farmers who do not have access to agricultural electricity. Electricity subsidies to farmers were first introduced in India in the 1970s, and are highly politicised. In1991 the electricity subsidy was increased to 100% in Tamil Nadu (Janakarajan. S., 2004). How would it affect farm budgets if charges were re-introduced?

A simulated electricity charge of Rs 2 /unit increases average costs and significantly reduces profits, of HYV, SRI TNS, HYV AP and organic TNS farming systems (seeTable 36) ($p<0.01$). But all systems still record a profit. If the baseline water table were set at the law levels of AP rather than that of northern TN, then the amount of electricity, and thus the fraction of costs associated with electricity, would increase dramatically, the simulation yielding a 38% reduction in profits associated with HYV AP.

But charging for electricity is only useful if it encourages a reduction in electricity use. As a cost lever it is quite strong (for example it would increase the portion of total costs associated with irrigation from 2.5 – 8%), and this change is likely to be politically resisted. Excluding rain-fed rice, the loss of profit due to simulated electricity charging was least with SRI TNS production techniques, due to the reduced water used. But switching to SRI is a complicated procedure that requires skills-acquisition from an expert extension service(Reddy and Venkatanarayana, 2013). If electricity charges were to be introduced, then this would best happen in conjunction with high quality extension support to teach farmers how they can farm with reduced water consumption.

Table 39.The impact of charging Rs 2 /unit for electricity in agriculture

	Cost increase (%)	Profit increase (%)	Actual profit /kg	Actual profit /ha
HYV AP	6	-11	2.6	18,742
Rainfed	0	0	1.1	5,536
SRI TNS	6	-3	7.6	75,454
HYV AP	22	-38	2.5	16,005
Organic TNS	10	-7	6.8	31,603

.

Charging for GHG emissions

Putting a Rs 0.736 / kg CO_2 price on GHG emissions (a form of 'Payment for Environmental Services' PES (Millennium Ecosystem Assessment, 2005)), eliminates most of the profit from paddy production, see

Table 40. But that is assuming a baseline of no carbon emissions, such that every kg

Table 40.The impact of installing a carbon price at Rs 0.736 / kg CO_2 (the price based on a 2010 CER, see Table 21).

	Cost increase (%)	Profit increase (%)	Actual profit /kg	Actual profit /ha
HYV AP	78	-140	-1.0	-7442
Rainfed	12	-27	1.6	6561
SRI TNS	80	-30	6.0	60755
HYV AP	101	-109	-0.5	-1897
Organic TNS	19	-11	7.6	35196

would be paid for. If instead HYV TN were simulated as a baseline for present GHG emissions, then SRI TNS and rain-fed rice would receive a minor compensatory payment (Rs 0.06 and 0.19 /kg) *as long as the baseline is measured per unit rice and not on an area basis.* SRI GHG emissions are higher on an area basis compared to HYV, so if HYV was used as a baseline, it would act as a tax for SRI compared to HYV of Rs 1,100/ha.

It is very important to set appropriate baselines that reward the behaviour that is intended to be promoted.

Transport

Transport is an anomaly throughout the supply chain, increasingly critical as rice is transported greater distances, but of relatively little environmental importance, responsible for just 3, <1 and 7% of GHG emissions, water and fossil energy use, for 750km of travel.

GHG emissions

GHG emissions from transport are based on diesel fuel. The lorry is assumed to last for 20 years (a conservative estimate), so that running emissions account for 0.1kg CO_2-eq/kg/750km journey (compared to 0.003 kg CO_2-eq/kg/750km). These represent 97% of total transport emissions, the remaining 3% associated with embodied emissions from the manufacture of the lorry. This pattern of low ‘embodied’vshigher ‘use’ emissions is typical for high (fossil) energy using systems such as lorries using diesel and factories using electricity.

Costs.

In contrast to all other parts of the system, for transport there is a strong correlation between the sources of GHG emissions and costs. Together, diesel and capital costs (excluding loans) account for 50% of total costs. Yet when compared to the breakdown of the transport GHG profile, capital costs are out of proportion; capital costs account for approximately equal costs to maintenance costs, while account for only 3% of total GHG emissions. This has negative ramifications for incentives to buy fuel-efficient vehicles. As long as the capital cost of purchase is high, then it is likely the running costs will be less of a concern, especially if purchasers have high personal discount rates.

Including capital, diesel and labour costs, now simulated over a journey distance of 750km, transport costs average Rs 0.95 /kg rice. This is a small fraction of the value added in farming and milling, although the differences – 11 and 10% respectively – are substantially smaller than those for GHG emissions.

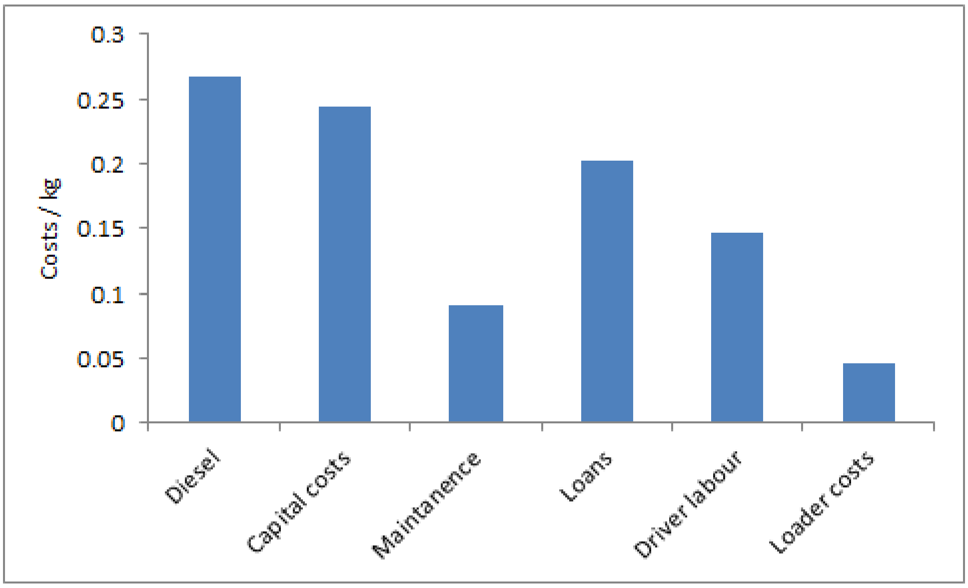


Figure 18. Costs for road transport/100km

Labour.
Almost exactly equal amounts of labour are used per km for driving and loading: 1.37 and 1.41 minutes/kg of rice. Loaders are paid more per kg of rice, assuming two journeys, at Rs 0.18/kg compared to Rs 0.15 /kg for the driver. The typical driver was paid Rs 600 / day, compared to Rs 3.5/sack(Rs 0.05/kg) for loading and Rs 3/sack (Rs 0.04/kg) for unloading. The estimated daily wage for loaders is Rs 150-180.

Milling

Milling has developed radically over the last 40 years technologies splitting into two main categories, Large Modern Rice Mills and small huller mills – the latter for many years the mainstay of Indian rice milling (see Figure 19 (a) and (b))(Harriss, 1977b). Modern rice mills (MRMs) can be fully or partially automated, but for the purposes of this research, we treat all MRMs as a single category. Modern rice mills are several orders of magnitude larger than small huller mills, for example some MRMs process in a single day three times what a huller mills in a year (30t day^{-1} compared to ca10t yr^{-1}). They also produce a much 'higher quality' product – ie uniform, whole white grains, using high tech colour graders (Figure 19 (d)) that robotically remove discoloured grains (although requiring air conditioning due to the sensitivity of their camera circuit boards). A further difference is that these large mills tend to both parboil *and* mill the paddy in an automated process, while huller mills milled paddy, but didn't always parboil on site[47]. And automated MRM parboil to a very high quality specification. All of this has implications for the social, economic and environmental impact of milling.

Figure 19 Clockwise from top left. (a)A traditional huller mill that dominated Indian milling until 20 years ago (b) a fully automated modern rice mill, capable of processing 30t of paddy a day (Arni, Tamil Nadu) ((c) An automatic rice colour sorting machine, costing in the region of £20,000 and requiring an air-conditioned environment (d) A parboiling chimney

At present, large mills are responsible for 13%, 9% and 28% of the GHG emissions, water and fossil energy used by the whole rice supply chain. The water is used for soaking the paddy and then steaming it during the parboiling process. Figure 20 below shows the constituent parts of GHG emissions for MRM milling. Electricity is crucial due to the increasingly automated modern rice mills, replacing the free heat of the sun by mechanical drying and now representing 56% of total milling emissions and 0.09kg CO_2-eq for every kg of rice. The diesel emissions are a reflection of the irregularity of electricity. Only 30% of mills had diesel generators, but even this low number produced an average of almost 20% of total mill emissions.

[47] The MRM and huller is not binary division, there are also large huller mills that are semi-automated.

Biomass
The inclusion of data for biomass use is controversial; biomass is deemed carbon neutral in many LCAs. As discussed in the section on methods, the CO_2 released is considered carbon neutral, but other GHGs associated with inefficient combustion – often a specific problem with high silica rich rice husk – are included, and - as can be seen - contribute considerably to pollution.

All parboiled rice used biomass, even when parboiled in a farmers back yard, but the high capital intensity of modern rice mills has meant that the traditional form of drying – using the sun in a dryng yard (kalam), has been replaced by mechanisation so that the mill can mass-produce all year round, including during the monsoon.[48]

Biomass was responsible for 26% of mill based GHG emissions. It is used for parboiling and drying rice. Sometime a single boiler performed both tasks, sometime each task had a dedicated boiler. A range of biomass types were used, from high quality firewood (beautiful, enormous tamarind trunks), grubbed up casuarina stumps, coconut husks, ground nut husk, and rice husk. In principle, biomass can be burnt to produce (almost) CO_2 and water, but in reality GHGs and wider pollutants are emitted from incomplete combustion, including CO, CH_4, N_2O, polycyclic aromatic hydrocarbons, black carbon and other organic compounds (Bhattacharya et al., 2000).

The relative GHG emissions from local power production, e.g. diesel generators, vs grid based production is highly dependent upon the efficiency of the grid. Efficient central generation combined with minimal transmission and distribution losses is the most efficient production system (MacKay, 2009), but in India local generation is likely to be more efficient (Nelson et al., 2009) due to the relatively low efficiency of grid generation combined with very high T and D losses (Alagh, 2010).

In principle mills could be made almost entirely carbon neutral because unlike farming they have few intrinsic pollutants (such as N_2O and CH_4 in aerobic and flooded fields respectively). Instead emissions are dominated by energy production, every part of which can in principle be de-carbonised.

[48] 'Craft' parboiling evolved in eastern India as a way of storing paddy underwater during monsoons prior to rapid drying in episodes of intense sunshine. The result was effective but produced a stink which has now been removed with the latest parboiling technology (Harriss, B. (1976) Paddy Processing in India and Sri Lanka: A Review of the Case for Technological Innovation' Tropical Science 18, 161-186.; Harriss-White 2011).

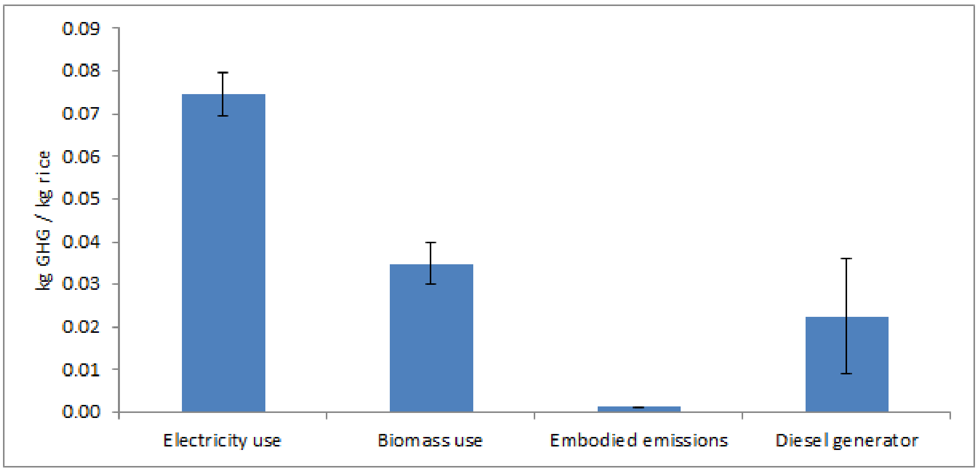


Figure 20. Milling is responsible for 13% of the entire rice supply chain's GHG emissions. This figure shows the constituent components of the total. Note the very large error bars for diesel generators, only 30% of mills used diesel generators, but when they did, the impact was substantial. Error bars = 1 S.E.

Figure 20 also shows the small importance of embodied emissions compared to running emissions. Some of the mills we studied are of considerable size with many hundreds of tonnes of concrete and steel, yet embodied emissions are still responsible for less than 1% of total emissions. This is due to the sheer quantity of material that passes through these buildings – working typically 11 months of the year, at capacities of up to 30t day^{-1} - combined with the energy intensity of the parboiling, milling and drying process.

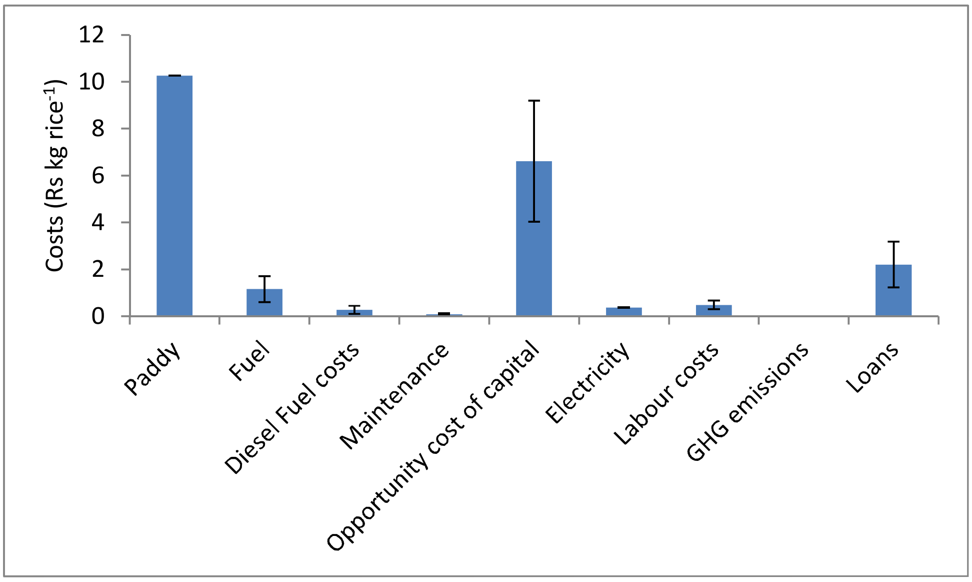


Figure 21. Costs for the mill

This is in direct contrast to the structure of costs .After the cost of paddy, finance rather than running costs dominate mill accounts, see Figure 21, showing the MRM's capital intensity. This is in great contrast to old style huller mills – for example the four custom millers interviewed as part of this study had an average opportunity costof capital (calculated as the income that would have been available from interest if the capital value of the mill was in government backed securities, see Table 20) of only 6% of total costs, compared to the mean of 26% of total costs for modern rice mills. Using estimates of value from the mill owners, the average mill is worth Rs1.33m, operating for a single year at an average of Rs 104 / kg of rice. Thus the opportunity cost of this capital, assuming an interest rate of 8.52%, is Rs 6.6/kg. In combination with Rs 2.2 of loans, this results in Rs 8.8 /kg of rice, considerably higher than the Rs 1.0/kg costs of fuel, maintenance, and labour. So there is a big disjuncture between the major costs and the major sources of GHG – costs are dominated by loans and opportunity cost, GHG emissions are dominated entirely by fuel. Every mill owner was asked if fuel efficiency was an issue when he was buying his boilers, and not one said yes. This disjuncture goes some way to explain their lack of concern.

MRMs are highly efficient and productive with respect to labour, an average of just 0.7minute (i.e. just 5 seconds)/kg of rice. This efficiency is positively related to mill scale ($p<0.05$). For example the 5 smallest modern rice mills used 2.5 times more labour than the 5 largest (measured in rice output per year).

This efficiency in labour use is reflected in total energy (where human labour represents only 0.3% of total energy use) and in the cost structure, where labour represents only 3% of the total costs,Table 22 andFigure 14. The labour costs of modern rice mills represent just 3% of total costs. In contrast, labour is a substantial component of farming costs. Weeding and transplanting for instance incur labour costs alone – but they represent 12% of total costs for HYV cultivation. Fossil and biomass energy have displaced labour on a grand scale. For example fully automated MRMs have entirely replaced the solar and female energy associated with drying par-boiled paddy on drying yards, although some of these mills still used drying yards opportunistically for some of their paddy. We do not have the breakdown of energy associated with specific jobs, but the expensive nature of electricity combined with the low costs of (female) labour suggest that this is a curious arrangement.[49]

Increasing the price of labour

Labour is now a small fraction of the total milling cost. If labour costs were increased by 25% then the simulated total costs increase by less than 1% (0.7%) and the profit decreases by 1.7%.

[49] 1. Technological change should lower costs of production per unit and discard the costliest factor of production. The evolution of milling does neither, costing more – requiring the rebranding of rice and the creation of a premium segment in the market and discarding the cheapest and politically weakest factor - casual female labour. Harriss-White (2011) has suggested that millers benefit more from the changes in social status associated with not employing dalit women than they lose in costs. 2. The impact of labour on total costs here is a partial underestimate due to the role of unpaid family labour, representing 11% of total labour time in mill supervision.

Charging for electricity

Electricity is already charged at a high rate – industry subsidises domestic and agricultural consumers, so that electricity in India is amongst the highest price in the world, (Rao et al., 2009). This represents 1.7% of total costs/kg paddy, or 2.4% of costs excluding capital costs.

Charging for GHGs

Charging for GHG emissions makes even less difference than increasing wages to labour by 25%. Costs increase by 0.5% and profits decrease by 1.4%.[50] The insignificance of such a charge, while shifting a policy on externalities to politically controversial ground, would do little to drive GHG efficient behaviour, as the costs of finance still dominate.

Retail

Data for retail is limited, as data collection from retail owners/managers faced the suspicion of the investigating team – and it is thought of uncertain quality too. From the data we have, all retail units make a profit, but only a marginal profit per kg of rice. The profit is higher, but not significantly so, in small rather than large retail outlets, while the costs are substantially lower for small retail. The ability of small retail to have such low costs compared to large retail is largely due to family labour. Several small retail outlets were family enterprises.

GHG emissions are substantially lower for small rather than large retail, and this difference is entirely dominated by the much higher electricity demand of larger stores. The allocation of electricity to rice was done on an economic basis – the proportion of total turnover associated with rice. We do not yet have the data fully to understand where the electricity is being used in the larger stores – if it is for air conditioning, then the economic basis is a fair way to allocate emissions, but if an important proportion of total electricity is for cooling refrigerated/frozen products, then this allocation method could exaggerate the pollution from rice.

The embodied emissions are higher from larger stores due to the greater floor area per unit rice. Small stores sold an estimated 8389kg m-2, while larger stores sold 6430 kg/m2.

The difference between fossil and total energy mirrors the difference in labour requirements/kg of rice. Small stores used an average of 4.75 units of labour per kg of rice sold, compared to 0.29 in larger stores.

[50] Note that these costs are not cumulative throughout the supply chain – the increase in costs does not include any increase in costs associated with a GHG charge for agricultural emissions.

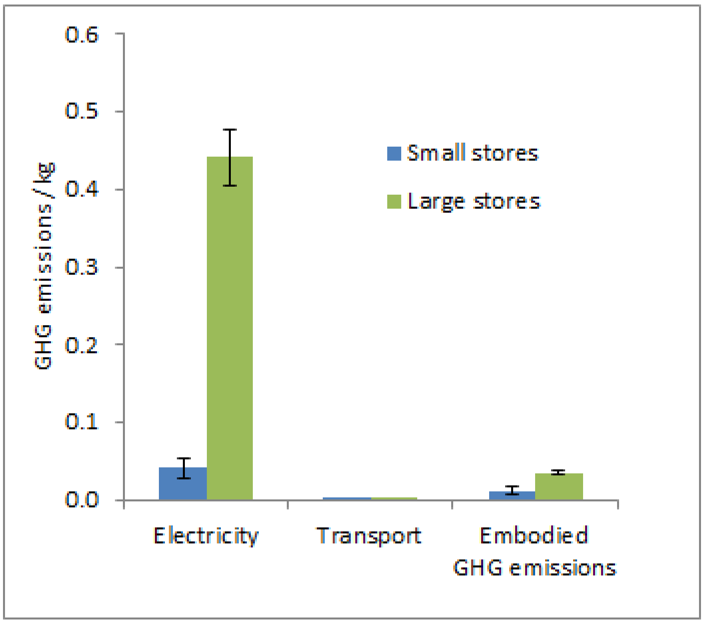


Figure 22. GHG emissions / kg rice from small and large stores.

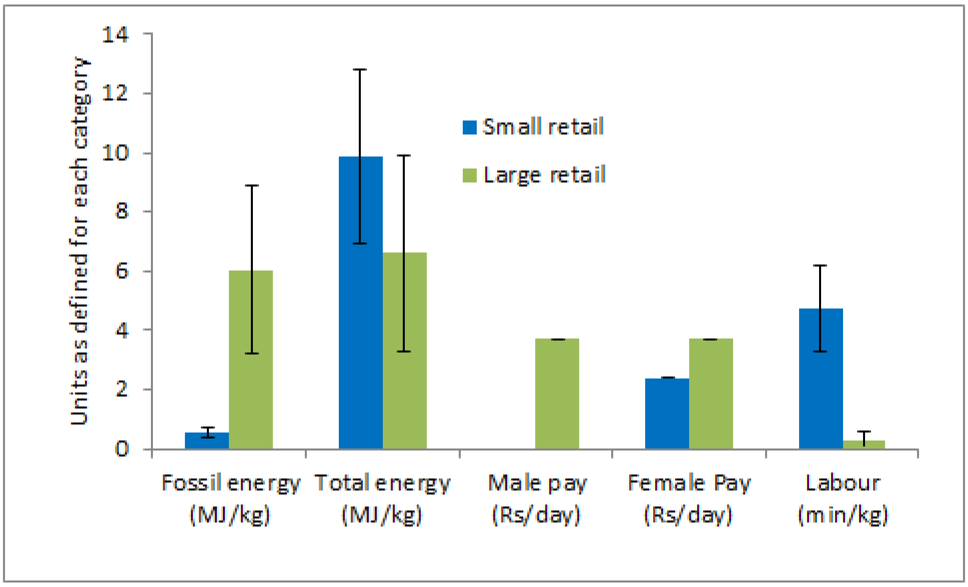


Figure 23. Energy, wages and work per kg of rice sold from small and large retail outlets.

Conclusions

Over the entire production-distribution chain, a typical kg of rice:

Produces 1.01 kg CO_2-eq,

requires2.5 - 4.24t ground water,

takes between 13 and 50 minutes to produce,

and produces Rs 9.9 of profit through the supply chain.

Within the supply chain, agriculture dominates the environmental impacts and labour demand, but has the poorest quality of labour – pay is highestin transport for men and in retail for women.

In the different production techno-systems, the GHG emissions are not significantly different from each other - at just under 1kg CO_2-eq / kg of rice. But the constituent emissions vary considerably. HYV and organic are dominated by soil methane and Co2 from irrigation, SRI is dominated by soil derived methane and fertiliser derived nitrous oxide emissions (from manufacture, on site and off site locations), while rain-fed is dominated by nitrous oxide, followed by bullock derived methane.

Irrigation water use was highest in the HYV production systems, and lowest - zero - for rain-fed rice, but interestingly, when measured on an area basis, while rain-fed rice used less water than HYV systems, the difference was not statistically significant.

Rain-fed rice requires the largest quantity of labour per kg of rice (40 minutes), but while it is also the largest single user of labour per hectare (1641 hrs ha^{-1}) it is not significantly different per unit area to SRI (1006 hr ha^{-1}). Combined with the very high proportion of family labour in rain-fed agriculture, the number of casual labour hours is lowest for rain-fed agriculture out of all the production systems.

In terms of profit, excluding land values from the cost structure, SRI was significantly more profitable than the other rice production systems.

Yet SRI is not proving as popular on the ground as these results would suggest, possibly due to the additional hassle factor associated with transplanting of younger seedlings, combined with the narrower window of time for transplanting and the unpopular nature of lone weeding (Reddy and Venkatanarayana, 2013).

Organic paddy benefits from a high paddy value, compensating for its marginally lower yields. It also saves both costs and GHG emissions through avoiding synthetic fertilisers or pesticides. But the overall emissions are still elevated due to the average yield combined with high levels of the kind of inputs producing high methane emissions. *Were organic agriculture to use SRI techniques, and the yield benefit to be maintained in the new system, organic SRI would offer substantial gains on all measures compared to other production technologies.*

The cost of labouris a very small part of the total cost for agriculture, transport and mills, although it can be an important component in retail, especially in large stores.

Labour quality, as measured by pay, improves going up the supply chain. Agricultural labour tends to be the worst paid (with exceptions in some areas for specific jobs such as ploughing), and retail the best. At every stage in the supply chain wages could bebe increased by 25% without substantial changes to the profit of the enterprises.

At present there is little incentive to reduce environmental impacts byany sector in the supply chain with the exception of transport, where emissions are relatively closely correlated with costs. Yet transport is only responsible for 3% of total GHG emissions. One way to increase the correlation between costs and emissions would be the introduction of electricity charges. This is politically very sensitive (Janakarajan. S., 2004), but our simulation of electricity charging has a substantial impact on costs. Indeed, assuming a water table comparable to that in AP, it would make HYV farming unprofitable.

The interactions of employment, food provision, pollution and profit are highly variable; even for a single supply chain in a single region of one country. Yet mapping the system shows where hotspots occur and trade-offs occur. There is no silver bullet to improve any aspect of the rice supply chain. Sustainability criteria always face trade-offs. And all options discussed in this paper are controversial or could only be implemented with major interventions.

References

Abraham, V., (2008) Employment growth in rural India: distress driven?, Working Paper, Centre for Development Studies, Trivandrum.

Adusumilli, R., Bhagya Laxmi, S. (2011) Potential of the system of rice intensification for systemic improvement in rice production and water use: the case of Andhra Pradesh, India. Paddy and Water Environment 9, 89-97.

Alagh, Y., (2010) Transmission and Distribution of Electricity in India Regulation, Investment and Efficiency. OECD, Indian Institute of Rural Management, Anand (Gijarat).

Bauer, K. (2000) Modelling Agricultural labour response to market developments during transition. idara Working Paper.

Bhattacharya, S.C., Abdul Salam, P., Sharma, M. (2000) Emissions from biomass energy use in some selected Asian countries. Energy 25, 169-188.

Binswanger, H.P., (1985) Agricultural mechanization: a comparative historical perspective., World Bank Research Observer. World Bank,, Washington, DC, USA.

Blengini, G.A., Busto, M. (2009) The life cycle of rice: LCA of alternative agri-food chain management systems in Vercelli (Italy). Journal of Environmental Management 90, 1512-1522.

Blythe, R. (2011) At the Yeoman's House, p26. Enitharmon, London, UK.

CEA, (2011) CO2 Baseline Databas for the Indian Power Sector, User Guide, version 6.0. Central Electricity Authority, Ministry of Powrer, Sewa Bhawan, New Delhi, India.

Corbridge, S., Harriss, J., C., J., (Forthcoming) ‘Lopsided’, ‘Failed’, or ‘Tortuous’: India’s Problematic Transition and its Implications for Labour, in: Davin, D., B., H.-W. (Eds.), China-India: Paths of Economic and Social Development. Proceedings of the British Academy, London,.

Crutzen, P.J. (2002) Geology of mankind. Nature 415, 23-23.

CSE, (2012) Into the Furnace. Green rating project of Indian Iron and Steel Sector., in: CSE (Ed.). CSE, Delhi, India, p. 256.

Deepak, K.M., (2013) Rain fed Rice in Odisha: Production and Exchange Relations, Technology, Jobs and A Lower Carbon Future: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy (The case of rice in India), New Delhi, India.

Directive 2009/28/EC., (2009) On the promotion of the use of energy from renewable sources and amending and subsequently repealing Directives 2001/77/EC and 2003/30/EC, in: Union, O.J.o.t.E. (Ed.), http://eur-lex.europa.eu/LexUriServ/LexUriServ.do?uri=Oj:L:2009:140:0016:0062:en:PDF.

Foley, J.A., Ramankutty, N., Brauman, K.A., Cassidy, E.S., Gerber, J.S., Johnston, M., Mueller, N.D., O/'Connell, C., Ray, D.K., West, P.C., Balzer, C., Bennett, E.M., Carpenter, S.R., Hill, J., Monfreda, C., Polasky, S., Rockstrom, J., Sheehan, J., Siebert, S., Tilman, D., Zaks, D.P.M. (2011) Solutions for a cultivated planet. Nature 478, 337-342.

Foresight, (2011) The Future of Food and Farming, Final Project Report, in: The Government Office for Science (Ed.), London.

Gathorne-Hardy, A., (2013a) Greenhouse gas emissions from rice, Working paper,, http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/sites/sias/files/documents/GHG%20emissions%20from%20rice%20-%20%20working%20paper.pdf.

Gathorne-Hardy, A., (2013b) Life cycle assessment of four rice production systems: High Yielding Varieties, Rainfed, System of Rice Intensification and Organic, in: Harriss-White, B. (Ed.), Technology, Jobs and A Lower Carbon Future: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy (The case of rice in India) New Delhi.

Godfray, H.C.J., Beddington, J.R., Crute, I.R., Haddad, L., Lawrence, D., Muir, J.F., Pretty, J., Robinson, S., Thomas, S.M., Toulmin, C. (2010) Food Security: The Challenge of Feeding 9 Billion People. Science 327, 812-818.

Gulati, A., Jain, S., Satija, N., (2013) Rising Farm Wages in India The ‘Pull’ and ‘Push’ Factors, Discussion Paper No. 5 Commission for Agricultural Costs and Prices, New Delhi, India.

Gumaste, S.G., Embodied energy computations in buildings Department of Civil Engg., Walchand College of Engineering, Vishrambag, Sangli,.

Haefele, S.M., Jabbar, S.M.A., Siopongco, J.D.L.C., Tirol-Padre, A., Amarante, S.T., Sta Cruz, P.C., Cosico, W.C. (2008) Nitrogen use efficiency in selected rice (Oryza sativa L.) genotypes under different water regimes and nitrogen levels. Field Crops Research 107, 137-146.

Harberger, A.C. (1971) On Measuring the Social Opportunity Cost of Labour. International Labor Review 103, 559
Harriss-White, B. (1996) A Political Economy of Agricultural Markets of South India: Masters of the Countryside. Sage Publications, New Delhi.
Harriss-White, B. (2003) India Working: Essays on Society and Economy. Cambridge University Press., Cambridge, UK.
Harriss-White, B. (2008) Rural Commercial Capital: Agricultural Markets in West Bengal. OUP, Oxford.
Harriss-White, B. (2012) Urbanography: Long-term urban studies, theory, methods and finsings in Arni and its region.
Harriss-White, B., Adam, C., A., S., (2007) Chapter 7: Summary and Conclusions, in: Harriss-White, B., Sinha, A. (Eds.), Trade liberalization and India's informal economy. Oxford University Press, Oxford.
Harriss, B. (1976) Paddy Processing in India and Sri Lanka: A Review of the Case for Technological Innovation' Tropical Science 18, 161-186.
Harriss, B., (1977a) Paddy Milling: Problems in Policy and the Choice of Technology' in: Farmer, B.H. (Ed.), Green Revolution? Macmillan pp. 276-300.
Harriss, B. (1977b) Piecemeal planning in rice markets : the effects of partial government intervention on marketing efficiency in a South Indian district. School of Development Studies, University of East Anglia Norwich.
Hull, K., (2009) Understanding the Relationship between Economic Growth, Employment and Poverty Reduction, in: DAC Network on Poverty Reduction (POVNET) (Ed.), Promoting Pro-Poor Growth: Employment OECD, , http://www.oecd.org/dac/povertyreduction/43514554.pdf.
ILO, (1999) Decent Work: Report of the Director General., International Labour Conference, 87th Sessions, Geneva.
Janakarajan. S., (2004) Populism and Electricity in Rural Tamil Nadu, in: Harriss-White, B., S., J. (Eds.), Rural India facing the 21st Century, Essays on Long Term Village Change and Recent development Policy. Wimbledon Publishing Company, Wimbledon, London, p. 231.
Kumar Mandal, S., Madheswaran, S. (2010) Environmental efficiency of the Indian cement industry: An interstate analysis. Energy Policy 38, 1108-1118.
Latif, M.A., Islam, M.R., Ali, M.Y., Saleque, M.A. (2005) Validation of the system of rice intensification (SRI) in Bangladesh. Field Crops Research 93, 281-292.
Lorano, E., (2005) Quality in work: Dimension and Indicators in the Framework of the European Emplyment Strategy, in: UNECE/ILO/Eurostat Seminar on the Quality of Work (Ed.), Working Paper no. 2., Geneva.
MacKay, D.J.C. (2009) Sustainable Energy: Without the Hot Air. Cambridge, UIT, Cambridge.
Millennium Ecosystem Assessment, (2005) Ecosystems and human well-being: the assessment series (four volumes and summary). Read more: http://www.esajournals.org/doi/full/10.1890/080025, Washington, DC
Mody, G., Mani, M., Sukumar, M., (2013a) Employment and working conditions, and the procurement process for commodities in retail - a case study of rice in Chennai. http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/resources-greenhouse-gases-technology-and-jobs-indias-informal-economy-case-rice.
Mody, G., Mani, M., Sukumar, M. (2013b) Labour patterns within the informal food sector.
Nelson, G.C., Robertson, R., Msangi, S., Zhu, T., Liao, X., Jawajar, P., (2009) Greenhouse Gas Mitigation. Issues for Indian Agriculture. In IFPRI Discussion Paper 00900. International Food Policy Research Unit, Washington.
Pelletier, N., Audsley, E., Brodt, S., Garnett, T., Henriksson, P., Kendall, A., Kramer, K.J., Murphy, D., Nemecek, T., Troell, M. (2011) Energy Intensity of Agriculture and Food Systems. Annual Review of Environment and Resources 36, 223-246.
Peng, S., Buresh, R.J., Huang, J., Yang, J., Zou, Y., Zhong, X., Wang, G., Zhang, F. (2006) Strategies for overcoming low agronomic nitrogen use efficiency in irrigated rice systems in China. Field Crops Research 96, 37-47.
Rao, N., Sant, G., Rajan, S.C., Gambhir, A., Gadag, G., (2009) An overview of Indian Energy Trends: Low Carbon Growth and Development Challenges. Prayas, Pune, India.

Reddy, D.N. (2011) NREGS and Indian Agriculture: Opportunities and Challenges. Bepress http://works.bepress.com/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=1013&context=narasimha_reddy.
Reddy, D.N. and Venkataranarayana M., (2013) SRI Cultivation in Andhra Pradesh: Achievements, Problems and Implications for GHGs and Work, in: Harriss-White, B. (Ed.), Technology, Jobs and A Lower Carbon Future: Methods, Substance and Ideas for the Informal Economy (The case of rice in India) Delhi.
Rockstrom, J., Steffen, W., Noone, K., Persson, A., Chapin, F.S., Lambin, E.F., Lenton, T.M., Scheffer, M., Folke, C., Schellnhuber, H.J., Nykvist, B., de Wit, C.A., Hughes, T., van der Leeuw, S., Rodhe, H., Sorlin, S., Snyder, P.K., Costanza, R., Svedin, U., Falkenmark, M., Karlberg, L., Corell, R.W., Fabry, V.J., Hansen, J., Walker, B., Liverman, D., Richardson, K., Crutzen, P., Foley, J.A. (2009) A safe operating space for humanity. Nature 461, 472-475.
Searchinger, T., Heimlich, R., Houghton, R.A., Dong, F., Elobeid, A., Fabiosa, J., Tokgoz, S., Hayes, D., Yu, T.-H. (2008) Use of U.S. Croplands for Biofuels Increases Greenhouse Gases Through Emissions from Land-Use Change. Science 319, 1238-1240.
Singh, Y.V. (2013) Crop and water productivity as influenced by rice cultivation methods under organic and inorganic sources of nutrient supply. Paddy and Water Environment 11, 531-542.
Smil, V. (2006) Energy In Nature And Society General Energetics of Complex Systems. MIT Press, Boston.
Uphoff, N., (2008) The System of Rice Intensification (SRI) as a System of Agricultural Innovation, http://repository.ipb.ac.id/handle/123456789/43778.
Williams, A.G., Audsley, E., Sandars, D.L., (2006) Determining the environmental burdens and resource use in the production of agricultural and horticultural commodities. Cranfield University and Defra, Bedford.

SRI CULTIVATION IN ANDHRA PRADESH: ACHIEVEMENTS, PROBLEMS AND IMPLICATIONS FOR GHGS AND WORK

D.N. Reddy

SRI CULTIVATION IN ANDHRA PRADESH: ACHIEVEMENTS, PROBLEMS AND IMPLICATIONS FOR GHGS AND WORK

D. Narasimha Reddy[€] and M. Venkatanarayana[£¥]

System of Rice Intensification (SRI): Evidence for its Superiority

1.1 Introduction

Rice is one of the most important staple food-grains, and ranks third in production among food-grain crops in the world next to maize and wheat. It is also the most irrigation-intensive crop in the world: more than two-thirds of irrigated area is under rice cultivation. However, it is the only cereal crop that can grow under both flooded and dry conditions. The practices of rice cultivation have undergone changes over time from simple broadcasting to systematic transplantation. Though an enduring feature of rice is water intensity, it is cultivated not only in the humid and high rainfall areas but also in semi-arid regions, by tapping ground water resources.

However, the increasing demand and the resulting pressure on scarce water resources, particularly ground water, calls for water use efficiency in agriculture, semi-arid tropical rice in particular. Water efficiency has also become an important issue in the context of climate change and the rising emission of greenhouse gases (GHGs). The major greenhouse gases are carbon dioxide (CO2), methane and nitrous oxide. Many anthropogenic activities contribute to the release of these greenhouse gases. Agricultural activities in general and rice cultivation -following the conventional flood or submerge method in particular - contribute to emissions (see Gathorne-Hardy 2013). In the submerge method, standing water in the rice fields generates water evaporation, methane and nitrous oxide; fertiliser generates nitrous oxide. Especially in semi-arid regions, ground water is lifted using energy generated through the combustion of fossil fuels which are powerful emitters of carbon dioxide (CO2).

Strategies and solutions to meet the challenges of GHGs call for new methods and technologies. Potential options for the rice industry sector to contribute to the mitigation of, and adaptation to, climate change by increasing rice production in a physically sustainable manner are attracting growing research interest. One such area of interest is the new method of rice cultivation: the System of Rice Intensification (SRI). SRI is an innovative approach to rice cultivation but not a technology as

---

[€]Professor, S R Sankaran Chair (Rural Labour), NIRD, Hyderabad.
[£]Junior Research Officer, S R Sankaran Chair, NIRD, Hyderabad.
[¥]The authors are grateful to Prof. Barbara Harriss White for her helpful comments on earlier drafts of the paper. (This is one of the background papers of the project "Measuring Materiality in Informal Production-Distribution Systems").

such. Unlike conventional rice cultivation methods that use flooding/submergence and are prone to the emission of greenhouse gases, the SRI method requires substantially less water, resulting in important energy savings from pumping. In turn this not only improves water use efficiency but also increases yields and- with less seed, water, pesticides and chemical fertilizers - results in reduced costs of cultivation as will be evident from the data presented later in this paper. The net effect is that SRI is able to improve household incomes and food security while reducing the negative environmental impacts of rice production, and making food production more resilient (Africare_Oxfam AmericaWWF-ICRISAT Project, 2010).

The evolution of the SRI technique of rice cultivation has shown that the core components of the Green Revolution–high doses of fertilisers, pesticides and water - are not necessary to achieve increased yields (Uphoff, ud 1).The principles of SRI contest the belief that rice plants do better in saturated soils, and prove that rice plants can grow in soils under modest moisture condition without being continuously flooded. The development of SRI also established that farmers are not always at the receiving end of science and technology developed by research establishments, for farmers themselves have been shown to make innovations in farming methods and practices.

1.2 The Shift to SRI: Readjustments in Agronomic Practices and Operational Methods

The shift from conventional rice cultivation to SRI involves changes in some agronomic practices. For instance certain studies identify the use of single seedlings per hill, transplanting younger seedlings of less than 15 days, square planting (25 x 25 cm) and cona-weeding as the four core SRI-practices (Laulanie, 1992 & 2011, Palanisami et.al. 2013). Timely scheduling acquires considerable significance so will be discussed briefly here.

Unlike transplanting relatively older (30 to 45 days) seedlings oat the density of three or four per hill as is the convention, for SRI, the seedlings are young (8 to 14 days old at the two-leaf stage) and single seedlings are transplanted in a wider square grid laid out with the help of a marker. The sparse transplanting of single seedlings under SRI reduces the seed requirement to an eighth to a tenth of that of conventional transplanting, and reduces labour requirement by almost half. But the transplanting of single, young seedlings is a delicate operation, requiring skill gained through experience. Transplanting continues to be an operation confined to women, but with reduced numbers and improved skills, which women acquire without difficulty.

Weeding is a second SRI operation differing from conventional cultivation practices in a number of respects. First, for SRI, manual weeding is displaced by a mechanical weeder. Whereas under conventional rice production, weeding is an entirely female operation, in SRI it is evolving into male work, though there are exceptional instances of female labour. Then, SRI requires early and more frequent weeding, from the tenth day after transplanting, and followed by three or four iterations with a gap of ten days in between. Early and frequent mechanical weeding crushes tender weeds into the soil to serve as a green manure, enriching both the soil and the crop. One observation often heard at the field level, is that mechanical weeding is arduous and monotonous, especially when a lone worker is engaged in it.

The most critical aspect of transition from the conventional system to SRI is the need for timely and intensive crop management. While conventional practices cope with the need for flexibility at all stages of growth, right from the possibility of transplanting older seedlings (30 to 45 days), through random and relatively thick transplanting (by using five or six seedlings at a spot and inundating the field with irrigation water without any need to drain it. By contrast, SRI requires early and more systematic transplanting, timely and frequent weeding and 'alternate wetting and drying' instead of flooding.

1.3SRI and Greenhouse Gases (GHGs)

As mentioned above, the greenhouse gases with high global warming potentials (GWP) in the atmosphere are, in order of their importance, Carbon Dioxide (CO_2), Methane (CH_4), and Nitrous Oxide (N_2O). The contribution of each gas to the greenhouse effect depends on the quantity emitted, the radiative force and their atmospheric life-time. Rice cultivation under conditions of flooded irrigation is one of the major man-made sources of these GHGs..

There is a considerable debate over the global warming potentials (GWP)of rice cultivation under different irrigation and water management systems(Jayadev et al, 2009; Quin et al, 2010; and Peng et al, 2011). A recent study in China found that under controlled irrigation, the GWP of rice cultivation is relatively low (Peng et al, 2011a&b). Global warming potentials of methane and nitrous oxide are 62.23gCO_2 $m^{-2}$for rice-paddy under controlled irrigation, 68.0% lower than for rice grown under irrigation by flooding (Peng et al, 2011). Due to large reductions in seepage and surface drainage under efficient conditions of irrigation and drainage and compared with 'traditional' practices, the Chinese research found nitrogen and phosphorous losses through leaching were reduced by 40.1% and 54.8%, and nitrogen and phosphorous losses through surface drainage by 53.9% and 51.6%. Nitrogen loss through ammonia volatilization was reduced by 14.0%. The Chinese study shows how efficient irrigation and drainage management helps to mitigate greenhouse gases emissions, nitrogen and phosphorus losses and their pollution on groundwater and surface water (ibid).In the context of challenges due to metereological variability, the principles and practices of SRI have other strengths like drought-coping capacities (SDTT, 2009).

1.4Evidence for Yield and Cost Advantages

Studies of SRI cultivation in various parts of the world, in Andhra Pradesh, the site of our field studies, and elsewhere in India have shown that both yield rates and water use efficiency have improved (see for instance Uphoff, ud1; Lin et al, 2011; Kassam et al, 2011, Thakur et al, 2011, Ravindra and Laxmi, 2011, V & A Programme, 2009). SRI cropping methods can outperform the conventional management of rice in flooded, wetland paddy agriculture - whether evaluated in terms of output (yield), productivity (efficiency), profitability, or resource conservation (Kassam et al, 2011).. A macro-level study covering 13 major rice-growing states in India, indicates that fields with SRI have 22.4 percent higher average yield compared to non-SRI fields. However the superiority of SRI yields varies across the states from 12 percent in Assam to 53.6 percent in Gujarat (Palanisami et.al. 2013). SRI's advantages also accrue to income and reduced costs. On average, the gross earnings from SRI are 18 percent higher than non-SRI, and average per hectare costs are 29 percent less in SRI than for non-SRI production. Further, yield levels vary positively with the variation in the extent to which the core practices of SRI are adopted.

Evidence from Andhra Pradesh also supports the observations of higher yield rates of rice under SRI cultivation (Rao, 2011; Ravindra and Laxmi, 2011; and V & A Programme, 2009). A study of the economics and sustainability of SRI and traditional methods of paddy cultivation in the North Coastal Zone[51], concludes that the benefit-cost ratio (BCR) was higher for SRI (1.76) than for traditional methods (1.25) for the same crop variety. (Rao, 2011). It also found a 31 per cent yield gap between SRI and traditional methods. Operating practices had a stronger effect than input use (20.15% versus 10.85%) in explaining this gap.

Field studies have also shown that water use efficiency varies with different rice cultivation systems. Compared to the conventional methods, water use/consumption under SRI is substantially lower and water use efficiency is higher (Ravindra and Laxmi, 2011; Reddy et al, 2006). These relationships hold for both tank and tube/shallow well based irrigation systems. The use of other inputs such as chemical fertilisers and pesticides is substantially lower for SRI[52](Ravindra and Laxmi, 2011; V & A Programme, 2009). With the savings in water and other inputs, and the consequent reduction in cultivation costs, the overall gains of SRI cultivation are found to be substantially higher than for conventional modes of cultivation (Ravindra and Laxmi, 2011; V & A Programme, 2009).

[51] The reference agriculture year is 2008–09 and based on the data of costs and returns of crop. The analytical methods used included budgeting techniques, benefit-cost ratio (BCR), yield gap analysis, sustainability index and response priority index.

[52]It is due to the practice weeding using rotary/conoweeder coverts the weeding into organic fertilizer and wider space between plants allows soil aeration and improves the soil biota. The wider space between rice plant hills is relatively aerated and allows sunrays and thus reduces the chances of pest attack.

The Andhra Pradesh Agricultural University (ANGRAU) conducted demonstration trials across the state over a period of five years from 2003-04 to 2007-08 and the results show that yield levels in SRI plots were higher compared to conventional cultivation in all seasons during these years, ranging from 18.6 percent to 41.5 percent (Table 1).

Table 1: Rice Yield Rates under SRI and Conventional Methods

Year	Season	Number of Demonstration plots organised	Yield in SRI Paddy kg/ha	Yield in conventional Paddy/kg ha	SRI yield difference over conventional	
					Kg/ha	***%***
1	***2***	***3***	***4***	***5***	***6***	***7***
2003-04	Kharif	69	8,358	4,887	3,471	41.5
	Rabi	476	7,917	5,479	2,438	31.8
2004-05	Kharif	599	7,310	5,561	1,749	24
	Rabi	311	7,310	5,777	1,533	21
2005-06	Kharif	2,864	7,476	5,451	2,025	27
	Rabi	12,277	7,390	5,620	1,770	24
2006-07	Kharif	7,653	6,724	5,005	1,719	25.6
	Rabi	6,201	6,830	5,558	1,272	18.6
2007-08	Kharif	1334	6179	4965	1214	24.45
	Rabi	1293	6650	5225	1425	27.2

Note: The results are from the demonstration farms in A.P. Information after 2007-08 is not available.

Source: Department of Agriculture, Government of Andhra Pradesh.

1.5 Preliminary Findings of a Field Study in Andhra Pradesh

As a part of larger research project[53] a field survey was conducted in the Janagaon region of Warangal District, Andhra Pradesh, with a sample of 25 SRI farmers and 10 control group non-SRI farmers from nine villages[54] Data was collected from the sample households by a detailed questionnaire designed to suit the life cycle approach to the computation of GHGs, that would also capture all the

[53]"Measuring Materiality in Informal Production–Distribution Systems", School of Interdisciplinary Area Studies, Oxford University, Oxford.

[54]Field Study villages are: Katkuru, Chinna Ramancherla, Pedda Ramancherla, Nidigonda, Fateshapur, Ibrahimpur, Kasireddy palle, Dabbakuntapalle and Patelgudem.

processes involved, inputs used and practices followed in rice cultivation beginning from seed bed preparation to rice harvesting and sales. The field work was conducted over three months during June-August 2012. Information relating to the previous agriculture year (2011-12), for both the Khariff and Rabi seasons, was collected from the sample farmers using their recall.

Table 2: Yield, Labour Use and GHG Difference of SRI and Non-SRI Rice

Rice System	**GHG – CO_2 EQ (Per Hectare)**	**Labour Use (Hrs. Per Hectare)**	**Yield (Kgs. Per Hectare)**
SRI	9902.3	1222	7323
Non-SRI	12008.5	2075	4598
% Difference of SRI compared to Non-SRI	- 21.26	- 69.8	59.26

GHG – CO_2 EQ: Green House Gas Emissions in Carbon-di-Oxide Equivalent

Source: Field Study in Janagaon, A.P.

Table 2 presents some of the preliminary results relating to the difference in GHG emissions, labour use and yield level of SRI in comparison with non-SRI rice production. The CO_2 equivalent of GHG emissions under SRI cultivation is 21.3 per cent less than non-SRI or conventional practices. SRI also involves 70 percent less labour while yielding 59.3 percent more output per hectare compared to conventional rice cultivation. Since SRI appears to be established as a superior cultivation technology across a number of dimensions, the question arises: how has this innovation diffused in India? The institutions involved in the spread of SRI have been very different from those of the original Green Revolution (Farmer, 1977). We turn to consider its history.

II

The Origin and Spread of SRI

The synthesis of locally advantageous rice production practices known as SRI started accidentally in 1983 in a desperate drought in Madagascar, and developed thereafter with continued experimentation under the constant observation of a small work-study school, established by Fr. Henri De Laulanie, a French priest with a background in agriculture. Overtime the principles of SRI were perfected and results showed very high yields. The Association of Tefy Saina (ATS), an NGO, established in 1990, is credited with the propagation/promotion of SRI in Madagascar as well as in the outside world (Prasad, 2006). Laulanie considers SRI as a practical revolution in farming methods as well as a 'cultural revolution' in the minds of rice farmers (Laulanie, 2011). It is also an interesting case of rural innovations developed outside the formal rice research establishments (Prasad, 2006).

However, until 1994, SRI was unknown to the rest of the world until the Cornell International Institute for Food, Agriculture and Development (CIIFAD) mounted a collaborative project with ATS to propagate the Madagascar innovations. In particular, credit is due to Dr. Norman Uphoff of Cornell[55] for bringing SRI to the notice of others. Following his three-year study of Malagassy farmers, Uphoff carried the idea to Asian farmers and from 1997 started to promote SRI in Asia (V & A Programme, 2009). Since 1999, with the efforts of CIIFAD efforts, the local phenomenon grew to a global movement with farmers in 50 countries, especially in semi-arid regions, attempting to adopt SRI to varying degrees (V & A Programme, 2009). In Asia, along with India, Sri Lanka, the Philippines, Malaysia and Vietnam have made notable progress.

2.*1 SRI in India*

In India rice cultivation occupies around one-fourth of the total cropped area. It is the largest crop produced in the country, accounting for two-fifths of total food grains production. The green revolution technology intensified rice cultivation in India using irrigation and other inputs such as chemical fertilisers and pesticides. Around 60% of the rice cultivation in India takes place in irrigated areas - one-third of total irrigated area in India is down to rice (GoI, 2011). Innovations in rice production have been led by a combination of state and market. The origins of SRI were different.

Initially brought to India through a pamphlet carried by a tourist visiting Pondicherry in 1999, SRI trials were immediately conducted in Aurovelli there. Later a scientist from Tamil Nadu Agricultural University participated in an international seminar dealing with innovations in rice cultivation, and after his return in 2002 a modified version involving principles of SRI was experimented with in Tamil Nadu (Prasad, 2006).

Initially SRI principles and practices were subject to experiments by progressive farmers and promoted by civil society organisations (national and international NGOs). Over the years, state organisations (research establishments, relevant Departments and Ministries) have promoted SRI (Prasad, 2006). At an All-India level, the National Food Security Mission (NFSM) promoted SRI in several states, joined more recently by NABARD. Several Indian states have responded positively to the adoption of SRI practices – but *at a very slow pace.* So far there has not been a policy framework that disseminates SRI nationally

Of the 600 plus districts in India, more than a third have instances of where farmers were initiated into SRI, but there is no information on how much of it has been sustained. Civil society groups have made the case for including SRI in the National Rural Employment Guarantee Scheme (NREGS) programme. The proposal is to use the innovative institutional mechanisms established for NREGS to

[55]Cornell International Institute for Food and Agriculture (Ithaca, USA).

support the transition of rice production to SRI by providing incentives to both farmers and workers/labourers to learn the necessary skills and using NREGS to buffer the transition to new methods. Rather than giving a direct labour subsidy to farmers practising SRI (NCS, 2012), the NREGS programme would pay labourers helping small or medium SRI farmers to practise these new SRI transplanting and weeding methods...

Andhra Pradesh is among the several states considered as 'SRI-adopting' so its diffusion process is of scientific interest. We move in the following sections to contextualise the position and problems of rice in the agricultural economy of Andhra Pradesh (section III), then to analyse critically the place of SRI in the context of the rice economy (section IV) before turning to a case study of best practice within SRI (section 4.3) and the lessons that may be learned from it. We conclude by assessing some institutional and policy developments that would improve the prospects for SRI in Andhra Pradesh.

III

Performance of Agriculture and Rice Cultivation in Andhra Pradesh

3.1 Agriculture in Andhra Pradesh's Economy

Andhra Pradesh is the fifth largest state in India in terms of population, and the fourth largest in terms of geographical area. It is the fourth largest economy in India next to Maharashtra, Uttar Pradesh and Tamil Nadu. With respect to value-added in agriculture it ranks second, after Uttar Pradesh. While accounting for 7% of the population, AP contributes approximately11% of India's total agricultural GDP. It is the fourth largest state in terms of area under cultivation and irrigated area, the third largest in food-grain production and the second largest in terms of the value of livestock production. Andhra Pradesh is one of the states which adopted the green revolution from the earliest stages. In 2008-9, it was the fourth largest state in terms of area under rice cultivation, next to Uttar Pradesh, West Bengal and Orissa. And about a quarter of the total value of output from crop production in the state is from paddy. In recent years agricultural GSDP in the state has been growing at 5% per annum, considerably above the All-India average. However, Table 3 shows that the share of agriculture and allied activities in the GSDP of the state and the share of crop sector within agriculture have been on a trend of decline. Here we analyse basic physical and economic parameters of rice production in the state before turning to the problems and challenges arising from them.

Table 3: Share of Agriculture and Allied Activities in GSDP in Andhra Pradesh			
Year	% to GSDP		% Crop within AA
	AA	Crop	
1	***2***	***3***	***4***
1999-00	27.9	17.4	62.4
2000-01	29.1	18.6	63.9
2001-02	27.5	16.5	59.9
2002-03	24.8	12.7	51.3
2003-04	26.0	14.5	55.7
2004-05	25.1	14.1	56.3
2005-06	24.3	13.9	57.2
2006-07	22.3	12.8	57.3
2007-08	23.3	14.0	60.0
2008-09	22.0	12.8	58.1
2009-10	21.0	11.7	55.6
2010-11	20.8	11.7	55.9
2011-12	19.2	9.8	51.2

3.2Size class of holdings

As in the rest of the country, the share of small-marginal farmers in agrarian structure of the state has been on the rise. They constitute over 80 percent of operational holdings and account for almost 50 percent of the operated area.

Table 4: Changing Size Class Distribution of Landholdings in Andhra Pradesh by Size Class

Year	Share in Number of Holding					Share in Operated Area					Avg Size
	Marginal	Small	Semi-Medium	Medium	Large	Marginal	Small	Semi-Medium	Medium	Large	
1	*2*	*3*	*4*	*5*	*6*	*7*	*8*	*9*	*10*	*11*	*12*
1955-56	38.6	18.3	17.7	16.7	8.7	7.9	9.7	16.1	28.1	38.2	2.43
1970-71	46.0	18.5	17.4	12.7	4.3	8.0	11.3	19.2	30.8	30.7	2.51
1980-81	49.3	20.9	16.0	9.1	2.1	13.1	16.2	23.3	28.7	18.7	1.94
1990-91	56.0	21.2	14.5	6.9	1.3	16.4	19.6	25.2	26.1	12.8	1.50
2000-01	60.9	21.8	12.4	4.3	0.6	21.6	24.8	26.4	19.8	7.5	1.25
2005-06	61.6	21.9	12.0	4.0	0.5	22.7	25.8	26.5	19.0	6.1	1.20

Note: **1**. Refers of operational land holdings only; **2**. Size classes: ***Marginal*** – 0 to 1 hectare; ***Small*** – 1 to 2 has; ***Semi-medium*** – 2 to 4 has; ***Medium*** – 4 to 10 has; and ***Large*** – 10 and above has; **3**. ***Avg Size*** - Average Size of the Holding (in hectares).

Source: Directorate of Economics and Statistics (DES), GoAP, Hyderabad.

3.3Land Use Pattern and Irrigation Systems

Of the total 27.5 million hectares of territory in the state, the net sown area (NSA) accounts for a stable 40 percent or about 10.6 million hectares.. About 2.7 million hectares or about25 percent of NSA is cultivated more than once in an agricultural year.[56]The state's cropping intensity is one of the lowest, on a slow-paced increase. (Table 5).In turn, about 4.6 million hectares or about 40 percent of the net sown area (NSA) is irrigated. Another 1.7 million hectares are irrigated more than once and thus the gross irrigated area in the triennium ending 2009-10 was about 6.3 million hectares.

Table 5: Cropped Area and Irrigated Area in Andhra Pradesh

(Lakh ha.)

Triennium Ending	Area in lakh Hectares				Intensity (%)	
	NAS	GSA	NIA	GIA	Crop Int.	Irg. Int.
1	***2***	***3***	***4***	***5***	***6***	***7***
1960-61	109.07	119.50	29.03	34.98	110	120
1970-71	113.88	129.83	30.73	39.97	114	130

[56]The total cropped area or gross sown area (GSA) in the state is 13.3 million hectares.

1980-81	108.73	125.61	34.48	44.25	116	128
1990-91	110.42	132.00	42.83	54.21	120	127
2000-01	105.24	129.01	44.83	59.18	123	132
2009-10	106.29	133.19	45.60	62.63	125	137

Note: TE – Triennium Ending; NAS – Net Sown Area; GSA – Gross Sown Area; NIA – Net Irrigated Area; GIA – Gross Irrigated Area; Crop Int – Crop Intensity; IrgInt – Irrigation Intensity.

Source: Directorate of Economics and Statistics, GoAP, Hyderabad.

Table 6: Source-wise Area Irrigated in Andhra Pradesh

T E	Area in lakh Hectares					Source-wise Share (%)			
	Tank	Canal	Wells	Others	Total	Tank	Canal	Wells	Others
1	***2***	***3***	***4***	***5***	***6***	***7***	***8***	***9***	***10***
1960-61	11.99	12.90	3.07	1.07	29.0	41.3	44.4	10.6	3.7
1970-71	9.85	14.87	4.93	1.08	30.7	32.1	48.4	16.0	3.5
1980-81	9.30	16.71	7.47	1.00	34.5	27.0	48.5	21.7	2.9
1990-91	10.33	18.76	12.15	1.60	42.8	24.1	43.8	28.4	3.7
2000-01	7.30	16.39	19.17	1.98	44.8	16.3	36.6	42.8	4.4
2009-10	5.22	15.75	22.98	1.65	45.6	11.4	34.5	50.4	3.6

Note: TE – Triennium Ending.

Source: Directorate of Economics and Statistics, GoAP, Hyderabad.

Surface water sources like tanks and canals which accounted for substantial shares of irrigation are on the decline, even in absolute terms. Ground water sources of irrigation, through shallow or tube-wells, are on the increase (Table 6). Negligent management of surface-water minor irrigation systems in the state has threatened irrigation from tanks. According one estimate, out of 77,472 tanks, around 24,000 are presently defunct. Others have had their command areas compromised and function at reduced capacity (CAD, 2008; Ravindra and Laxmi, 2010). Heavy and increasing project costs and inter-state water disputes have also constrained the expansion of surface irrigation systems through major dams and distributaries. The emergence of ground water as a major source of irrigation has also resulted in growing dependence of agriculture on diesel and electricity. According to one estimate agriculture consumes about a quarter of the State's total electricity (GoAP, 2010)which is in turn increasingly dependent on thermal sources, particularly fossil fuels.

Table 7: Changes in Cropping Pattern in Andhra Pradesh, 1958-2011 (%)

Crop	Triennium Averages					
	1955-58	1965-68	1980-83	1990-93	2002-05	2010-11
1	*2*	*3*	*4*	*5*	*6*	*7*
Rice	23.1	26.3	29.1	29.6	24.4	30.8
Jowar	20.8	19.9	16.8	8.5	4.9	2.2
Maize	1.6	1.8	2.6	2.4	5.2	5.8
Bajra	5.0	4.7	4.1	1.5	0.9	0.4
Ragi	2.5	2.6	2.0	1.2	0.6	0.3
Cereals	***53.1***	***55.3***	***54.5***	***43.1***	***35.9***	***39.9***
Pulses	***10.1***	***10.1***	***11.0***	***12.2***	***16.4***	***14.3***
Food grains(sub-total)	***63.2***	***65.3***	***65.5***	***55.4***	***52.3***	***54.1***
Groundnut	10.5	10.1	11.2	18.5	13.2	12.2
Gingelly	2.2	1.9	1.4	1.3	1.3	-
Sunflower	-	-	-	2.5	3.8	3.0
Castor	2.6	2.2	2.2	2.4	2.2	1.3
Oil Seeds(sub-total)	***15.2***	***14.3***	***14.7***	***24.1***	***20.5***	***19.4***
Sugarcane	0.6	1.0	1.3	1.5	1.8	2.7
Cotton	3.1	2.4	3.5	5.5	7.7	10.0
Tobacco	1.3	1.5	1.6	1.4	1.0	1.2
Chillies	1.3	1.4	1.3	1.7	1.9	1.6
Onion	0.2	0.1	0.1	0.2	0.2	0.3
Fruit & vegetable	-	-	-	4.5	6.7	7.5
Total	**84.9**	**86.0**	**88.0**	**89.8**	**85.4**	**80.4**

Note: Percentage inGross Cropped Area under major crops.

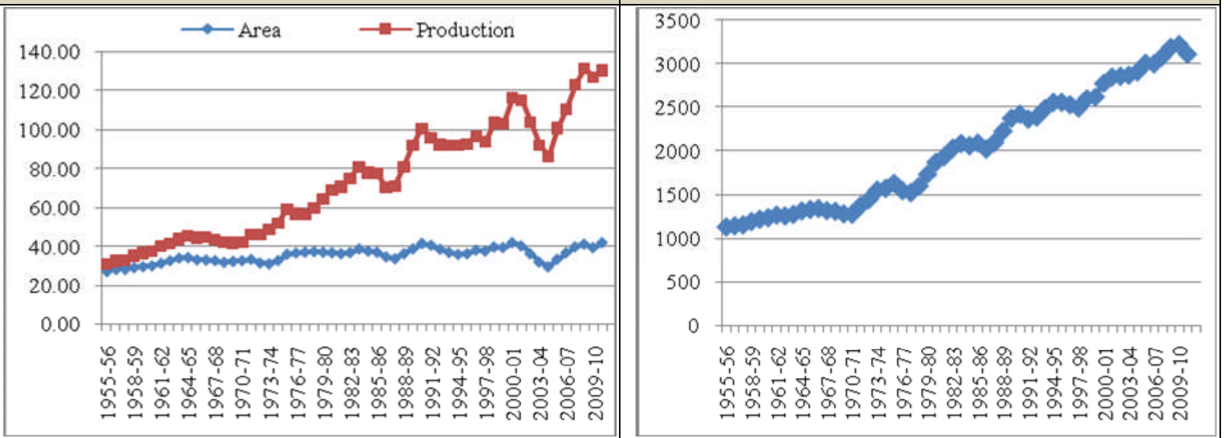
Source: Subramanyam and Aparna (2009).

3.4 Cropping Pattern and the Paramount Importance of Rice

Over the years, particularly since the 1980s, there has been rapid change in Andhra's cropping pattern. The share of cereals has come down drastically largely due to decline in millet production, but the share of rice has actually increased. As the single largest crop in Andhra it accounts for about 4.0 million hectares[8] out of 13 million hectares or about 30 percent of the total gross cropped area.

Figure 1: Trends in Area, Production and Yield of Rice in Andhra Pradesh

a) Area and Production	b) Yield Rate



Note: Area is in lakh hectares and Production is in lakh tonnes; and yield rate isKgs per Hectare.

Source: Directorate of Economics and Statistics, GoAP, Hyderabad.

Andhra has four rice agro-ecosystems: irrigated rice, rain-fed lowland and upland rice, and a flood-prone rice ecosystem. However, rice cultivation in APis more water intensive and irrigated than elsewhere in India. Put differently, of the total area under rice cultivation in the state, around 95% of it is under irrigation. Of the total irrigated area in the state, around two-thirds of it is under rice cultivation.

Table 8: Area, Production and Yield (APY) of Rice in Andhra Pradesh

T E	A P Y in Volume			Growth (%)		
	Area	Production	Yield	Area	Production	Yield
1960-61	30.17	37.54	1244	-	-	-
1970-71	32.80	42.08	1283	0.8	1.1	0.3
1980-81	36.83	69.17	1878	1.2	5.1	3.9
1990-91	41.54	100.78	2426	1.2	3.8	2.6
2000-01	41.91	116.58	2781	0.1	1.5	1.4
2010-11	41.93	130.66	3116	0.0	1.1	1.1

Note: TE – Triennium Ending; Area is in lakh hectares and Production in lakh tonnes; and

8 Both in Khariff and Rabi seasons. Khariff refers to the monsoon season. Rabi refers to dry season.

yield rate is Kgs per Hectare.

Source: Directorate of Economics and Statistics, GoAP, Hyderabad.

Rice cultivation in the state takes place in both production seasons, about 60% in Khariff and 40% in Rabi. Very sporadically, in the third 'summer' season, rice is cultivated in some parts of the state. While in Khariff, 95 percent of the crop is irrigated (and the rest rain-fed), in Rabi and the shorter summer season, it is entirely irrigated.

Table 9: Season-wise Area, Production and Yield of Rice in Andhra Pradesh

Sno	Details	2008-2009			2009-2010			2010-11			TE 2010-11		
		Khariff	Rabi	Total	Khariff	Rabi	Total	Khariff	Rabi	Total	Khariff	Rabi	Total
1	*2*	*3*	*4*	*5*	*6*	*7*	*8*	*9*	*10*	*11*	*12*	*13*	*14*
1	Area (in lakh hectares)	28.03	15.84	43.87	20.63	13.78	34.41	29.22	18.3	47.52	25.96	15.97	41.93
2	Production (in lakh tons)	83.8	58.61	142.41	59.56	48.82	108.38	75.1	69.1	144.2	72.82	58.84	131.66
3	Yield (kgs/hectare)	2990	3700	3246	2887	3543	3150	2570	3776	3035	2805	3684	3140

Note: T E - Triennium Ending.

Source: Directorate of Economics and Statistics, Government of Andhra Pradesh, Hyderabad.

Tables 8and 9show the area under rice cultivation in the state has shown a steady increase. The yield and production levels experienced a quantum jump beginning with the late 1970s and 80s under the spell of Green Revolution with the advent of HYV seeds and rising application of other inputs. Currently more than 80% of Andhra's rice cultivation uses HYV seeds. With an annual production of about 120 to 140 lakh tonnes amounting to around 12-15 percent of the total rice production in India, the state is now the second largest producer of rice in India, next only to West Bengal. Production and yield rates disaggregated by season show that the Khariff rate is lower than that of other seasons, while the Rabi season share in production is higher than its share in Andhra's rice cultivation area.

However, since the 1990s, rate of growth of rice yield in India in general, and Andhra Pradesh in particular, *have been experiencing a deceleration*. As the area under rice cultivation is almost stable, the deceleration in growth rate of yields has resulted in a slowing of growth in total rice production.

3.5 Problems and Challenges of Rice Cultivation in A.P.

While the area under rice has increased over the years, rice cultivation is fraught with problems. One problem is the emergence of *water-logging* in the Krishna-Godavari delta region. A second is the increase in the *cultivation costs* in general, butrice in particular (GoAP, 2011, Laxminarayana et al, 2011; Ramana Murthy, 2011)[58]. Then third, the national minimum support *price* (MSP) is much lower than the cost of cultivation according to farmers in the State. There have been widespread protests by the farmers and threats of a 'crop holiday' in which farmers stop producing the crop for market (GoAP, 2011, Laxminarayana et al, 2011). Fourth, there is increasing *pressure on ground-water resources* especially in the semi-arid region of Andhrawhere rice is cultivated by water-lifting. SRI has the potential to mitigate problems of lower yield and higher water consumption and thus address some of these environmental and economic problems.

IV

SRI in Andhra Pradesh

To see how SRI might mitigate the serious agricultural challenges in AP, we examine the history of the transfer of this technology and the institutions involved in its adoption, adaptation and spread (Table 9). Despite the neo-liberal era, it is the state and civil society, not the market, that have pioneered the propagation of SRI.

4.1 Agencies Propagating SRI in A.P

In Andhra Pradesh, SRI was initiated in Khariff 2002 by a progressive organic farmer, Narayan Reddy of Karnataka, who experimented with it on his farm prior to sharing his experience with a civil society organisation, Timbaku Collective, in Anantapur district. The Timbaku Collective began introducing SRI to a few pioneering farmers in Anantapur district. Prior to these activities, as early as 2001, Ajay Kallam, the Commissioner of Agriculture, Government of Andhra Pradesh had published an article on SRI in ***Padipantalu***, a magazine published by the State Government on matters relating to agriculture. But his effort was limited to diffusing knowledge of the method through the popular press and sharing the ideas with other officials but not to direct trials of SRI (Prasad, 2006).

[58] These will be supplied when they have been computed from field data gathered in the project 'Measuring Materiality in Informal Production-Distribution Systems" – see Hema 2013.

Table 10: Organisations involved in Promoting SRI in Andhra Pradesh

Sno	Category of Actors	Organisations
1	State Bodies	WALAMTARI, NABARD, NFSM, CMSA, Agros, I&CAD, DRR, ATMA
2	Research Institutes	AcharyaRanga Agricultural University (AP), CRRI, IRRI, DRR, ICRISAT, IWMI, Rice Research Station (Warangal), KVKs, RSS,
2	Non-State bodies: National	CSA, CWS, SDTT
3	Non-State bodies: International	WWF, Oxfam, SIDA, SDC
4	Local Organisations: NGOs in AP	Timbaku Collectives, WASSAN, CROPS, RDT, APDAI, , JalaSpandana, Laya, many other local NGOs at grassroot level
5	Individuals (officials and progressive farmers)	Ajay Kallam, Narayana Reddy, Mandava Krishna Rao,

Note: For expansion of abbreviated names of organisations see Annexure of Acronymsat the end of the paper.

Source: Authors' compilation.

The Acharya N.G. Ranga Agricultural University (ANGRAU),a premier agricultural research institute in Andhra Pradesh, played a crucial role in scaling-up SRI principles and practices, first conducting about 250 on-farm trials in 22 districts in Khariff 2003. Since then ANGRAU involved other civil society organisations in its project promoting SRI. At the district level the KrishiVignanaKendras[9] (KVKs) and District Agricultural Advisory and Transfer of Technology[10] (DAATT) Centres associated with ANGRAU worked as a frontline SRI demonstration units. ANGARU has itself conducted field demonstrations of SRI practices. The Directorate of Rice Research (DRR) stationed at Hyderabad joined the endeavour through field trials and research experiments monitoring costs of cultivation and yield rates. Since 2006, the Government of Andhra Pradesh initiated measures for promoting SRI principles and practices. From 2007-08, ANGARU focussed on capacity-building handing over front-line promotional activity to the Department of Agriculture, Government of Andhra Pradesh. But with this change of agency there was decline in field trials and demonstrations for which the Department was ill suited.

[9]There are 34 KVKs in the state. Of which 23 are operated under ANGRAU, 3 are directly associated with ICAR and 8 are operated by civil society organisations (NGOs). These KVKs are grass root level institutions devoted for imparting need based skill oriented short and long term vocational training courses to the agricultural clientele. Besides conducting on farm research for technology assessment and refinement, KVKs demonstrate latest agricultural technologies through front line demonstrations.

[10]There are about 22 DAATT Centres one for each rural district in Andhra Pradesh and associated with ANGRAU.

Certain international agencies like ICRISAT, WWF, Oxfam and others have been party to the promotion of SRI in India and AP. Local level NGOs scattered across the state also operate to promote SRI with the support of the national and international organisations. Since 2004-05, an ICRISAT-WWF project has also promoted SRI in AP and further afield in India (Prasad, 2006). Thanks to ICRISAT-WWF and ANGARU, the SRI methodology has been evaluated for its potential in saving water and in increasing productivity under different agro-climatic conditions and irrigation sources. Results show that yields under SRI are higher by 20-40 percent. Two important State-level intermediary civil society organisations (NGOs) - WASSAN and CSA–are working with the farmers to spread the practice of SRI in different parts of the country and Andhra Pradesh (Prasad 2006).

3.2 Coverage of SRI

As pointed out earlier, since 2003-04,Andhra's Department of Agriculture has organized SRI demonstrations, and since Rabi 2005-06, at least one demonstration was targeted for every Gram Panchayat. In 2007-08, in a prominent policy initiative, the state government allocated around Rs. 4.0 crore for state-wide demonstrations and SRI trials. Moreover, since early evaluations had stressed the importance of timeliness of irrigation for SRI, the state government announced an uninterrupted and continuous supply of electricity to areas under SRI.

Under the National Food Security Mission (NFSM), 1680 SRI demonstrations were targeted for 2008-09 (1272 in Khariff and 408 in Rabi) with a financial outlay of Rs.5.0 million (Rs.3000 per demonstration) and further grants of Rs. 3000 were awarded for the purchase of 'cono-weeders'[11]. In 2008-9,in 11 non-NFSM districts of East Godavari, West Godavari, Prakasam, Kurnool, Ananthapur, Kadapa, Chittoor, Warangal, Rangareddy, Nizamabad, and Karimnagar, a total of 4,446 one-acre demonstrations were planned under Work Plan (Rice) with an outlay of Rs.26.7 million.

Table 11: Extent of SRI Paddy in Andhra Pradesh

Year	**Rice area covered (in 000Hec)**			**Area underSRI(in Hec)**		
	Kharif	Rabi	Total	Kharif	Rabi	Total
1	***2***	***3***	***4***	***5***	***6***	***7***
2003-04	2,109	866	2,975	28	190	218
2004-05	2,215	871	3,086	240	2,451	2,691
2005-06	2,526	1,456	3,982	1,127	6,306	7,433
2006-07	2,641	1,337	3,978	3,061	2,480	5,541

[11]Cono-weeder is a mechanical rotary instrument used for weeding in SRI.

2007-08	NA	NA	NA	NA	NA	NA
2008-09	2,803	1,584	4,387	NA	NA	NA
2009-10	2,063	1,378	3,441	NA	NA	NA
2010-11	2,922	1,830	4,752	44,794	46,664	91,458
2011-12	NA	NA	NA	49,496	72,320	1,21,815

Note:‘NA‘ not available.

Source: Department of Agriculture, Government of Andhra Pradesh.

SRI has also been promoted by Community Managed Sustainable Agriculture (CMSA)[12] which is part of the SHG-based Indira KranthiPatham (IKP) Programme promoted by the Society for Elimination of Rural Poverty (SERP)[13] in Andhra Pradesh (Table 12). Under the CMSA programme SRI has been encouraged through women’s self-help groups (SHGs). In 2008-09, SRI was implemented in around 1000 acres across districts in the state. Targets were given to the districts based on the number of weeders available: 3 acres of SRI paddy per weeder. Table 11 shows the slow but steady progress achieved in SRI under the CMSA from about 1100 acres in 2008-09 to about 16000 acres in 2011-12.

[12]The thrust of CMSA is to promote non-chemical pesticide agriculture with an emphasis on soil rejuvenation and multiple cropping especially in dry land areas.

[13]SERP is a state sponsored civil society organization, with Chief Minister as the Chairman, with objective of social mobilization of women through self-help groups (SHGs).

Table 12: Acreage Covered under CMSA SRI Programme across District in Andhra Pradesh

Sno	District	2008-09	2009-10	2010-11	2011-12
1	***2***	***3***	***4***	***5***	***6***
1	Adilabad	18.0	80.0	43.0	233.0
2	Ananthapur	182.0	70.0	572.0	1487.0
3	Chittoor	6.0	73.0	273.0	1826.2
4	East Godavari	0.0	0.0	45.0	217.0
5	Guntur	2.0	25.0	162.0	808.0
6	Kadapa	18.0	65.0	55.0	603.2
7	Karimnagar	30.0	92.0	85.0	1240.0
8	Khammam	19.5	60.0	114.0	924.0
9	Krishna	0.0	0.0	23.0	23.0
10	Kurnool	5.0	50.0	91.0	238.0
11	Mahabubnagar	265.0	510.0	2247.0	0.0
12	Medak	297.0	975.0	1200.0	1599.0
13	Nalgonda	9.5	80.0	8.0	529.0
14	Nellore	0.0	170.0	172.0	142.0
15	Nizamabad	14.5	65.0	632.0	685.0
16	Prakasam	0.0	10.0	23.0	81.0
17	Ranga Reddy	2.5	50.0	130.0	38.0
18	Srikakulam	7.5	60.0	139.0	567.0
19	Vishakapatnam	24.0	65.0	186.0	2767.0
20	Vizianagaram	44.4	85.0	211.0	540.0
21	Warangal	152.0	600.0	800.0	674.0
22	West Godavari	0.0	20.0	85.0	677.0
AP		***1096.9***	***3205.0***	***7296.0***	***15875.4***

Note: 1. Figures in acres; 2. CMSA – Community Managed Sustainable Agriculture.

Source: CMSA, Government of Andhra Pradesh.

Since 2010-11, NABARD, under its Farmers' Technology Transfer Fund (FTTF),has promoted the spread of SRI in 14 states including Andhra Pradesh. Of the All-India total of 150 projects[14] (Rs. 2568.0 lakh) 17 of them (amounting to Rs. 282.9 lakh) are in AP[15].NABARD collaborates with the local NGOs in the implementation of these projects over a period of three years (Table 13).

Table 13: Details of NABARD's FTTF Targets for SRI

Sno	Details	India	AP
1	***2***	***3***	***4***
1	No of Projects	150	17
2	No of Farmers Targeted for SRI	84000	9240
3	Target Area (in Hec) under SRI	28800	3172
4	No of Villages	2400	334
5	FTTF Grant (lakhs)	2568.00	282.85

Note: FTTF - Farmers' Technology Transfer Fund.

Source: NABARD Regional Office, Hyderabad.

Arguably, in Andhra Pradesh there has developed a *unique kind of partnership between state and civil society* which has formed the institutional ecology conducive to the adoption of SRI. Andhra Pradesh is also unusual in adopting SRI *throughout all its districts*. According to Prasad (2006), results from trials are significant. First, the highest ever yield rate (17.2 tonne per hectare) has been recorded in SRI in AP. Second, SRI rice has also been found to mature earlier than conventional varieties. Because of thicker stems and root systems SRI withstands flooding and cyclones. It is associated with better quality of grain which fetches higher prices. Lastly, higher yields have been observed in drier regions.

Over and above its institutional ecology, Andhra Pradesh is also notable in terms of the *agency and technical expertise of individual farmers*. For instance, the Mandava Marker[16] , a simple tool to mark the lines for row-transplantating, developed in the state, is very popular with SRI farmers both in Andhra and elsewhere. Similarly the innovative agricultural engineering of weeders by ANGARU and the adaptations of SRI practices to local conditions based upon feedback from farmers are two further examples of agricultural innovations by civil society organisations in a variety of sites in the

[14]There are four clusters in each project with each cluster consisting of four villages: thus 16 villages in each project. The 150 projects cover 2400 villages all over India.

[16]It is a iron frame marker, to draw vertical and horizontal lines in the field ready for transplantation, developed by an innovative farmer Mandava Krishnarao, hailing from Mandava village in Khammam district of Andhra Pradesh. It is now widely used in Andhra Pradesh. Prior to that ropes were used to get marks of horizontal and vertical lines.

State. However, in spite of all these efforts to popularise SRI, its *coverage remains very low*. As recently as in 2011-12, only about two per cent of the total area under rice in the State was under SRI. There are a number of factors that hinder its sustained adoption.

4.2Problems of SRI in AP

Debates about the adoption of SRI practices focus on SRI's being more-*labour intensive* than conventional methods. Labour intensity here does not refer to labour per unit of output, rather to labour being timely and skilled. In SRI crop production, labour costs are relatively lower than those of conventional practices. But SRI is a more rigorous and exact regime that needs precision-timed operations and constant supervision. The modern factory-like production regime of SRI struggles to penetrate a culture of flexible and less precise practices associated with rice cultivation. There is also a certain *physical agility needed for the use of weeders, line markers and for the transplanting single seedlings*. The intensity of labour requires male/female labour with sufficient physical energy to use the weeder and skills in the use of the marker while female labour also requires new skills for transplanting. Since its invention, the weederhas been improved to make it move with less friction, and it was observed in the field that the employment of two labourers weeding together reduces the fatigueand isolation associated with the monotony of working alone.

There appear to be no clear specifications regarding the designs of markers and weeders appropriate to different soil types. Labourers are slow to take to SRI practices, particularly in using weeders in their currently designed forms. So farmers face operational difficulties in adopting SRI especially on larger areas.

Of the three critical stages/operations of SRI cultivation (nursery, transplantation and weeding), a study of the economics of SRI observed that the most important constraint in SRI cultivation is *'nursery to transplanting management'* (Rao, 2011), because this stage is relatively labour-intensive, and needs certain management skills and constant supervision. The preparations of the nursery need co-ordination with those of the plot awaiting transplanting. Small farmers balance their limited ground-water resources against rainfall but the Khariff rains frequently confound this balancing act. With meagre ground water, producers prepare their nursery expecting the monsoon to help them ready the main plot. If the rain fails or is delayed, the nursery seedlings will cross the 8 to 15 days threshold beyond which older seedlings are inappropriate for SRI. The older practice of flexible transplanting between 25 to 45 days accommodates the vagaries of the weather but SRI does not. R & D to evolve varieties that would reduce the vulnerability of seedlings to their transplanting age is urgently needed.

Another major concern is that *dis-adoption rates exceed those of adoption* (Reddy et al, 2006). In many cases when supported by civil society organisations or other organisations encouraging SRI, farmers adopt SRI with an eye to *support measures* such as free fertilisers. Once this is stopped they tend to switch to conventional system. Indeed, there are many instances of withdrawal from SRI once the agency sponsorship end.

Despite Andhra Pradesh's vigorous initiatives, the diffusion of SRI is now lagging behind that of the neighbouring state of Tamil Nadu. One of the factors behind the faster progress of SRI paddy in Tamil Nadu is that the state government provides a *financial incentive* of Rs. 4,000 per hectare for a farmer adopting SRI. TN's *promotional methods* also differ. For instance, neither the state government, research bodies nor civil society organisations insist on strict adherence to all the SRI principles and practices. Instead SRI principles are followed flexibly. In Andhra Pradesh there is no financial incentive to producers and the extension advice is rigid.

4.3 The Case of an NGO ('CROPS') in promoting SRI in Andhra Pradesh

Here we present a case study of a civil society organisation (NGO), CROPS[17], working to propagate SRI principles mainly among farmers in Janagaon division of Warangal District of Andhra Pradesh but also further afield. CROPS is a registered non-profit, non -religious, non-governmental, social development grass-root organization established in 1991.

In the dry-land agriculture of Janagaon division, the only irrigated crop is paddy, mostly grown using ground-water. When the traditional system of dry land farming shifted to modern technology with the use of chemical pesticides, the cost of cultivation increased and so did farmers' environmental problems such as soil and water contamination with chemical residues. Over-use of these chemical inputs resulted in reduced soil fertility and increased resistance to pests. Pesticide consumption peaked when the cropping pattern shifted from coarse cereals to cotton cultivation. It was at this stage, in the mid 1990s that CROPS, supported by the Centre for World Solidarity (CWS) started to promote non-chemical pesticide management techniques[18].

[17] An acronym for Centre for Rural Operations Programme Society (CROPS).

[18] Besides, the organisation is also involved in formation of thrift groups of women called Sanghams at village level. **Sri Shakti** is a registered **Mutually Aided Cooperative Society (MACS)** for Women, initiated by CROPS. Under this programme the whole village is a unit, *Sangham*. Sri Shakti Women MACS was established in the year 1995 with merely 5 groups and 40 members and in due course it developed to 44 groups and 5,467 members. Women in more than 40 villages formed as *Sangham* thrift groups facilitated by the CROPS. Presently there are 7,467 women actively involved in 74 groups. The savings worth Rs. 91.93 lakhs were pooled from these members and against this credit worthiness Messrs. Andhra Bank has sanctioned loan worth of Rs. 1.3 lakhs to SRI SHAKTI MACS and also total loans amounted to Rs. 363.27 lakhs have been issued to these members for various productive purposes.

Box 1: CROPS Activities related to Sustainable Agriculture

- Dry land agriculture in 20 villages - Supported by AEI, Luxembourg
- Promotion of NPM in 3 Mandals - Centre for Sustainable Agriculture (CSA), Hyderabad, India
- Promotion of permaculture in 1 village - Deccan Development Society (DDS), Andhra Pradesh
- BtVs Non Bt study in Warangal district - Deccan Development Society
- Implementation of 10 RIDF watersheds - DWMA, Nalgonda and Warangal
- Promotion of Organic Cotton in 4 villages - Oxfam India
- Promotion of sustainable agriculture practices under the flagship of Telangana Natural Resource Management Group (TNRMG) in 25 villages - SDCIC
- Promotion of community based Tank Management in 5 Villages - SDCIC
- Implementation of 10 RIDF watersheds - DWMA, Nalgonda and Warangal
- Promotion of NPM in 30 villages of 3 Mandals - SERP - IKP, Government of Andhra Pradesh
- Promotion of IPM, Chilly in 2 Mandals - Spices Board, Secunderabad

Source: CROPS.

With the support of two leading civil society organisations (CWS and CSA), CROPS' efforts in sustainable agriculture (by which is meant chemical-free organic agriculture) are remarkable. The organisationis developing a model organic farming village, Enabavi, in Warangal District[19]. A feather in its cap is that for the year 2007-8 an Enabavi farmer and Grass Root Motivator, Sri.PonnamMallaiah fromEnabavi, was chosen along with his village, for the **KrishiGaurav Award**by Pathanjali Trust[20], Haridwar. All the practices leading to reduced chemical use in agriculture either SRI or other types of organic farming in the informal sense, are promoted by civil society organisations like CROPS.

Most of the crop agriculture in the area of Janagaon that CROPS selected was limited to traditional, non-hybrid and non-GM, dry land cereal crops (jowar, redgram, maize etc). Since the 1990s, the area under cotton cultivation has recorded a rapid increase in this region. Increasing cotton cultivation also meant greater use of fertilisers and pesticides which in turn increased the cost of cultivation to unviable levels. CROPS developed the goal of non-pesticide management (NPM) for dry land crops to lower the cost of cultivation.

[19]***Enabavi***, the hamlet of the Kalyanam Revenue village, LingalaGhanapurMandal, Warangal District, Andhra Pradesh has created history in organic farming in India. The entire village involving about 55 families, 300 acres constituting the hamlet population of about 200 has become fully organic. Hence 'organic' is used in an informal sense to include farming free of pesticides, chemical fertilisers and genetically-modified crops. It is the first village in the country to declare itself, chemical free and GM free (CROPS from http://www.crops.co.in/enabavi.html).

[20]The Trust gives annual awards to innovative farmers who work towards practices that reduce farming risks.

Moreover, the availability of, and access to, bore well technology over the last two decades, increased the number of bore wells, in turn increasing the area under irrigated crops particularly rice. Prior to the 1990s, rice was not a major crop sold in the local grain markets. But from 1990s onwards, it came to prominence along with cotton and maize. The volume of rice traded in the local grain market increased from 3000 to 30,000-40,000 quintals per day over the last fifteen years. Twenty commercial rice mills, mostly parboiling mills, were established. The procurement of rice by the Food Corporation of India (FCI) has also increased. The first FCI go down in this area, Janagaon, was established in 2002 with a capacity of 30,000 MT. A second go down with a capacity of 1,50,000 MT started working in 2009. The phenomenal increase in rice trading is due to local increase in rice production, due to expansion in area as well as yield.

Most of the rice cultivation in this area has become ground-water dependent, through bore wells. Historically rice cultivation was confined to a limited area with tanks as the main source of water. In a few cases rice was cultivated to a limited extent and for home consumption with open wells constrained by the availability of water.. Changes in the last two decades mean that even the rice fields under tank irrigation are watered from bore wells replenished from tanks. Many farming communities under the tank command areas agreed to abandon the tank for direct irrigation. While tanks allowed the cultivation of rice only in the Khariff season, irrigation using ground water permits rice to be grown in both main seasons. Irrigation with bore-wells or open-wells also facilitates the water control sometimes associated with better yields. However, the increased reliance on ground-water has depleted subterranean water resources and has increased energy consumption (mostly electricity) by lift irrigation. Water and energy saving methods of rice cultivation are therefore needed in the region.

As regards SRI cultivation methods, in Janagaon division since Rabi 2007-8 CROPS[21] has taken up certain initiatives for SRI (Table 14). CROPS is one of the collaborators involved with the ICRISAT-WWF Project to develop SRI in AP as well as All-India. Under the WWF project, for seven continuous seasons, CROPS has spread SRI cultivation to seven villages in two mandals (Bachannapet and Maddoor) in Janagaon division. And with the support of ICRISAT, it introduced SRI in 26 more villages in three other mandals[22] (LingalGhanpur, Janagaon and Devaruppala). Under these two projects, the number of farmers and acreage under SRI cultivation promoted by CROPS increased gradually. But both the WWF and ICRISAT support was limited to a few seasons until Rabi 2010-11. After that the number of farmers and acreage under SRI drastically declined. Under the NABARD support, CROPS implemented SRI in 16 more villages in two mandals

[21] With the support of the WWF project.

[22] Mandals, which cover population of about 30,000, are administrative units below District Administration. In Andhra Pradesh erstwhile Taluks/Blocks were replaced with Mandals in the early 1980s.

(Janagaonand LingalGhanpur) for the two seasons Khariff 2011 and Rabi 2011-12. The NABARD project then was extended to two further years with increased targets for farmers and acreage.

Table 14: Coverage of SRI under CROPS in Jangaon Division of Warangal District in Andhra Pradesh

Season	No of Farmers and Area under different projects							
	WWF		ICRISAT		NABARD		Total	
	Farmers	Area	Farmers	Area	Farmers	Area	Farmers	Area
1	***2***	***3***	***4***	***5***	***6***	***7***	***8***	***9***
Rabi 2007-08	120	86	-	-	-	-	120	86
Kharif 2008	143	110	-	-	-	-	143	110
Rabi 2008-09	466	354	96	77.5	-	-	562	431.5
Kharif 2009	334	201.5	98	65.5	-	-	432	267
Rabi 2009-10	649	407.5	212	117	-	-	861	524.5
Kharif 2010	674	353.75	1142	371	-	-	1816	724.75
Rabi 2010-11	906	540	1928	1022	-	-	2834	1562
Kharif 2011	-	-	-	-	460	230	460	230
Rabi 2011-12	-	-	-	-	800	600	800	600

Note: 1 Farmers in number; Area in acres; 2. '-' indicates none.

Source: CROPS, Jangaon, Warangal District, Andhra Pradesh.

A high spot in the promotion of SRI by CROPS was the participation of a 38-year-old woman farmer DuddedaSugunammafrom Katkur village in a global event organised by World Food Prize Foundation at Iowa, (USA), in October 2011. She presented her experience of rice cultivation before and after SRI. Initially motivated by CROPS, she has been propagating SRI in among fellow farmers in her village and locality (Deccan Herald, 2011[23]). Box 2 shows that CROPS has also made notable local modifications to the process of SRI.

In response to the experience of monotony in mechanical weeding when SRI labour is alone, CROPS has experimented successfully with multiple weeding teams.

[23]Accessed through http://www.deccanherald.com/content/110687/she-has-become-villagers-envy.html#

Box 2: SRI Promoting Activities of CROPS

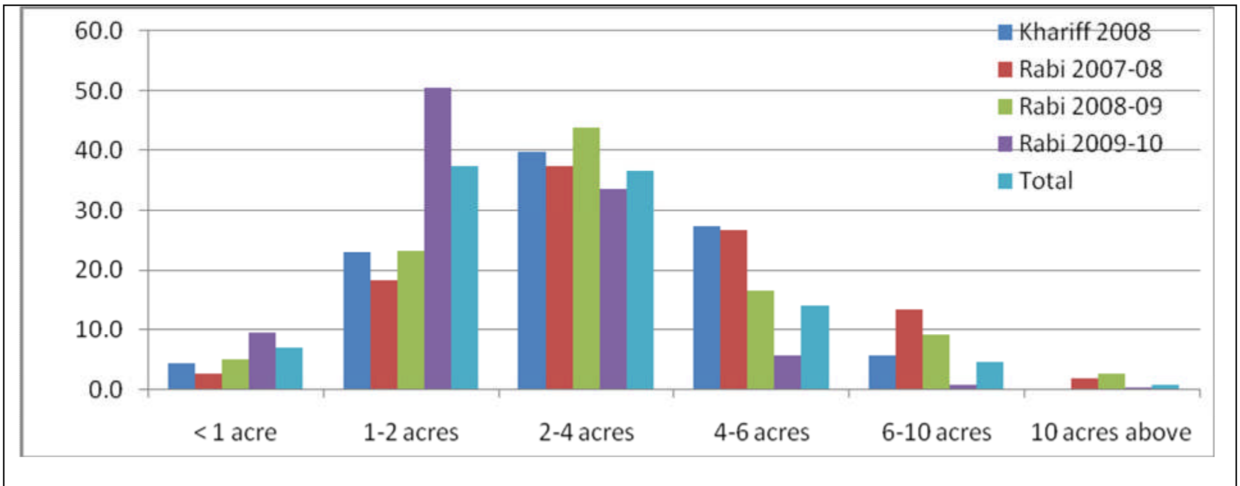
- Motivation of farmers;
- Educated and enthusiastic farmers have been trained to act as master trainers for farmer groups and Farmer Field Schools. Each master trainer is attached to a group of 25-30 farmers
- Organising training programs on the principles and practices involved in SRI method of paddy cultivation;
- Organising exposure visit;
- As part of communication strategy in the newly identified project villages wall writings at the important public places have been done with messages of SRI practices, SRI extension material published with the support of supporting organisation (WWF-ICRISAT project, NABARD) has been distributed;
- Films on SRI have been screened for spreading the awareness on SRI practices;
- ***Kaljatha*** (local folk media) programs were organized in the villages to promote BMP and disseminate information about SRI paddy;
- Data on water, fertilizer and pesticide application was collected regularly;
- Strengthening of linkages established with local government agriculture staff.
- Creating awareness among all the family members about SRI method and among the school children, though pamphlets/booklets and other IEC material.

Source: CROPS.

However, once WWF and ICRISAT project extension support finished, *dis-adoption rates were very high*. In one particular village visited in 2012, the highest number of farmers adopting SRI with WWF project support had been about 180. Thereafter it had dwindled to only 30.

Based on CROPS' data on SRI farming we found that most adopters are small farmers (see Figure 2). For the most part, even among small and marginal farmers, *only a small part of the total area* used for rice cultivation was kept on trial for SRI. So far, no farmer hasadopted SRI completely (Table 15).

Figure 2: Distribution of SRI farmer by Size of the Holding



Note: Total including all years and seasons.

Source: CROPS.

Although the range between the minimum and maximum area under SRI varied with season and year, *the average SRI area per farmer never exceeded one acre* during the last five years (Table 16). Very few farmers experimented with SRI on more than two acres.

Table 15: Percent of area under SRI in the total area under rice cultivation by size of the holding – CROPS' Sample Farmers

Size of the Holding	% of rice area in totalcultivated land					% of SRI area in total area under rice				
	Khariff 2008	Rabi 2007-8	Rabi 2008-9	Rabi 2009-10	All	Khariff 2008	Rabi 2007-8	Rabi 2008-9	Rabi 2009-10	All
1	*2*	*3*	*4*	*5*	*6*	*7*	*8*	*9*	*10*	*11*
Below 1 acre	100	73.3	66.7	93.0	91.3	41.7	141.7	91.7	80.6	80.3
1 – 2 acres	62.1	54.6	56.0	69.0	66.2	52.3	68.2	71.3	47.8	51.7
2 – 4 acres	42.3	40.8	51.4	74.3	59.5	51.0	56.9	55.6	31.8	43.2
4 – 6 acres	39.5	34.2	38.5	70.5	44.8	45.8	42.9	42.5	25.4	39.9
6 – 10 acres	32.8	31.4	34.3	75.0	36.0	34.9	38.9	38.8	13.4	36.0
10 acres above	0	14.6	20.8	33.3	20.8	0	37.5	41.7	50.0	41.7

Note: 1. Size of the holding implies the total operational holding of the farmer; 2. For sample size of SRI farmers see Col. 9 in Table 4.3 below.

Source: CROPS.

Table 16: Size of the Farm Holdings under SRI Paddy Cultivation among the CROPS' Sample Farmers

Season/Year	Area under SRI (acres)			% of SRI Farmers by Size of SRI Area				Total SRI Farmers
	Minimum	Maximum	Average	Below 0.5 acre	0.5 to less than 1 acre	1 to 2 acres	2 acres and above	
1	*2*	*3*	*4*	*5*	*6*	*7*	*8*	*9*
Rabi 2007-08	0.50	1.0	0.73	49.2	50.8	0.0	0.0	120
Kharif 2008	0.25	2.0	0.78	48.3	44.8	7.0	0.0	143
Rabi 2008-09	0.25	3.0	0.89	38.8	51.2	9.1	0.8	121
Kharif 2009	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-
Rabi 2009-10	0.20	3.0	0.62	58.0	27.8	14.0	0.2	457
Karif 2010	0.20	2.5	0.84	-	-	-	-	-
Rabi 2010-11	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-
Kharif 2011	0.25	3.0	0.50	0.7	31.1	33.9	34.3	460

Rabi 2011-12	0.25	1.5	0.70	-	-	-	-	-

Note: ' - ' Not Available.

Source: CROPS.

The experience of CROPS with SRI is similar to the ones obtained in other studies discussed earlier. It shows that to reduce dis-adoption, SRI needs a *continuous follow-up programme* for at least five years. *Incentives* are needed to scale-up the proportion of adopters in a given village. A *critical mass of adopters* would make it possible to have a larger pool of farmers and labourers familiar with the skills of SRI type transplanting and weeding and the synergies that result from 'clustering externalities'.

V

Concluding Observations

The causes of climate change are increasingly apparent in that more or less all forms of production processes, including agriculture, contribute to global warming. The challenge is to identify the sources of greenhouse gases (GHGs), understand the processes through which these are generated and intervene in ways that reduce GHGs.

It is widely believed that one of the world's major staple foods, rice, is also one of the larger contributors to GHGs (Jayadev et al, 2009; Quin et al, 2010). The search for alternative ways of growing rice, in a manner that substantially reducesGHGs has resulted in the identification of SRI as one of the important alternative. By reviewing the results of some of the studies across the globe and the experience in Andhra Pradesh in India, we find that there is incontrovertible evidence, including the preliminary result from our own field study, that SRI uses less water and fewer inputs including energy; reduces costs substantially and results in higher yields compared with conventional cultivation practices (See for e.g. Lim et al, 2011; Kassam et al, 2011; Thakur et al, 2011; Ravindra and Laxmi, 2011; Rao, 2011 and Palanisami et.al. 2013). There is substantial net reduction in GHGs in SRI rice cultivation under a controlled water regime as compared to conventional practice (Quin et al, 2011). In addition, SRI is also well-suited for the water – scarce semi-arid tropics and for the economic conditions of small-marginal farmers who depend more on family labour.

In spite of these outstandingly positive findings, not only validated at the field level in our own research which corroborates that of other scientists, but also widely recognised bynational, state and local governments, civil society organisations and small-marginal farmers themselves, *the spread of*

SRI to rice growing areas is extremely slow, if not retarded. It has failed to make any significant dent on conventional practices and technologies.

Obstacles like the need to follow rigid, time-bound practices, the shift to relatively monotonous isolated work like mechanical weeding, are shown to be *not* insurmountable. Ingenious modifications to tools and practices have been invented. But a further array of factors such as :

i) the lack of resources for research and development in breeding appropriate varieties to overcome the rigid short-duration transplanting schedule,
ii) the appropriate type of weeder including simple mechanised ones that would remove the psychological strain from using the current designs of weeders,
iii) the failure to develop a major agricultural extension programme for SRI and
iv) political resistance to adopt a framework to integrate training in SRI practices with NREGS so as to overcome certain perceived skill deficiencies,

all show that the role of the state in promoting SRI leaves much to be desired. Unlike the agri-technologies for hybrids, GMOs, the design of combine harvesters, and other agricultural machinery, the *corporate sector does not see a profitable market in the promotion of SRI*. On the contrary, there may be corporate lobbies preventing the state from launching major programmes for SRI. The next-step *seems to be in public mobilisation in favour of increased public investment and in the design of appropriate strategies for the spread of SRI*. Another sensible strategy is *to pay attention to the varying ways farmers try to adopt SRI depending on their local conditions*. It is evident now that only 20 percent of adopters of SRI take to all the four core practices of SRI, and the rest of the 80 percent are either partial or low adopters (Palansami et.al. 2013). So finally, farmers need encouragement to adopt incrementally those specific components of SRI that suit them while also helping toincrease yields, reduce costs and in so doing generate the co-benefit of lower greenhouse gases.

References

Adhikari, P; D Sen and N Uphoff (Undated) "System of Rice Intensification as a Resource Conserving Methodology: Contributing to Food Security in an Era of a Climate Change", PRAGATI,Koraput.

Africare, Oxfam America, WWF-ICRISAT Project (2010)*More Rice for People, More Water for the Planet*, WWF-ICRISAT Project, Hyderabad, India.

Berkhout, E. and Glover, D. (2011) *The Evolution of the System of Rice Intensification as a Socio-technical Phenomenon: A report to the Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation*, Wageningen, NL: Wageningen University and Research Centre.

Biksham, Gujja and T M Thiyagrajan (2010) *New Hope for Indian Food Security ?: the System of Rice Intensification, Gatekeeper series*, IIED, London.

Deccan Herald (2011) "She has become villagers' envy: The woman who won the 'rice' against hunger", accessed through http://www.deccanherald.com/content/110687/she-has-become-villagers-envy.html#

Farmer B. H. (ed) *Green Revolution?* Macmillan

Gathorne-Hardy A. 2013'Greenhouse gas emissions from rice'*RGTW Working Paper no 3*, CSASP, SIAS, Oxford

GoI (2011) *Agricultural Statistics at a Glance 2011*, Department of Agriculture and Co-operation, Government of India, New Delhi.

GoAP (2011) *Report of theState Level Committee To Study The Problems Of Farmers In Crop Holiday Affected Mandals Of East Godavari District of Andhra Pradesh*, Government of Andhra Pradesh, Hyderabad.

Jayadeva, H.M; T.K. PrabhakaraSetty; R.C. Gowda; R. Devendra; G.B. Mallikarjun; and A.G. Bandi (2009) "Methane Emission as influenced by different Crop Establishment Techniques and Organic Manure", *Agricultural Science Digest*, Vol. 29 (4), pp.241-245.

Kassam, Amir; Willem Stoop; and Norman Uphoff (2011) "Review of SRI modifications in rice crop and water managementand research issues for making further improvementsin agricultural and water productivity", *Paddy and Water Environment*, Vol. 9, pp. 163-180.

Laxminarayana, K; , N Purendra Prasad; SudheerKilaru; and VamsiVakulabharanam (2011) "Understanding the Andhra Crop Holiday", *Economic and Political Weekly*, Vol - XLVI No. 50, December 10, 2011

Laulanie, H De (1992) "Technical Presentation of the System of Rice Intensification, based on Katayama's Tillering Model", Association TefySaina (ATS), Antananarivo, Madgascar.

Laulanie, H De (2011) "Intensive Rice Farming in Madgascar", Technical Notes, *Tropicultura*, Vol. 29 (3), pp.183-187.

Lin, Xianqing; Defeng Zhu; and Xinjun Lin (2011) "Effects of water management and organic fertilization with SRI crop practices on hybrid rice performance and rhizospheredynamics",*Paddy and Water Environment*, Vol. 9, pp. 33-39.

National Consortium on SRI (NSC, 2012) "Enhancing Employment and Substituting Production", National Consortium on SRI, New Delhi.

NCAER (2007) "Socio-Economic and Ecological Concerns for Productivity Enhancing and Resource Conservation Practices in Rice: A Case of SRI in the Peninsular India", National Centre for Agricultural Economics and Policy Research, New Delhi.

Palanisami, K., K.R. Karunakaran, Upali Amarasinghe and C.R. Ranganathan (2013) "Doing Different Things or Doing It Differently: Rice Intensification Practices in 13 States of India", *Economic and Political Weekly*, Vol. XLVIII, No. 8, February 23, pp. 51-67.

Patra, ParthaSarathi and SamsulHaque (2011) "Effect of Seedling Age on Tillering Pattern And Yield of Rice (*OryzaSativa*L.) under System of Rice Intensification", *ARPN Journal of Agricultural and Biological Sciences*, Vol. 6 (11).

Prasad, C Shambu (2006) *System of Rice Intensification in India: Innovation History and Institutional Challenges*, WWF-ICRISAT Dialogue Project, Xavier Institute of Management, Bubaneswar.

Prasad, C Shambu; KoenBeumer; and DebasisMohanty (2007)*Towards a Learning Alliance: SRI in Orissa*, WWF International-ICRISAT Dialogue Project, Hyderabad.

Prasad, C Shambu; DebasisMohapatra; and Piyush Mishra (2008)*Strengthening the Learning Alliance*, Xavier Institute of Management, Bubaneswar.

Peng, ShiZhang; ShiHong Yang; JunZengXu; and HuanZhiGao (2011a) "Field experiments on Green house gas emissions and nitrogen and phosphorus losses from rice paddy with efficient irrigation and drainage management", *Science China-Technological Science*, Vol. 54 (6), pp. 1581-1587.

Peng, Shi-Zhang; Shi-Hong Yang; Jun-ZengXu; Yu-FengLuo; and Hui-Jing Hou (2011b) "Nitrogen and phosphorus leaching losses from paddy fields with different water and nitrogen managements", Paddy and Water Environment, Vol. 9 (3), pp. 333-342.

Qin, Yanmei; Shuwei Liu; YanqinGuo; Qiaohui Liu; and JianwenZou (2010) "Methane and nitrous oxide emissions from organic and conventional rice cropping systems in Southeast China", *Biology and Fertility of Soils*, Vol. 46 (8), pp.825-834.

Ramana Murthy, R V (2011) "Paddy Glut and Farmer Distress in Andhra Pradesh", *Economic and Political Weekly*, Vol - XLVI No. 29, July 16, 2011

Rao, IVY Rama (2011) "Estimation of Efficiency, Sustainability and Constraints in SRI (System of Rice Intensification) vis-a-vis Traditional Methods of Paddy Cultivation in North Coastal Zone of Andhra Pradesh", *Agricultural Economics Research Review,* Vol. 24, pp. 325-331.

Ravindra, Asusumilli and S. BhagyaLaxmi (2010) "Potential of the System of Rice Intensification for Systemic Improvement in Rice Production and Water Use: The Case of Andhra Pradesh, India", *Paddy and Water Environment*, Vol. 9, pp 89-97.

Reddy, V Ratna; P Prudhvikar Reddy; M Srinivasa Reddy; and D Sree Rama Raju (2005) "Water Use Efficiency: A Study of System of Rice Intensification (SRI) Adoption in Andhra Pradesh", *Indian Journal of Agricultural Economics*, Vol. 60 (3), July-Sept.

SDTT (2009) "A Comparative Study on Drought coping ability of SRI and Conventional method of Paddy Cultivation", Sir Dorabji Tata Trust, Mumbai.

Styger, Erika, GoumarAboubacrine, MalickAttaher, and Norman Uphoff(2011)"The system of rice intensification as a sustainable agricultural innovation: Introducing, adapting and scaling up a system of rice intensification practices in the Timbuktu region of Mali", *International Journal of Agricultural Sustainability*, Vol. 9, pp. 67-75.

Subramanyam and Aparna (2009) "Agriculture in Andhra Pradesh", in S. Mahendra Dev, C Ravi and M. Venkatanarayana (eds.) *Human Development in Andhra Pradesh: Experiences, Issues and Challenges*, Centre for Economic and Social Studies, Hyderabad.

Thakur, Amod K; SreelataRath; D U Patil; andAshwani Kumar (2011) "Effects on rice plant morphology and physiology of waterand associated management practices of the system of rice intensification and their implications for crop performance", *Paddy and Water Environment*, Vol. 9, pp. 13-24.

Uphoff, Norman (2007) "Envisioning 'Post-Modern Agriculture': A Thematic Research Paper", Cornell Univerisity, Ithacca: Accessed through WAASAN Website.

Uphoff, Norman (Undated 1) "Development of the System of Rice Intensification (SRI) in Madgascar", accessed through http://sri.ciifad.cornell.edu/aboutsri/origin/index.html.

Uphoff, Norman (Undated 2) "Agro-ecological Approaches to help "Climate Proof" Agriculture while Raising Productivity in the Twenty-First Century, accessed through V & A Programme (2009) *Vulnerability and Adaptation Experiences from Rajasthan and Andhra Pradesh: The System of Rice Intensification*, SDC V & A Programme, India.

Abbreviations

ATA	- Association of TefySaina
ANGRAU	- Acharya N G Ranga Agricultural University
ATMA	- Agricultural Technology Management Agency
CIIFAD	- Cornel International Institute for Food, Agriculture and Development
CMSA	- Community Managed Sustainable Agriculture
CROPS	- Centre for Rural Operations Programme Society
CRRI	- Central Rice Research Institute

CSA	- Centre for Sustainable Agriculture
CWS	- Centre for World Solidarity
DAATT	- District Agricultural Advisory and Transfer of Technology
DRR	- Directorate of Rice Research
FTTF	- Farmer’s Technology Transfer Fund
ICRISAT	- International Crop Research Institute for Semi-Arid Tropics
IIED	- International Institute for Environment and Development
IRRI	- International Rice Research Institute
KVK	- KrishiVignana Kendra
MSSRF	- M S Swaminathan Research Foundation
NABARD	- National Bank for Agriculture and Rural Development
NADP	- National Agricultural Development Programme
NGO	- Non-Governmental Organisation
NFSM	- National Food Security Mission
NREGS/A	- National Rural Employment Guarantee Scheme/Act
PRADAN	- Professional Action Development Action Network
SDC	- Swiss Agency for Development and Cooperation
SDTT	- Sir Dorabji Tata Trust
SIDA	- Swedish International DevelopmentCooperation Agency
SRI	- System of Rice Intensification
TNAU	- Tamil Nadu Agricultural University
WASSAN	- Watershed Support Services and Activities Network
WWF	- Worldwide Fund for Nature

PRODUCTION AND EXCHANGE RELATIONS IN RAIN-FED AGRICULTURE: THE CASE OF RICE IN ODISHA

Deepak Mishra

PRODUCTION AND EXCHANGE RELATIONS IN RAIN-FED AGRICULTURE: THE CASE OF RICE IN ODISHA

- Deepak K Mishra*

Abstract: *This paper examines the production and exchange relations in rice production systems in rain-fed agriculture. The three objectives were i) to capture the essential features of 'traditional' rain-fed agriculture persisting into the 21st century, ii) to contribute material parameters for rain-fed rice to a life cycle assessment of energy, water and greenhouse gases (Gathorne-Hardy, 2013) iii) to examine the rice sector as a system – involving distribution as well as production two districts: Koraput and Nuapara (part of undivided Kalahandi) were chosen for field-survey. A complete census of two purposively chosen villages, one from each of the selected districts, was undertaken to understand production relations in dry-land agriculture. The paper presents the findings of this survey in relation to agrarian structure and relations in paddy production, post-harvest processing and marketing. It locates the changes in rain-fed rice cultivation in the context of changing livelihoods, introduction of green revolution techniques in new areas and state interventions for rural development.*

I. Introduction

Rain-fed agriculture is typically perceived as low in productivity and is intrinsically linked to poverty and nutrition insecurity in India. Practiced on nearly two thirds of the total cropped area of the country, it supports 40 per cent of India's population and contributes 44 per cent to India's food basket. Nearly 55 per cent of rice, 91 per cent of coarse grains, 90 per cent of pulses, 85 per cent of oilseeds and 65 per cent of cotton are grown under rain-fed conditions (Yadav 2009 cited in Angles et al, 2011;). The linkages between poverty and rain-fed agriculture have also been thoroughly investigated (Garikipati et al, 2008).

Rice is an important crop in India. Rice, however, is produced under diverse conditions (Yadav and Subba Rao, 2001; Frolking et al, 2006). The regional specificities of rice production systems require a nuanced and differentiated approach towards understanding the basic features of paddy production (Barah and Pandey,2005). The diversity of rice production includes the following crucial dimensions:

(a) there is diversity in ecological conditions, production relations and exchange relations - associated with rice. Yadav and Subba Rao (2001) report, for 17 of India's 27 states, *105 crop rotations* that include rice;

* Associate Professor, Centre for the Study of Regional Development, School of Social Sciences, Jawaharlal Nehru University, New Delhi-67
Acknowledgements: The contribution of Dinesh Kumar Nayak, CSRD, JNU in conducting the field-survey and analysing the results of the survey is gratefully acknowledged. The author is also grateful to Abha Gupta and Awadhesh Kumar for their research assistance at various stages of the work. The paper benefitted from the comments and suggestions from Barbara Harriss-White, D Narasimha Reddy and other team members of the project. Comments and discussions in two workshops at MSE, Chennai and NIRD, Hyderabad, where earlier versions were presented have also helped in revising the paper. The usual disclaimers apply.

(b) rice is cultivated both as a subsistence crop as well as a ‘cash crop’- sometimes even as an ‘export crop’;

(c) rice is produced with or without irrigation; with little or high levels of mechanisation;[73]

(d) farmers of all size classes cultivate rice using both family and wage labour along with significant use of female and (seasonally) migrant labour in many cases.

This paper presents research into the production, exchange relations and distribution of paddy in two relatively less developed districts of Odisha. The wider objective is to examine changes in rain-fed rice cultivation in the context of changing livelihoods, the belated introduction of green revolution techniques into new ‘laggard’ areas and state interventions for rural development. This paper is organised as follows: in the next section, we explain the significance of paddy in the rural agrarian economy of Odisha. Then, we present findings from a primary survey in two villages. Following the discussion on livelihood scenarios, agrarian relations and production conditions, we turn to discuss the post-harvesting processing and marketing system. The final section concludes.

II. Rice in Odisha Agriculture: A Brief Outline

Odisha is not only among the poorest states of India, its record in poverty reduction has been consistently less impressive than many other less developed states of the country. In the poor and less developed state, agrarian livelihoods are the key to the survival of the poor. However, it needs to be emphasized that poverty in Odisha is also highly concentrated – both spatially and socially (de Haan and Dubey, 2005; Shah et al, 2005; Mishra, 2009; Panda, 2008). It is interior districts of South Odisha, and, to a lesser extent North Odisha, where the incidence of poverty is higher and rates of poverty reduction considerably slower. Among social groups, it is the scheduled castes and scheduled tribes who account for bulk of the poor population. These marginalised social groups also have a relatively higher share in population in the South and North Odisha NSS regions. Even among the SCs and STs, those living in South Odisha live in far greater poverty than those living in the coastal region. Thus spatial and social vulnerabilities reinforce each other.[74]

---

[73] Approximately 55% of India’s rice crop is irrigated, the fraction of rice area that is irrigated varies by state from <50% in Madhya Pradesh, Maharashtra, and Bihar, to >90% in Punjab, Tamil Nadu, Andhra Pradesh, and Haryana. Rainfed rice occupied 13 Mha, plus 5.45 Mha of upland rice and 1.35 Mha of deepwater rice (>1 m flooding depth 1999-2000).

[74] This phenomenon has much deeper socio-historical roots and cannot be explored here. For Odisha as a whole, the incidence of poverty among the ST and the SC is higher than that among the others. Between 1993-94 and 2004-05, poverty ratio in fact, has increased among the STs and SCs in the northern and southern districts (de Haan and Dubey, 2005; Mishra, 2010).

In terms of agricultural productivity, Odisha is also much behind the national average. In fact, apart from the areas irrigated by the Hirakud dam (mostly undivided Sambalpur) and parts of coastal Odisha district the green revolution simply bypassed the state. Even in these isolated pockets of agrarian prosperity, productivity levels were until lately much lower than the national average. Recent decades have seen some dynamism in the interior districts, which is partly captured by tables 1 and 2.

Rice is the staple food in Odisha and it accounts for 32% of Odisha's total cropped area. The resource use pattern in agriculture is markedly different from the regions of advanced agriculture in India. For example, as per NSS 59th round data,

(i) 65 per cent of Odisha's farmers used organic manure for Khariff crops (contrasted with Tamil Nadu(TN): 62 per cent; Andhra Pradesh(AP):69 per cent; and All-India: 56 per cent);

(ii) only 19 per cent used improved seeds (TN: 68 per cent; AP: 68 per cent; India: 46 per cent);

(iii) 41 per cent of farmers used pesticides (TN: 65 per cent; AP: 71 per cent; India:46 per cent);

(iv) 76 per cent of farmers used fertilizers (TN: 72; AP:81; India: 76 per cent).

The conditions of agricultural production in Odisha, in terms of energy use, are also different from the relatively advanced states. The same data set (NSS 59th round) shows that

(i) 88 per cent of farmers use animal power for ploughing (TN: 30.4 ; AP: ; All India: 52.0);

(ii) 92.7 per cent use animal power for harvesting (TN: 13.1; AP: 61.4; India:37.6);

(iii) 86 per cent use animal power for transport (TN:34.8 ; AP: 39.8; India:46.2);

(iv) only 7.1 per cent of farmers use diesel/petrol/kerosene for harvesting (TN: 78.7 ; AP: 60; India:58.6).

Table 1: Paddy Production and Diversification in Districts of Odisha

Name of the Districts	% of Gross Cropped Area under Paddy (Total) 2007-2010 (triennial averages)	Index of Crop Diversification 2007-2010 (triennial averages)	Index of Crop Diversification 1980-81	Change in % of GCA under Paddy (during 2009-10 and 1980-81)
Balasore	48.36	0.48	0.67	5.26
Bolangir	33.12	0.49	0.63	17.51
Cuttack	31.98	0.61	0.62	-10.06
Dhenkanal	25.29	0.52	0.55	-8.12
Ganjam	24.43	0.66	0.67	-1.55
Kalahandi	27.56	0.69	0.66	42.28
Keonjhar	32.08	0.55	0.60	0.03
Koraput	26.40	0.59	0.58	20.26

Mayurbhanj	43.80	0.71	0.68	0.45
Phulbani	25.85	0.49	0.51	19.16
Puri	34.04	0.73	0.72	-11.22
Sambalpur	38.45	0.67	0.65	1.04
Sundergarh	38.30	0.67	0.67	7.92
Odisha	32.42	0.64	0.63	4.16

Note: The old 13 districts have been used in this study.
Source: Statistical Abstract, Odisha & Orissa Agricultural Statistics, various years.

Further, inter-district variations in levels of agricultural development are significant. Intensive farming practices in Odisha are mostly concentrated in the coastal districts of Cuttack, Puri, Balasore and Ganjam and Sambalpur in inland Odisha. In poor regions of Southern and Northern Odisha agriculture is rain-fed, of low productivity and subsistence-oriented.

Data presented in Table 1 show that while paddy accounted for 33 per cent of GCA in Odisha during 2007-10; for Kalahandi (where one of the districts under study, Nuapada is sited) the share of paddy was only 27.56, while for undivided Koraput it was 26.40 per cent.

Table 2: Yield Gap in Paddy Production in Districts of Odisha

Name of the Districts	Yield of Paddy (Kg per Ha) 2007-2010 Year (triennial averages)	% Gap between Odisha average for the same year (2007-2010) and district average	% Gap between All India average for the same year (2007-2010) and district average
Balasore	1686.40	3.53	-28.68
Bolangir	1794.95	9.36	-20.89
Cuttack	1674.93	2.87	-29.56
Dhenkanal	1404.45	-15.84	-54.51
Ganjam	1960.62	17.02	-10.68
Kalahandi	1421.25	-14.47	-52.68
Keonjhar	1478.24	-10.06	-46.80
Koraput	1493.94	-8.90	-45.25
Mayurbhanj	1544.99	-5.30	-40.45
Phulbani	1505.95	-8.03	-44.09
Puri	1550.65	-4.92	-39.94
Sambalpur	1940.65	16.17	-11.82
Sundergarh	1168.54	-39.23	-85.70
Odisha	1626.94	0.00	-33.38
All India	2170		0.00

Source: Orissa Agricultural Statistics, various years

Data presented in table 2 shows that Odisha's paddy yields are nearly a third lower than the All-India average. Within Odisha there is a great deal of variation in paddy yield - from 1941 kg/ha in Sambalpur to 1169 in Sundergarh. Both Kalahandi (1421) and Koraput (1494) have average yields lower than the All-Odisha mean.

Table 3: Growth Rates of Area, Production and Yield of Paddy in Districts of Odisha

Name of the Districts	Compound Annual Growth Rate of Paddy: 1980-81 to 1990-91			CAGR of Paddy: 1990-91 to 2000-01			CAGR of Paddy: 2000-01 to latest 2009-10			CAGR of Paddy: 1980-81 to latest year 2009-10		
	A	P	Y	A	P	Y	A	P	Y	A	P	Y
Balasore	1.00	-1.44	-2.42	-0.32	5.89	6.23	-0.13	1.49	1.61	0.18	1.81	1.62
Bolangir	1.00	4.87	3.84	-0.20	-8.62	-8.43	1.14	14.91	13.62	0.58	2.64	2.05
Cuttack	-0.18	0.34	0.52	-0.60	-1.37	-0.78	-0.44	6.93	7.39	-0.38	1.59	1.97
Dhenkanal	0.30	0.82	0.51	-0.10	-7.89	-7.80	-1.28	11.03	12.47	-0.30	0.61	0.92
Ganjam	-0.01	2.11	2.12	-0.09	-2.11	-2.02	-0.08	5.63	5.72	-0.06	1.56	1.62
Kalahandi	1.95	3.26	1.29	1.74	2.46	0.70	0.29	4.99	4.68	1.27	3.25	1.96
Keonjhar	1.13	3.19	2.03	-0.79	-0.35	0.44	-0.38	3.74	4.13	0.00	1.97	1.96
Koraput	1.23	4.85	3.58	1.44	0.44	-0.98	-0.67	1.76	2.44	0.66	2.19	1.52
Mayurbhanj	-0.07	0.15	0.22	0.39	1.56	1.17	-0.30	2.06	2.36	0.02	1.13	1.12
Phulbani	2.19	5.30	3.05	0.42	-6.14	-6.54	-0.71	11.74	12.54	0.63	2.83	2.19
Puri	-1.12	0.96	2.10	-0.12	1.20	1.32	-0.08	3.31	3.39	-0.42	1.63	2.07
Sambalpur	0.47	4.41	3.93	-0.43	-6.32	-5.92	0.08	8.29	8.20	0.04	1.58	1.54
Sundergarh	1.87	3.36	1.46	-0.17	-6.04	-5.88	-0.94	2.55	3.52	0.27	-0.22	-0.49
Odisha	0.55	2.30	1.73	0.08	-1.48	-1.55	-0.19	5.39	5.60	0.15	1.77	1.62

Source: Orissa Agricultural Statistics, various years

The growth pattern of Paddy in Odisha, as presented in Table 3, shows that after a modest growth in yield during the 1980s, yield growth was negative during the 1990s- a pattern that has been observed in many other states as well- and a remarkable recovery during 2000-10. In terms of growth of paddy yield, both the districts studied have shown lower rates of growth than that of the state. That of Koraput was much more remarkable than that of Kalahandi, of which Nuapada was a part, in the 1980s, but in 1990s Koraput had a sharer deceleration in yield growth. During 2000-1to 2009-10, both the districts, particularly Kalahandi, have shown a remarkable growth in yield, which may be because of an increase in the area under irrigation.

Since these two districts- Kalahandi and Koraput- have been split into 2 and 4 new districts respectively, the yield gap and growth rates of area, production and yield of paddy for these new districts are shown for the period 2000-2010 in table 4. The yield in Nuapada is 15 per cent lower than that of the All Odisha average, while that of Koraput is only marginally lower than that of Odisha as a whole.75

[75] The reasons need further investigation, but expansion of area under irrigation because of Upper Kolab and other projects, could be among the reasons for this better yield.

Table 4: Yield Gap and Growth Rates of Area, Production and Yield of Paddy in Nuapada and Koraput Districts

Name of the Districts	Yield of Paddy (Kg per Ha) 2007-2010 Year (triennial averages)	% Gap in Yield between Odisha average (2007-2010) and district	% Gap between All India average (2007-2010) and district	Compound Annual Growth Rate of Paddy: 1990-2000 to 2009-2010		
				Area	Production	Yield
Koraput	1633	0.37	-32.89	-1.34	-1.69	-0.35
Malkanagiri	1315	-23.73	-65.04	-0.17	-0.57	-0.40
Nawarangpur	1373	-18.52	-58.08	0.32	-1.11	-1.42
Rayagada	1743	6.65	-24.51	0.75	2.73	1.97
Koraput (undivided)	**1494**	**-8.90**	**-45.25**	**-0.19**	**-0.49**	**-0.30**
Kalahandi	1390	-17.08	-56.17	2.40	5.09	2.63
Nuapara	1492	-9.02	-45.42	0.06	1.62	1.55
Kalahandi (undivided)	**1421**	**-14.47**	**-52.68**	**1.73**	**4.23**	**2.46**
Odisha	1626.94	0.00	-33.38	0.59	-3.31	-3.88
All India	2170		0.00	-0.84	-0.07	0.77

Source: Orissa Agricultural Statistics, various years

Not only is rice an important crop in terms of agricultural production and share in the gross cropped area, it is also important for consumption. Average rice consumption per capita per day is much higher in rural Odisha than the all India average (Table 5) - 95 per cent of total cereal consumption and 62 per cent of total food consumption. The corresponding All-India averages are 57 per cent for cereals and 35 per cent for food. Within Odisha, the predominance of rice in the food basket is much more pronounced in the North and South Odisha NSS regions, than in the coastal region.

Table 5: Rice Consumption in Odisha

Rural	Average Per capita Daily Consumption of Rice (in Kg)	Average Per Capita Daily Consumption of Cereals (in Kg)	Average Per Capita Daily Consumption of Food (in Kg)	% of Rice in Total Cereal Consumption	% of Rice in Total Food Consumption
Coastal Odisha	.4319	.4663	.7441	92.62	58.04
North Odisha	.4775	.4923	.7051	96.99	67.72
South Odisha	.4100	.4341	.6678	96.45	61.39
Odisha	.4377	.4629	.7070	94.56	61.90
All India	.2155	.3794	.6171	56.80	34.92

Note: Total food include cereal, pulse, milk, sugar, edible oil, vegetable and fruits
Source: NSS Consumer Expenditure Schedule, 2009-10

Further, the consumption of rice is higher among the poor than among the non-poor population, higher among the agricultural labourers than cultivators, as is the share of rice in total food consumption. Among the poor, among agricultural labourers and cultivators, the share of rice in total food-grain consumption is higher in the North and South Odisha regions than that in the coastal region. So the consumption of rice, though relatively high for all population groups in rural Odisha, has marked associations with spatial and socio-economic characteristics of the population. The culture of rice is associated with poverty and backwardness. In this setting the conditions of production and distribution are investigated in subsequent sections.

Table 6: Rice Consumption among Socio-Economic Groups: The Regional Dimension

NSS Region (Rural)	Category	Average Per capita Daily Consumption of Rice	Average Per Capita Daily Consumption of Cereals	Average Per Capita Daily Consumption of Food	% of Rice in Total Cereal Consumption	% of Rice in Total Food Consumption
Coastal Odisha	Poor *	0.406	0.422	0.629	96.39	64.65
	Non-Poor *	0.417	0.468	0.784	89.07	53.13
	self-employed in non-agriculture	0.413	0.457	0.740	90.34	55.77
	Agricultural Labour	0.465	0.478	0.742	97.20	62.66
	Other labour	0.432	0.476	0.754	90.81	57.31
	self-employed in agriculture	0.431	0.464	0.731	92.93	58.99
	Other	0.396	0.460	0.797	86.06	49.66
North Odisha	Poor	0.446	0.453	0.615	98.41	72.53
	Non-Poor	0.480	0.512	0.782	93.73	61.40
	self-employed in non-agriculture	0.481	0.497	0.709	96.76	67.79
	Agricultural Labour	0.462	0.469	0.654	98.68	70.70
	Other labour	0.493	0.504	0.730	97.82	67.52
	self-employed in agriculture	0.492	0.508	0.721	96.91	68.29
	Other	0.438	0.472	0.743	92.63	58.90
South Odisha	Poor	0.369	0.392	0.568	94.16	65.06
	Non-Poor	0.440	0.470	0.771	93.74	57.10
	self-employed in non-agriculture	0.395	0.423	0.678	93.45	58.31
	Agricultural Labour	0.403	0.426	0.617	94.71	65.34
	Other labour	0.404	0.430	0.668	94.04	60.46
	self-employed in agriculture	0.427	0.447	0.681	95.44	62.63
	Other	0.394	0.433	0.772	91.02	51.12
Odisha	Poor	0.401	0.417	0.598	96.09	67.10
	Non-Poor	0.441	0.481	0.780	91.68	56.54
	self-employed in non-agriculture	0.426	0.458	0.716	93.01	59.48
	Agricultural Labour	0.443	0.458	0.675	96.72	65.66
	Other labour	0.431	0.457	0.700	94.31	61.56
	self-employed in agriculture	0.449	0.472	0.711	95.13	63.14
	Other	0.409	0.457	0.773	89.50	52.90

Note: * Poverty line has been taken from Planning Commission, Government of India, 2009-10.
Source: NSS Consumer Expenditure Schedule, 2009-10

III. Production Conditions in Rainfed Paddy Cultivation: Insights from a Village Survey

Study Area and Survey Design

To explore the production and exchange relations in rain-fed paddy production systems which do not use the bio-chemical inputs of the green revolution, a detailed primary survey was undertaken in 2012 in two of the new districts of Odisha: Nuapada and Koraput. These two districts had lower levels of both productivity and irrigation. Two study villages were selected purposively according to the following criteria:

(a) rain-fed paddy cultivation;

(b) no use of electricity in agriculture;

(c) no/ little use of chemical fertilizers and pesticides.

The objectives were threefold. First, to capture the essential features of 'traditional' rain-fed agriculture persisting into the 21st century, second, to measure material parameters (energy, water and the production of waste GHGs) for rice, and third, to examine the rice sector as a *system* – involving distribution as well as production. This research has not been done before. Primary data was collected from households on the basis of two different schedules. Firstly, all the households in the selected villages were interviewed on the basis of a detailed questionnaire, through which information about all aspects of farming, allied agricultural activities and livelihoods sources were collected. Secondly, twenty-four randomly selected farmers cultivating rice were asked detailed questions about paddy cultivation in one representative paddy plot cultivated by the household. Information generated from this exercise from 48 plots in a comparative framework has been used for the LCA-VCA model to calculate greenhouse gases, while information from the general household questionnaire has been used in this paper to investigate conditions of production and exchange in the study villages[76]. This has been supplemented by focus group discussions and in-depth interviews with traders, wholesalers, grocery shop owners, officials with regulated market cooperative societies, commission agents, rice mill owners, researchers, hauler-owners, officers managing the PDS, labourers, transport workers and owners to gather information about post-harvest processing, marketing and distribution of paddy.

The two districts: Koraput and Nuapara (part of undivided Kalahandi) are part of KBK-region- which has a special policy identity. Two phases of the Biju KBK yojana have been implemented by the state government with assistance from the planning commission and the central government. In the 1980s, Kalahandi, Balangir and Koraput (KBK) region came to be recognized as synonymous with mass

[76] That is why, there are some discrepancies between in the figures generated through the analysis of plot-level data and data generated through household-level information.

poverty, starvation and hunger deaths (Currie, 2000; Lokadrusti, 1993). Although these districts continue to have very high incidence of poverty, interventions by the state and NGOs have brought-in many new programmes to strengthen food security and to improve agricultural productivity. So far as the agrarian economy of the region is concerned, two recent changes need to be taken into consideration: First, new irrigation projects have generated irrigation in traditional rain-fed regions, leading to mono-cropping, double crop paddy in selected pockets. Second, cotton is being promoted by both government and private agencies, and is being aggressively developed as an alternative to traditional rice-based production systems under low water availability. These developments have not however been covered under the research reported here..

Basic Socio-Economic Features

The two study villages are relatively small villages with large share of Scheduled Caste (SC) and Scheduled Tribal (ST) people. The Nuapada village has mostly STs, while the Koraput village has a mix of SCs and STs[77]. Literacy rates were 52 and 71 per cent in Koraput and Nuapada villages respectively. Around 9 per cent of the villagers have studied beyond class 10. Agriculture is the major occupation of households in both these villages (Table 8) but in the Koraput village agricultural labour emerges as the second most important occupation, while in Nuapada, it is not a major occupation. While a miniscule percentage of households report salaried employment or business, a relatively high (15-18) per cent of households report 'pension' as their main occupation.

Table 7: Basic Demographic and Socio-Economic Features

	Koraput	Nuapada	Total
No Of Households	67	80	147
Population	233	369	602
Average Family Size	4.79	4.82	4.81
Literacy Rate (%)	52	71	64
% of People Who Have studied beyond 10th	7	10	9
% Of SC	24	0	11
% of ST	76	90	84
% of OBC	0	10	5

Source: Field Survey, 2012

Sources of Livelihoods

Since occupation does not capture the diversity of livelihoods in the villages, a separate and revealing question was asked about sources of livelihoods, with the possibility of opting for multiple answers.. The average number of livelihoods per households works out to be 3.48 in Koraput and 3.26 in Nuapada. In Koraput, the most frequently cited livelihoods sources were: forest related activities (that

[77] In rest of the discussion when we refer to Nuapada or Koraput we are discussing these two study villages. While the primary data presented here is expected to be a good representative of the rainfed rice production system in the region, in other aspects they may not represent the district.

include collection of non-timber forest products (NTFPs) for self-provisioning as well as for sale); casual wage labour in agriculture; casual wage labour in non-agriculture (within the village or in nearby towns through commuting) and cultivation. In Nuapada, the most important livelihoods are: cultivation; casual farm labour; forest-related activities and seasonal migration. In overall terms the most significant sources of livelihoods are: forest-related activities; casual wage labour in agriculture and cultivation (Table 9).

Table 8: Distribution of Households by Principal Occupation

Sl. No.	Principal Occupations of HH heads	Koraput	Nuapada	Total
1	Cultivation	40 (60)	60 (75)	100 (68)
2	Agricultural Labour	11 (16)	1 (1)	12 (8)
4	Animal husbandry	0 (0)	2 (2)	2 (1)
5	Casual non-farm work	1 (1)	1 (1)	2 (1)
6	Trade and business	1 (1)	0 (0)	1 (1)
7	Regular salaried employee	1 (1)	3 (4)	4 (3)
8	Pension	12 (18)	12 (15)	24 (16)
9	Others	1 (1)	1 (1)	2 (1)
10	Total	67 (100)	80 (100)	147 (100)

Source: Field Survey, 2012

Table 9: Major Sources of Livelihoods

Sl No	Occupations/ Livelihoods	Koraput		Nuapada		Total	
		No	%	No	%	No	%
1	Own Farm Activities (Cropping)	41	17.60	72	27.59	113	22.87
2	Livestock (for sale or for self consumption)	3	1.29	11	4.21	14	2.83
3	Forest (firewood/ leaves for sale or for self consumption)	61	26.18	63	24.14	124	25.10
4	Casual Labour (Farm) in the village	55	23.61	66	25.29	121	24.49
5	Migration for Casual labour in farm	3	1.29	1	0.38	4	0.81
6	Casual Labour non-farm in village or nearby	50	21.46	5	1.92	55	11.13
7	Migration for labour non-farm	3	1.29	17	6.51	20	4.05
8	Salaried Employment	1	0.43	4	1.53	5	1.01
9	Petty Business/Trade/ Manufacturing	0	0.00	4	1.53	4	0.81
10	Major Business/Trade/Manufacturing	1	0.43	0	0.00	1	0.20
11	Collection/Foraging	0	0.00	1	0.38	1	0.20
12	Charity/Alms	0	0.00	1	0.38	1	0.20
13	Public Transfers/Pensions	12	5.15	14	5.36	26	5.26
14	Private Transfers/Remittances	0	0.00	2	0.77	2	0.40
15	Other (specify)	3	1.29	0	0.00	3	0.61
		233	100	261	100	494	100

Note: Multiple Answers Allowed
Source: Field Survey, 2012

Since a number of different livelihoods are combined by rural households, the predominant livelihoods combinations have also been examined (Table 10). With some simplifications, 33 different livelihood combinations were identified for the 147 households under study. The following are the most important combinations in the Koraput village: (crop cultivation+ casual farm labour+ forest); (crop cultivation+ casual non-farm labour+ forest); (casual labour in farm+ casual labour in non-farm+ forest) and (crop farming+casual labour in farm+ casual labour in non-farm). Similarly, for the Nuapada village, the most important livelihoods combinations are (crop cultivation+ casual non-farm labour+ forest); (cultivation+ casual farm labour + seasonal migration to non-farm).

Even this highly simplified mapping of livelihoods brings out their diversity in the study area. The key aspects of the livelihoods strategies that emerge from the analysis are:

(i) the significance of forest-resources as a supplementary source of livelihoods;

(ii) the participation of cultivator households in the wage labour market;

(iii) the significance of non-farm wage labour, both within and outside the villages. It is in this context that production conditions in paddy cultivation need to be analysed and understood.

Table 10: Major Livelihoods Combinations

Sl No	Livelihoods Combinations	Koraput		Nuapada		Total	
		No	%	No	%	No	%
1	1,4,3 (Crop Cultivation, Casual Labour in Farming, Forest)	23	34.33	34	42.50	57	38.78
2	1,3,6 (Crop Cultivation, Forest, Casual Labour non-farm)	9	13.43	1	1.25	10	6.80
3	4,3,6 (Casual Labour Farming, Forest, Casual Labour in Non-farm)	8	11.94	1	1.25	9	6.12
4	1,3,7 (Crop Farming, Forest, Seasonal Migration-Nonfarm)	1	1.49	7	8.75	8	5.44
5	1,4,6 (Crop Farming, Casual Labour Farm, Casual Labour Non-farm)	6	8.96	1	1.25	7	4.76
6	1,4,7 (Crop Farming, Casual Labour Farm, Seasonal Migration-non-farm)	1	1.49	6	7.50	7	4.76
7	3,4,6 (Forest, Casual Labour Farm, Casual Labour Non-farm)	5	7.46	0	0.00	5	3.40
8	1,2,3 (Crop Farming, Livestock, Forest)	0	0.00	4	5.00	4	2.72
9	1,4 (Crop Farming, Casual Labour Farm)	0	0.00	4	5.00	4	2.72
10	1,4,16 (Crop Farming, Casual Labour Farm, Public Transfer, Pension)	0	0.00	3	3.75	3	2.04
11	16 (Public Transfer, Pension)	3	4.48	0	0.00	3	2.04
12	16,3,4 (Public Transfer, Pension, Forest, Casual Farm Labour)	2	2.99	1	1.25	3	2.04
13	9 (Salaried Appointment)	1	1.49	2	2.50	3	2.04
14	1,2,4 (Crop Farming, Livestock, Casual Farm Labour)	0	0.00	2	2.50	2	1.36
15	3,4 (Forest, Casual Farm Labour)	1	1.49	1	1.25	2	1.36
16	4,3,16 (Casual Farm Labour, Forest, Public Transfer)	1	1.49	1	1.25	2	1.36
17	9,1 (Salaried Appointment, Crop Farming)	0	0.00	2	2.50	2	1.36
18-33	Others	38	56.72	36	45.00	74	50.34
Total		67	100.00	80		147	100.00

Note: 1-Own Farm Activities (Cropping); 2-Livestock (for sale or for self consumption); 3-Forest (firewood/ leaves for sale or for self consumption); 4-Casual Labour (Farm) in the village; 5-Migration for Casual labour in farm; 6-Casual Labour non-farm in village or nearby; 7-Migration for labour non-farm; 8-Long Term Agriculture Labour (Permanent Labour); 9-Salaried Employment; 10-Personal (Jajmani) Services; 11-Petty Business/Trade/ Manufacturing; 12-Major Business /Trade / Manufacturing; 13-Collection/Foraging; 14-Charity/Alms; 15-Interest Income, Property, Land Rentals, Etc; 16-Public Transfers/ Pensions; 17-Private Transfers/Remittances; 18-Other (specify)

Source: Field Survey, 2012

Access to Land

Both the villages under study are tribal-dominated villages, and there were no 'traditional' upper caste landlords there. Such villages are typically characterised by a low degree of inequality in the distribution of land. The average size of ownership holdings in Koraput village was 1.50 acres and in Nuapara it was 1.95 acres. Most of the households own tiny plots. In fact, nearly 78 per cent of households own less than 4 acres of land. The incidence of landlessness is not very high, as one might expect in a predominantly tribal area, but if the marginal farmers owning less than an acre of land are considered near-landless, the incidence goes up to 45 per cent in Koraput and 6.5 per cent in Nuapada. In both villages, small farmers owning 2-4 acres of land have a significant presence, but in Koraput village, one household owns 25 acres of land. The question of land quality proves extremely important, as productivity differentials between low-land in valleys and uplands are very high. The relatively large land-owning households typically have greater shares of the fertile low-land and, to that extent, the picture presented in Tables 11 and 12 under-estimates inequality in land ownership.

Table 11: Distribution of Households by Ownership Holdings

Class	Koraput		Nuapada		Total	
	Number	Area owned (in acres)	Number	Area Owned (in acres)	Number	Area Owned (in acres)
Landless (0 acre)	3 (4.48)	0.0 (0.0)	4 (5.0)	0 (0)	7 (4.76)	0.0 (0.0)
Marginal (0.001-1)	27 (40.30)	3.9 (3.9)	1 (1.25)	0.30 (0.19)	28 (19.05)	4.1 (2.06)
Small (1.001-2)	18 (26.87)	22.8 (22.7)	44 (55.0)	56.62 (36.35)	62 (42.18)	59.2 (29.53)
Semi-medium (2.001-4)	16 (23.88)	38.6 (38.4)	23 (28.75)	56.40 (36.21)	39 (26.53)	74.8 (37.32)
Medium (4.001-10)	2 (2.99)	10.0 (10.0)	8 (10.0)	42.43 (27.24)	10 (6.80)	37.3 (18.59)
Large (10.001 & above)	1 (1.49)	25.0 (24.9)	0 (0)	0 (0.00)	1 (0.68)	25.0 (12.49)
Total	67 (100)	100.4 (100)	80 (100)	155.75 (100)	147 (100)	200.4 (100)

Source: Field Survey, 2012

Table 12: Distribution of Households by Operational Holdings

Class	Koraput		Nuapada	
	Number	Area Operated (in acres)	Number	Area Operated (in acres)
Not Operating any land	22 (32.84)	0 (0.00)	5 (6.25)	0 (0.00)
Marginal (0.001/1)	18 (26.87)	13.41 (13.71)	28 (35.0)	28 (18.01)
Small (1.001/2)	18 (26.87)	31.9 (32.61)	24 (30.0)	40 (25.72)
Semi-medium (2.001/4)	7 (10.45)	21.5 (21.98)	16 (20.0)	47.5 (30.55)
Medium (4.001/10)	1 (1.49)	6 (6.13)	7 (8.75)	40 (25.72)
Large (10.001/above)	1 (1.49)	25 (25.56)	0 (0.00)	0 (0)
Total	67 (100)	97.81 (100)	80 (100)	155.5 (100)

Note: Figures in brackets refers to percentages to column totals.
Source: Field Survey, 2012

In terms of the distribution of operational holdings, it is found that most farmers operate tiny holdings. The three lower size-classes, operating between 0.001 and 4 acres of land, account for 64 per cent of holdings in Koraput and 85 per cent of holdings in Nuapada. If the non-cultivating households are excluded, their share goes up even further. Thus, cultivation is mostly carried out on tiny and small holdings and the overall character of agriculture is that of subsistence production rather than of production for market.

We did not find a significant presence of land-leasing in the study villages. In total, 4 households (in Nuapada) are leasing-in: two part-tenants (owned 1 acre each and leased-in 2.92 and 2 acres respectively (total 4.92 acres)) and two pure tenants (land owned zero with6 and 5 acres respectively leased-in (total 11 acres)).It is consistent with other research showing a higher incidence of tenancy in the irrigated rice cultivating belt (Mishra, 2008).

Cropping Pattern

The cropping pattern in the two study villages is dominated by paddy: its share in GCA is 60 per cent in Koraput and 89 per cent in Nuapada. While Ragi is the most important second crop in Koraput, Arhar occupies the same position in Nuapada. Most cultivators reported themselves to be single-crop farmers. However, many farmers, particularly in Koraput, also use simultaneous sowing and sequential harvesting methods of mixed cropping in uplands. Ragi, Alsi (an oilseed) and Suan (a small millet) are among the traditional food crops of the region and these crops, because of the sequential nature of their harvesting, provide food security during the lean periods. The complexities of the crop cycle are captured by the data on crop combinations (Table 14). A large number of farmers in Nuapada reported to be cultivating paddy alone, while in Koraput paddy is cultivated as part of a number of different crop combinations. So, it is useful to analyse paddy as part of a crop system rather than as an isolated crop. This is one of the specificities of the cropping pattern in the study region, that needs to be highlighted in understanding the implications of the standard cost and returns exercises that have been undertaken in the subsequent section.

Table 13: Cropping Pattern

Crop	Koraput		Nuapada		Total	
	Area	% of GCA	Area	% of GCA	Area	% of GCA
Paddy	55	59.88	145	88.46	200	78.21
Ragi	18	20.03	0	0.00	18	7.18
Arhar	0	0.33	11	6.78	11	4.47
Aalsi	7	7.97	0	0.00	7	2.86
Moong	6	6.55	0	0.00	6	2.35
Biri	0	0.00	6	3.42	6	2.19
Groundnut	4	4.15	0	0.00	4	1.49
Urad-Arhar-Suan*	0	0.00	2	1.34	2	0.86
Suan*	1	1.09	0	0.00	1	0.39
Total	92	100.00	164	100.00	256	100.00

Note: Area in acres; *Suan (small-millets);

Source: Field Survey, 2012

Table 14: Major Crop Combinations

Crop combinations	No of Households/ Holdings		
	Koraput	Nuapada	Total
Paddy	17	46	63
Paddy, Arhar	0	15	15
Paddy, Ragi	12	0	12
Paddy, Moong	0	6	6
Paddy, Ragi, Biri	4	0	4
Paddy, Arhar, Groundnut	0	3	3
Paddy, Arhar, Moong	0	3	3
Paddy, Ragi, Aalsi	3	0	3
Paddy, Ragi, Aalsi, Biri	2	0	2
Paddy, Aalsi, Ragi	1	0	1
Paddy, Ragi, Aalsi, Biri,Arhar	1	0	1
Paddy, Ragi, Aalsi, Biri, Arhar	1	0	1
Paddy, Ragi, Suan, Aalsi	1	0	1
Total	42	73	115

Source: Field Survey, 2012

Input-Use in Paddy Cultivation

The domination of subsistence paddy production in the region is revealed in the analysis of costs and returns from the cultivation of different crops. The distribution of costs according to farm size is found in Table 15. In terms of per acre use of seed, the variations across farm-sizes is not very significant, for paddy as well as for other crops. Small amounts of chemical fertilisers are used only in the case of paddy. Most farmers use organic manure. In per acre terms large farms are using more organic manure than others, at the same time very small farms are also using organic manure more extensively.

Table 15: Size Class-wise Input-Use (per acre) & Costs in Different Crops

Crop	Size Class	Input (Seed)		Input (Fertilizer)		Input (Manure)	
		Amount (kg)	Expenditure (INR)	Amount (kg)	Expenditure (INR)	Amount (kg)	Expenditure (INR)
Paddy (111)	Marginal	39	365	72	1000	596	616
	Small	43	375	60	2500	484	555
	Semi-medium	41	345	60	2500	372	338
	Medium	43	700	50	2083	239	190
	Large	35	245	--	--	1406	1125
	Total	41	387	60	2021	500	520
Ragi (25)	Marginal	31	509	--	--	667	800
	Small	40	529	--	--	390	396
	Semi-medium	33	422	--	--	383	362
	Medium	33	500	--	--	200	100
	Large	3	60	--	--	2500	2167
	Total	35	476	--	--	519	522
Arhar (21)	Small	3.94	276	--	--	834	526
	Semi-medium	4.14	290	--	--	767	667
	Medium	4.67	310	--	--	483	350
	Total	4.11	285	--	--	760	559
Aalsi (9)	Small	5.42	208	--	--	311	244
	Semi-medium	4.67	193	--	--	338	400
	Medium	4	140	--	--	100	60
	Large	20	200	--	--	1250	1000
	Total	6.63	195	--	--	423	365
Green gram (9)	Small	1.186	95	--	--	1200	650
	Medium	1.000	80	--	--	400	320
	Total	1.083	87	--	--	755	467
Black gram (7)	Small	4.500	457	--	--	611	611
	Semi-medium	0.895	243	--	--	261	261
	Medium	0.068	4.55	--	--	9	14
	Total	2.321	301	--	--	375	376
Groundnut(3	Small	55	2750	--	--	1350	1350
	Semi-medium	50	2500	--	--	700	700

	Total	53	2667	--	--	1133	1133

Labour-Use Pattern

Wage labour is used even by the smallest of farm-size categories (Table 16). In terms of total labour-use, the smaller size of holdings use labour more intensively - the per acre labour-use varies between 120-130 labour days. Use of wage labour, which is around 44-46 percent among small and marginal farmers, increases to 48 per cent among semi-medium and to 64 per cent among medium sized farmers. The continuing significance of family labour - specifically that of female labour - is also brought out from Table 16.

Table 16: Labour-Use Pattern

Farm-Size	Gender	Labour-Use (labour days no.)		
		Wage Labour per ac	Family Labour per ac	Total Labour-use per ac
Marginal	Male	33	35	68
	Female	27	35	62
	Total	60	70	130
Small	Male	20	23	43
	Female	37	49	86
	Total	57	72	129
Semi-Medium	Male	23	24	47
	Female	38	41	79
	Total	61	65	126
Medium	Male	23	11	34
	Female	13	9	22
	Total	36	20	56
Large	Male	0	12	12
	Female	0	19	19
	Total	0	31	31

Source: Field Survey, 2012

Output Per Acre

Output per acre shows a consistent inverse relationship with farm-size in the case of paddy and ragi - the two main crops in the villages (Table: 17). Although output is used mainly for subsistence, 24 out of the 111 paddy cultivating households sold some paddy – and the proportion of households selling paddy increases with farm size. Most of those who have sold paddy, however, have sold it to other local households or in nearby villages. This again demonstrates the low level of commercialization of the output market.

Table 17: Output per acre and Output Marketed

Crop	Size Classes	No. of Households Cultivating	Output per acre (kg per acre)	No. of house holds involv ed in sale	Share of output marketed	Sold to whom(Distribution of Households)		
						Other Kinds of market	private households within the village	private household out of village
Paddy	Marginal	38 (34)	627	2	22.14	0	1	1
	Small	40 (36)	564	11	14.73	2	8	1
	Semi-medium	23 (21)	533	7	16.71	1	3	3
	Medium	9 (8)	477	4	10.70	0	1	3
	Large	1 (1)	250	--	--	--	--	--
Ragi	Marginal	4 (16)	425	--	--			
	Small	12 (48)	448	--	--			
	Semi-medium	7 (28)	307	1	25.00	1	--	--
	Medium	1 (4)	267	--	--			
	Large	1 (4)	200	--	--			
Arhar	Small	11 (52.4)	83	--	--			
	Semi-medium	7 (33.3)	99	1	52.63	--	--	1
	Medium	3 (14.3)	122	1	50.00	--	--	1
Aalsi	Small	4 (44.4)	217	1	20.00	--	--	1
	Semi-medium	3 (33.3)	167	--	--			
	Medium	1 (11.1)	200	--	--			
	Large	1 (11.1)	83	--	--			
Green gram	Small	4 (44)	106	1	20.00	1	--	--
	Medium	5 (56)	93	3	50.70	--	--	3
Black gram	Small	3 (43)	158	--	--			
	Semi-medium	3 (43)	108	--	--			
	Medium	1 (14)	90	1	50.00	--	--	1
Ground nut	Small	2 (67)	900	1	37.50	--	--	1
	Semi-medium	1 (33)	800	1	37.50	1	--	--

Source: Field Survey, 2012

Net Return from Paddy and other Crops

In terms of net returns, paddy and ragi are at similar levels while other crops such as arhar, alsi and groundnut give higher returns to the farmers. In the specific case of paddy, marginal farmers have the highest net return, followed by large and small farmers. The exclusion of the imputed value of family labour has influenced the results, but small and marginal holdings have higher productivity as well.

Table18: Cost, Gross-value and Net-return for different crops per acre size-class wise

Crop	Size-class	Cost of cultivation per acre (INR)	Gross Value of Output per acre (INR)	Net Return per acre (INR)
Paddy	Marginal	1831	6962	5131
	Small	1659	5518	3858
	Semi-medium	1778	5058	3280
	Medium	2026	4820	2794
	Large	1370	2500	1130
	Total	1768	5869	4101
Ragi	Marginal	2358	6500	4141
	Small	1196	5802	4606
	Semi-medium	840	4586	3746
	Medium	767	4000	3233
	Large	2227	2000	-227
	Total	1307	5349	4042
Arhar	Marginal	--	--	--
	Small	917	4817	3901
	Semi-medium	1433	5671	4239
	Medium	865	7722	6857
	Total	1081	5517	4436
Aalsi	Marginal	--	--	--
	Small	917	7700	6783
	Semi-medium	327	6666	6340
	Medium	400	8000	7600
	Large	1200	3333	2133
	Total	694	6904	6210
Green gram	Marginal	--	--	--
	Small	1120	3714	2594
	Medium	1200	3147	1947
	Total	1164	3399	2234
Black gram	Marginal	--	--	--
	Small	2262	5542	3279
	Semi-medium	588	3900	3312
	Medium	41	3227	3186
	Total	1227	4507	3280

Ground nut	Marginal	--	--	--
	Small	4475	23750	19275
	Semi-medium	3200	22500	19300
	Total	4050	23333	19283

Note: Cost of cultivation excludes here the imputed value of land and family labour.
Source: Field Survey, 2012

Credit Market

The credit market has undergone substantial changes in the past few decades. This region is known for the dominance of moneylenders (Mishra, 2008). However, the 2012 survey shows a substantial reduction in the influence of money lenders. Formal credit dominates the credit market with the most important source of credit being the SHGs. Other research shows a decline in producers' dependence on moneylenders as a result of easy credit provided by SHGs. The under-reporting of loans from private money lenders and employers (in case of seasonal migration contracts) is also a distinct possibility.

Table 19: Sources of Credit

Size class	No. of Loans	Sources of Credit				Average amount of loan
		Commercial Bank	Cooperative Bank	Others (SHGs)	Private Money Lenders	
Landless	4	1	1	2	0	9000
Marginal	11	1	1	9	0	11182
Small	23	4	3	15	1	9043
Semi-medium	12	1	1	9	1	8833
Medium	5	2	0	3	0	11400
Large	2	1	1	0	0	200000
Total	57	10	7	38	2	--

In sum: the production conditions in the study villages point to the dominance of small-scale production for subsistence, but with market involvement in input and output market. The diversity of livelihoods sources point to the (increasing) dominance of labour markets - both farm and non-farm - in the livelihoods strategies of rural people. In this context, paddy cultivation is undertaken as a subsistence activity rather than a commercialisation strategy.

IV. Post-Harvesting Processing and Marketing

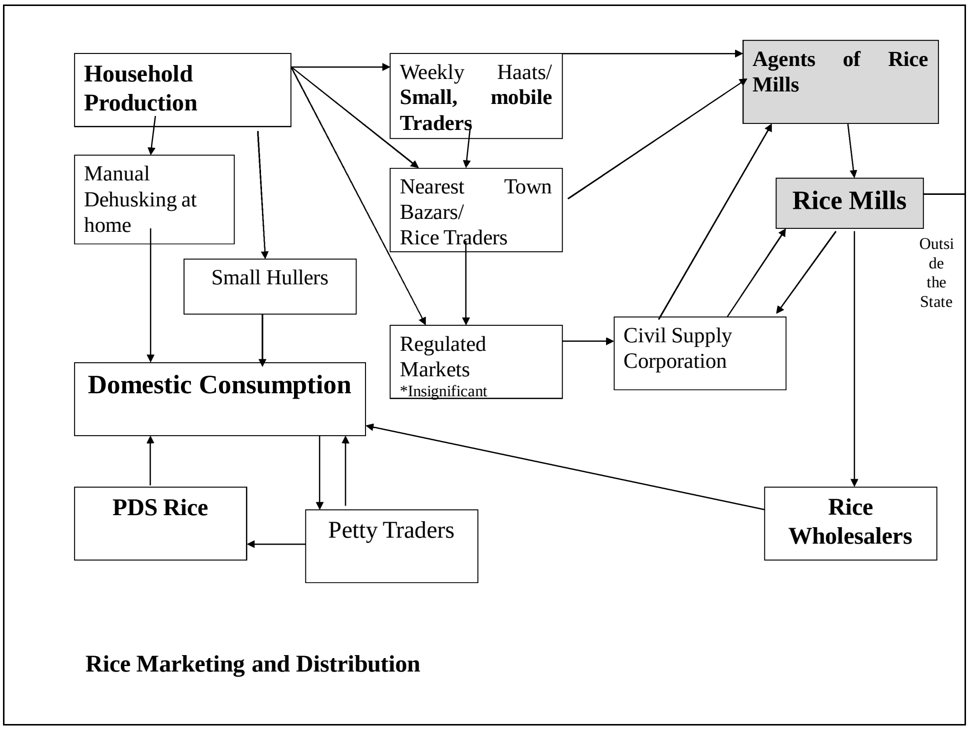
As with other aspects of production, small scale activity provides the key to understanding the post-harvesting processing and marketing in the study region. Paddy is transported from fields to houses/

threshing places (*Khala*) by head-loads, cycles, and (in rare cases) tractors. Bullock carts have almost disappeared- mainly because of the high costs of keeping animals.

Some paddy de-husking is still done manually, using primitive tools - mostly by women. The dominant mode of processing however is through electric hulling mills. The hullers keep the husk and no charges are taken for de-husking. Many of the owners of hullers used to be small paddy-converting traders in the past - buying paddy from small farmers, and selling the rice to shop keepers. This practice has completely disappeared. It is no longer profitable, given the universal PDS that is in operation in the districts.

A significant proportion of the paddy (and other products) is still for self-provisioning. Most of it never leaves the boundaries of the village. But paddy is sold in weekly markets *haats* or in nearby towns. The mode of transport to towns is usually in buses, shared jeeps and auto-rickshaws. Depending on the distance, paddy is brought to the *haats* on head-loads, cycles, shared jeeps, shared trucks, auto-rickshaws and buses. Paddy is then transported from *haats* to the regulated markets or rice mills in trucks.

Figure 1: Post Harvest Processing and Marketing of Paddy



In Koraput, there are several government agencies involved in the process of marketing of paddy - the Regulated Marketing Cooperative Society (RCMS, the apex body at district level and the nodal agency), the Odisha State Civil Supplies Corporation (OSCSC), the Primary Agricultural Cooperative Societies (PACS), and the Tribal Development Corporation (TDCC). But procurement is mostly from villages with abundant low/ valley-lands, more particularly from the area irrigated by the Upper Kolab

Dam Project. Although RCMS authorities claimed that only genuine farmers bring their paddy to the markets, and are paid through the banks, it was clear to us that there is active collusion between rice millers, RCMS and other official agencies and relatively big farmers engaged in the procurement operations - but this has more to do with surpluses in irrigated rice zones rather than with rain-fed rice.

Paddy cultivation practices were found to be remarkably different in irrigated/ low-land and rain-fed areas of the district. *Dongar dhan*, the paddy varieties cultivated in uplands are not purchased by the procurement agencies. Hence even within the same region, and sometimes in adjoining villages, different paddy cultivation and procurement practices are noticed.

Rice traders claim that 'Rs2 a kilo rice' has reduced their profits. They procure rice from small farmers, from retail traders who pick up bags of rice from weekly haats and also from rice mills. Some of the wholesalers procure rice at longer distances from neighbouring Andhra Pradesh and also from the neighbouring district of Nawarangpur in Odisha.

The earlier practice of purchasing rice from farmers through interlinked credit transactions has been replaced by a system where the farmer has to take the marketed surplus to the trader. Credit advances against a standing crop, which usually carries a high interest burden, seem to have disappeared altogether. Commission agents were less visible - but they are active in the irrigated belt.

V. Concluding Observations

Both villages studied are located in relatively less-developed districts of Odisha and are representative of rainfed agriculture. The livelihoods scenario that emerged from the analysis, broadly supports the contention that in large parts of rural India, peasant households are no longer able to survive simply by depending upon agriculture. Livelihoods diversification, often under duress, seems to be the only option to survive the livelihoods crisis facing households. That is why such a high percentage of households have, at least partly, started to depend on the wage labour market for survival. This dependence of rural households in general and 'independent' producers in particular upon the labour market (local or distant; farm or non-farm) signals the gradual integration of the relatively isolated local economies into the circuits of capital. But this is happening without much commercialisation of agriculture, at least in our study villages. Crop cultivation in general and paddy farming in particular remains a subsistence activity for a large proportion of households. We therefore find the coexistence of a vibrant labour market in non-agriculture and stagnation and subsistence in rain-fed paddy production. State intervention through the universal PDS has no doubt had a limited impact on food security in the region, but a procurement policy biased to lowland paddy has left farmers cultivating traditional varieties in uplands with no option but to continue farming as a subsistence activity. This has led to a strategy of avoiding the 'green revolution' by some categories of farmers, while others, who have access to lowlands and irrigation have already started to produce for the market.

References:

Angels, S. and M. Chinnadurai and A Sundar (2011) 'Awareness on Impact of Climate Change on Dryland Agriculture and Coping Mechanisms of Dryland Farmers', *Indian Journal of Agricultural Economics*, 66 (3): 365-372.

Barah, B.C. and Sushil Pandey (2005) 'Rainfed Rice Systems in Eastern India: An On-farm Diagnosis and Policy Alternatives', *Indian Journal of Agricultural Economics*, 60 (1): 110-135.

de Haan, Arjan and Amaresh Dubey (2005) Poverty, Disparities, or the Development of Underdevelopment in Odisha, *Economic and Political Weekly*, May 28-June 4, pp. 2321-2329.

Deshpande, R.S. (2008) 'Rapporteur's Report on Rainfed Agriculture: Myriad of Issues', *Indian Journal of Agricultural Economics*, 63 (3): 565-576.

Frolking, Steve , Jagadeesh Babu Yeluripati, Ellen Douglas (2006) New district-level maps of rice cropping in India: A foundation for scientific input into policy assessment', *Field Crops Research* 98, (2–3): 164–177.

Garikipati S. and B Harriss-White (2008) 'India's Semi Arid Rural Economy: Livelihoods, Seasonal Migration and Gender' *European Journal of Development Research* (Special Issue)20 (4).

Mishra, Deepak K. (2008) 'Structural Inequalities and Interlinked Transactions in Agrarian Markets: Results of a Field Survey' In S.K. Bhaumik (ed) *Reforming Indian Agriculture: Towards Employment Generation and Poverty Reduction*, Sage, New Delhi pp. 231-268.

Mishra, Srijit (2009) Poverty and Agrarian Distress in Odisha, Working Paper, WP-2009-006, IGIDR, Mumbai.

Panda, Manoj (2008) Economic Development in Odisha: Growth without Inclusion, Working Paper, WP-2008-025, IGIDR, Mumbai.

Ramakrishna, R and D. Tata Rao (2008) 'Strengthening Indian Agriculture through Dryland Farming: Need for Reforms', *Indian Journal of Agricultural Economics*, 63 (3): 460-476.

Sarap, K. (1991a): 'Changing Contractual Arrangement in Agricultural Labour Market: Evidence from Odisha', *Economic and Political Weekly*, 26 (52): A-167-176.

Sarap, K. (1991b): *Interlinked Agrarian Markets in Rural India*, Sage, New Delhi

Shah, Amita, Saroj Kumar Nayak and Bipin Das (2005) 'Remoteness and Chronic Poverty in a Forest Region in Southern Odisha: A Tale of Entitlement Failure and State's Apathy', Paper Presented at CPRC-IIPA Seminar on 'Chronic Poverty: Emerging Policy Options and Issues', 29th and 30th September, 2005, Indian Institute of Public Administration, New Delhi.

Yadav, R.L., Subba Rao, A.V.M.,(2001). *Atlas of Cropping Systems in India*. PDCSR Bulletin No. 2001-2, Project Directorate for Cropping Systems Research, Modipam, Meerut, India

EMPLOYMENT, WORKING CONDITIONS AND THE SUPPLY-CHAIN PROCUREMENT PROCESS FOR RICE RETAILED IN CHENNAI

Gautam Mody, Mohan Mani *and* ***Meghna Sukumar***

EMPLOYMENT, WORKING CONDITIONS AND THE SUPPLY-CHAIN PROCUREMENT PROCESS FOR RICE RETAILED IN CHENNAI

Mohan Mani, Gautam Mody and Meghna Sukumar[78]

Background

Our research on labourseekscritically to examine questions of employment practices and working conditionsat all the various stages ofthe procurement and retailsupply chain for rice. We have focussed the research on the distribution and retail of rice in and around Chennai.

This paper is an exploratory component of the larger supply-chain research.[79] It seeks to understand retail business in a sector that continues to be primarilydominated by small business and informal relations of employment. Its policy aspect is the question whether fresh investment in the sector, and in particular whether and to what extent the entry of large corporate interests in retail, change the rules of the game.

The past understanding of labour relations suggested a clear cut difference between situations of employment in the formal and informal sectors, these sectors being defined by different ownership patterns and legal regimes that governed their existence. Consequently, the enterprises of large business interests were seen as existing in the formal sector, with strict requirements of legal compliance of all aspects of business including employment relationships. Today, with the growth of new employment practices, including the spread of contract employment and outsourced work, the clear differences between the formal and informal sectors may not exist, especially where labour relations are concerned. We see growing informality in the formal sector. Consequently, the retail sector is of particular interest, given this is a sector primarily in the informal economythat is opening up to corporate business interests. Will this lead to changes in the sector? To what extent will these changes effect employment relations?

Modern urban retail is seen as a sector employing women in large numbers. In the past, women in metro cities have been entering the labour marketat the lower end of formal employment. The garment industry is a case in point, with factory based garment work employing an estimated two

78

79 Its relevance to the even larger project on greenhouse gases and livelihoods of which it is a component is that a low C transition would necessarily involve new scales of capital and create new kinds of employment. The future potential of improving the quality as well as quantity of jobs is therefore tested here against *existing* trends in new scales of capital and in the conditions of work amid the formalising of a hitherto informal sector – that of retail.

hundred thousand workers in the city of Chennai, the large majority of them being women. While employment in the sector is formally covered by labour legislation that guarantees tenure of employment and rights of minimum wages, regulated hours of work and social security, in reality workers are found without any of these rights. Employers'understand thatthe feminisation of labour enables them to reduce the regulation of employment relations. So this experience in garments suggests another aspect of retail industry that needs to be studied and understood.

Retail commodity trade is the final end of a supply chain linking rural production to urban consumption. The relations within the system are also a matter of interest. What are the major links in this production and procurement chain? What is the nature of business interest that dominates this system? How will they also be impacted by entry of big business interests? These are all matters of research interest. They are also of particular interest today in India, in a situation where retail trade and government regulation are matters of immediate political contestation. While the research reported here has tried to touch on some aspects of the procurement chain, this has not been its main focus.

The present study seeks to explore the foregoing questions through a study of retail trade in rice covering aspects of employment practices and working conditions in different retail employment categories. The paper is divided into three sections, the first dealing with the study of the retail sector; the second with procurement practices in the supply chain, from the retail end to milling of rice; and the third discussing some of the important lessons we can draw from this study.

I. Employment and working conditions in retail

Methodology

Questionnaire:

One questionnaire (a checklist of questions) was prepared for administration to workers in retail shops. The questionnaire was discussed with other members of the study team. [80]It was pilot-tested for ease of understanding and relevance, before finalisation. The principal researcher conducted the

[80]*Research Team: The interviews were carried out by a team comprising Kavitha and Josephine. Kavitha, the primary interviewer and Josephine who assisted in making initial contacts and conducting interviews have been lifetime residents of Ambattur . They are both college graduates, with Tamil as their primary language of communication, and a working knowledge of English. Both have been volunteering with Penn Thozhilalargal Sangam (Women Workers' Union) an all-women union representing informal sector workers in Chennai, for the last 2-3 years. They are generally well acquainted with the local union activists in the area and the area itself. They were assisted by other union activists of Penn Thozhilalargal Sangam from different localities in Ambattur, the site of our field research.*

preliminary set of interviews along with the other members of the research team (all union activists in the informal sector, with some knowledge of English) to ensure uniformity in asking questions and reporting discussions.The involvement of union activists in this field research served two purposes. First it ensured researcher empathy, as the researchers came from the same social and economic background as the retail employees being researched. Second, the practice satisfied an important capacity-building objective of the project, to enable women activists in the informal sector to gain first-hand experience of conducting survey and doing basic research.We were less successful in obtaining responses on quantities, costs and prices despite the fact that these interviews were carried out by the lead field researcher. There was significant resistance to answering questions even when the academic nature of the research and confidentiality were stressed.

Study location:

The field-study of employment practices was conducted in Ambattur and Anna Nagar in Chennai. We chose Ambattura location about 15 kms to the west of the city centre as it is an old industrial belt of the cityfamiliar to the researchers[81].Several small scale and medium scale industries in the Ambattur Industrial Estate are located there alongside larger factories like TI Cycles, Tube India and Dunlop.Several of the small scale industrial units are being closed down and converted into IT parks causing real estate values and rents to go up. The area has a population of around 478,000 as per the 2011 provisional census data. Ambatturused to be a Municipalityuntila yearago.It is now for all practical purposes a part of the extended Chennai Corporation. While our focus was on Ambattur, we also conducted a few interviews in Anna Nagar where Star Bazaar and some of the other smaller stores are located. Anna Nagar is a more middle /upper middle class locality.

Interview process:

We interviewed 37 retail and wholesale workers during the months September 2012–October 2012 and January - February2013. They includedtenwho work in big supermarket chains - Star Bazaar, Nilgiris, Reliance Fresh and Subhiksha; and nine in medium size local supermarkets and departmental stores-Farm Bazaar, Ponnu supermarket and Raja stores. Fourteenworkers were employed in small

[81]*The study area was chosen for the following reasons:*

i. *A cross section of all economic classes live in the region.*
ii. *The region has small neighbourhood shops as well as bigger retailers.*
iii. *The Penn Thozhilalargal Sangam has strong presence in this area. This helped create interviewed workers' trust in the study and therefore ensure veracity of information collected during interviews.*
iv.

retail shops and wholesale shops. Four workers were employed by the Chintamani cooperative a Fair Price Shop in Ambattur.[82]

The categorisation of retail outlets into big, medium and small was based on the form of ownership, the activity mix as well as the scale of the establishment. The big supermarkets are corporate enterprises with multiple branches, extending across the city and even to other cities. The medium size enterprises are large multi-product stores, with walk-in selection of goods- but they are stand-alone establishments, with at most 2-3 branches. The small retail shops deal with customers across the counter, with a more limited product range.

Despite the field research team's social rapport, it proved not at all easy to interview workers.[83]Most of the interviews at the big and medium size retail stores were conducted outside the store during breaks or after work hours especially when the manager or supervisor was away; or at the workers' homes.[84] In some cases the interviewer had to say that she was a college student doing research on working women and in other cases, she would pretend to be looking for a job. In Star Bazaar and Reliance Fresh stores, many of the experienced workers refused to talk, but no such difficulty arose in interviewing workers from the smaller stores. Curiously workers at the fair price shop in Annanagar refused to be interviewed as they suspected that the interviews were part of a vigilance process.

Main findings

In this section we describe the social background of the workers.

Gender and age:

[82] Though this could not be a random sample it is illustrative of the relations and processes we wish to study. While generalisations about magnitudes cannot be made from this sample, the cases can be used to illustrate higher order statements about processes.

[83]*The interview schedule was pilot tested with one worker from each of the categories – i.e small, medium and big retail. These interviews were jointly conducted by Meghna and Kavitha, and changes in the interview schedule were made based on the interviews.*

To ensure that all details were obtained, repeat visits were made with each interviewee.

Every 2-3 days the team met to consolidate the data and check for omissions or additional clarifications required. In the case of interviews with the big retail stores, many attempts were made to get copy of employment contracts, but workers were too afraid to give copies or claimed that they did not have them. All the workers did not want their names to be revealed in any publication.

[84] *Initial contact with retail workers was made through the Penn ThozhilalargalSangam. The benefit of this was an opportunity to build trust with the workers and get accurate information, dispelling any fear of adverse consequences by ensuring that anonymity would be maintained. Many retail workers were able to give contact of other co-workers. For workers in the ration shops of the Government run cooperatives (PDS), contact with workers was established through the General Secretary of Labour Progressive Front, the largest among unions representing workers in the Tamil Nadu Civil Supplies Department.*

Both experience and the literature[85] tell us that the workforce in small retail is primarily male often with a kinship relationship with the employer. This is marked by a significant shift in both medium and large retail with a significantly lower age and a largely female workforce.

Of the 19workers in the sample employed in the big and medium retails stores, sevenwere 20 years or below, and another eight were in the age group 20-25 years, with four above 25 years of age. Seventeen of them were women. Only two workers were men. Discussions with the workers revealed that this was the norm for employee profile in the new retail sector – *primarily women, and a young workforce*.

Asa for the reasons for working in retail, many of the women sought employment in retail storesbecause they were close to home and required minimum travel[86]. Four of the workershad been forced to discontinueschool of college midway because of financial problems in the family(death of father/ breadwinner of the family)so as to find work. Many sawretail work as a temporary form of employment[87]. It was difficult to find women workers in retail stores who had more than 2-3years experience. Older women were typically employed in packing work and not directly in sales in the retail area. The oldest worker in the sample was 56 years old, employed in the packing section, and earned only Rs.3400 per month which is significantly lower than wages in all three levels of retail for work in the shop. In the case of Ponnu supermarket and Raja stores we found that older women usually sat in a separate room or outside the shop on the pavement to carry out packing functions. This signifies further degradation of tasks performed by women workers.

In the small retail stores, as expected, men were clearly preferred by shop owners. All fourteen workers in the sample were men. Six of them were 25 and below, and threewerein the age group of 25- 30 years. Employers also recruited from among relatives/ family acquaintances, very often from the hometown of the owner in the sector. Eightof the 14 workersin the sample were migrants from Tuticorin district (528 kms by road from Chennai) and distant relatives or known to someone from the same village as the store owner. These employees were very dependent upon their employer. Most of the young men belonged to families who owned small pieces of land, and whose families were involved in agriculture and/or agricultural labour. They move to Chennai and sought employment to

---

85

86 This is contributed at least in part by the insecurity of women travelling after hours.

87 *Discussions with union activists at Penn ThozhilalargalSangam and Garments and Fashion Workers Union (union representing garment workers in Chennai) pointed to a similar employee profile among the workforce in the garments sector. The activists discussed how women garment workers also often saw their employment in the sector as temporary and stop-gap, but ended up in the industry for years.*

supplement family income, and gain experience- possibly toopen their own retail store. In contrast to the women in bigger stores, they did not regard the work as temporary.

Educational qualification and recruitment:

In small stores workers lack formal education and is substituted by apprenticeship in the store for skilling and training. In large retail in contrast there is a minimum level of formal education required[88].

First we look at education levels. A minimum threshold of education was needed in all kinds of store. Only three workers out of the total sample of 37 hada college education. Allthese were employed at the Fair Price Shop. One male worker discontinued studies for an ITI (diploma) qualifications and joined work with the intention of later starting his own retail store. Two women in large retail stores were doing higher education correspondence courses while working. Most other workers had finished their 10th or 12th standard schooling before starting work.While in small retail shops education did not seem to play any major role in deciding the nature of tasks,in big retail there is a hierarchy of tasks. And i,f the worker had the aptitude and had completed 12th standard, she was usually considered for posting into the billing section.

Turning to demand factors, most, even formally registered firms, used informal institutions.All the Fair Price Shop workers were recruited through the Employment Exchange.The workers in the private retail stores approachedstores in their locality where ‘Wanted’ signs had been posted; or were referred to job openings by friends informed about work by their employers. Only two workers reported some form of formal recruitment process. One employed in the Star Bazaar responded to a hand bill advertising an opening, followed by a short interview, while the other employed with Shubhiksha had to attend a short interview at the head office.These informal means of recruitment meant that most workers had no idea about regulations regarding confirmation of employment, probation, termination, etc. Workers in the bigger stores merely had to submit photocopies of their ration cards and/or 10th/12thclass school certificates.

Work conditions

Wages and other legally mandated economic benefits:

Wages

The primary question is to whether the minimum wage is paid and what divergence emerges in both tasks and pay across gender and store categories.

Table1 gives details of wages of workers and normal working hours.

88

Table1: Wages work experience and working hours, 2012-13

Enterprise type	Sample	Hours	Average	Average	Experience
	number	work	wage	hourly wage	(years)
		(hrs/day)	(Rs/month)	(Rs)	
Supermarket	10	9.9	5080	20	1.1
Medium	9	11.6	5322	18	2.0
Small/wholesale	14	13.1	6571	19	3.2
PDS	4	8.0	10750	72	14.7

Source: Field survey, 2012-13

The legally defined minimum wage under law for retail workers in Tamil Nau is Rs. 3655 per month. Average wages were lowest in the supermarkets. Of the ten workers in the sample employed in big supermarkets, only one male worker employed by Reliance (in the billing section, with two and a half years' experience, and a wage of Rs.7500 per month)and one woman worker in Star Bazaar (a team leader, with two and a half years' experience, and a wage of Rs.7500 per month) had a wage of more than Rs.5000 per month. Another (male) worker in Star Bazaar with one and a half years work experience was paid Rs.5000 per month. Four more workers employed in the Star Bazaar for less than a year received wages of Rs.4600. Workers also knew that they were entitled to incentives every month, but could not quantify the amount, or the basis on which incentive would be paid.

Workers employed in the medium sized local super markets received a higher average wage. Only one worker, the oldest aged 56 years, was paid a wage less than Rs.5000 per month.

Surprisingly to us, workers employed in small retail and wholesale stores were paid the highest wages among the distribution of retail stores. One reason for this seeming anomaly in wage levels could be that all workers in the small stores were male workers, while workers employed in the supermarkets in the sample were women. This might reflect a gender bias prevalent in wage determination. Another reason could also be that wages were higher for the small store workers in the sample as they had more years of experience. However, there does not seem to be any strong relationship between experience and wages in the sample. There is a positivecorrelation between experience and wage in the sample (excluding the four employed in the Fair Price Shops who were atypical) although it is important to note that the range of wages paid does not exceed a ratio of 1:2.

Table2: Wages and experience on job

Experience		Wages	
(years)		(Rs/month)	
	<5000	5000-7500	>7500
<1 year	6	3	1

1-3 years	1	12	1
>3 years	1	3	5

Table2 gives the distribution of wages by experience of workers. The median wage in the retail sector is in the range of Rs.5000-7500 per month. The sample data also indicates starting wage as less than Rs.5000 per month, with wage moving up to the range of Rs. 5000-7500 with 1-3 years' experience. Only workers with more than three years' experience canearn more than Rs.7500 per month in wages. This compares favourably with the garment sector, where wages in Chennai for women workers are in the range of Rs.3500-4000 per month.

Bonus

Bonus is defined by clear legal provisions. While the bonus is arbitrary in small retail, legal provisions are rarely implemented in the large stores.

Only two workers among the big stores' employees said they were eligible for a bonus. One of them, the sole male worker in the category, employed with Reliance, said that he was eligible to a month's wage as bonus. Four from the medium size stores said that they received a bonus payment. However the bonus payment was much lower than even one month gross wages. We cannot be sure if the bonus equalled the basic monthly wage of the workers[89]. Eight of the 14 workers in the small stores category claimed that they were paid bonus during the festival season. The bonus amount ranged from Rs.3000 to Rs.7000[90].

Social security:

All workers in registered firms should be entitled to social security. Only one worker however among the ten in the sample (with two and a half years work experience) said that she had Employees State Insurance (ESI) and Provident Fund (PF) facilities. She had a letter of appointment that clearly gave a wage break-up and entitlements, which included ESI and PF. In addition, the letter also specified eligibility to "Gratuity, Leave, Paid Holidays, etc., as applicable under relevant provisions and the rules of the company in force from(sic)". There was no detailing of these provisions, or of eligibility conditions.Another worker claimed than she would be eligible for PF and ESI after a year's employment. All the other workers had no awareness of these entitlements. The low awareness of their entitlements among the workers might also result from their lack of experience in employment and lack of membership in a union.

Awareness of rights and entitlements were substantially better among workers employed in the local medium size supermarkets. Six out of the nine in the sample said that PF deductions were being

[89]At any rate the bonus is most definitely at lower than as provided for under the Payment of Bonus Act??
[90]With mostly male workers employed in small retail while the variation in annual bonus payments cannot be ascribed to gender discrimination they are certainly marked by the arbitrariness of the informal sector.

made/would be made.However even so they did not knowthe percentage being deducted from their wages or PF and ESI, or had PF numbers and ESI cards. They also had no knowledge of gratuity eligibility.

Among the small retail stores, none of the workers were eligible to PF or ESI benefits since the stores fall below the threshold of number of employees that make it mandatory for employers to make social security contributions. Nine of the workers said that they would receive a “settlement” amount when they left employment. This could be seen as a form of gratuity payment. However, there seemed to be no fixed criterion for calculating the settlement amount. This too it is at the employer’s discretion. Six workers said that normally the shop owner covered medical expenses.Four explainedthat sums of the order of Rs.200-500 weregiventhem to take care of medical expenditure when the need arose.

Two employees in the Fair Price Shops with 27 years and 28 years work experience were eligible for annual bonuses of 8.33% +1.67% ex gratia (total 10%) and a small pension after retirement. However, a third worker who had joined only three years previously said that she had been paid a bonus the previous year of Rs.2000 (her gross wage was Rs.7000 pm); while the fourth, with one year experience said that she did not receive a bonus for her previous year.

Other non-monetary benefits:

Furhther arbitrary benefits determine ‘social protection’ in small stores with cash and kind benefits handed out by employers for a worker’s needs. With the formalisation of capital these benefits are disappearing and only in a minority of cases being replaced by workers’ rights.

There was no in-kind payment in the big and medium retail stores. Only three workers said they got snacks two days a working week.

By contrast, nine workers in the small retail/wholesale stores were provided food and accommodation by the employer. Among these, in the case of two married and older workers, accommodation rentwas paid by the employer. One worker who earned only Rs.5000 per month after 17 years of experience at the same store justified the low wages in terms of the owner of the store providing food and accommodation for him and his wife. His wife worked as a domestic in the house of the owner, and also did domestic work in other neighbouring houses.

In two of the small stores, workers worked half days on Sundays (in addition to working the remaining six days of the week) and received Rs.100 as a special Sundaypayment. Five workers said that the shop owner gave them a set of clothes every year in the absence of uniforms in small stores, and 2 workers said that they would be taken on a short tourist trip – in most cases to religious places - along with the employer’s familyeach year. This does reinforce that in small retail the discretionary and arbitrary nature of employment practices persists.

Employment relation, intensity of work, supervision and surveillance:

Legislation on work and workplace regulation clearly sets out working hours and rest breaks for all forms of employment and employer types including, where it is used, practices for shift work.

<u>Hours of work and over time</u>

The retail sector is distinguished by very long hours of work. Except in the government run Fair Price Shops, in all other sampled retail establishments, the hours of work were in excess of 8 per day. The average working hours increased progressively from 10.3 hours in the large super markets, through 11.6 hours in the medium size local supermarkets to 13.1 hours for the small stores (see Table3). The average hourly wage equalised across all establishments at Rs.18-20 per hour. While some workers in the sample (in one medium sized store and five small stores) worked on weekends/part weekends, they were also separately compensated for this extra work. Hence we have assumed a common denominator of 26 for the number of working days in a month.

Table3: Adjusted hourly wage

Enterprise type	Hours work (hrs/day)	OT hours (8 hr basis)	Average wage (Rs/month)	Average hourly wage (Rs)	Adjusted hourly wage (Rs)*
Supermarket	9.9	1.9	5080	20	17
Medium	11.6	3.6	5322	18	13
Small/wholesale	13.1	5.1	6571	19	14
PDS	8.0	0.0	10750	52	52

*Adjusted hourly wage calculated giving double weight to overtime work

The Indian labour laws require establishments to pay workers overtime (OT) at double the normal wage rate for work done beyond 8 hours per day. If we take into account the overtime hours to be calculated at a double rate, the adjusted hourly wage rate falls further, with the wage rate being slightly higher in the case of the large supermarkets.

<u>Work shift details</u>

Work shifts are not standardised. Reliance Fresh, Subhiksha and Nilgiris have a two shift system while Star Bazaar has a three shift system. Workers reported having a say in which shift they are employed, and usually stuck to that shift throughout their employment in the store.

Table 4: Shift details for large and medium retail outlets

Reliance Fresh	7.30am-5.30pm	One hour

	9am – 8pm	break
Star Bazaar	7.30am-6pm 9am-7.30pm 11am-8.30pm	Half hour break
Subhiksha	9am-8pm 11am-8pm	2 hours break
Nilgiris	9am-6pm, 12noon-9pm	One hour break
Ponnu Supermarket	9am – 9.00pm	Half hour break
Farm Bazaar	9am – 9.00pm	One hour break
Raja Stores (departmental store)	9.00am-8.30pm	45 minutes break

A time card punching system exists in Reliance, Star Bazaar, Nilgiris and Ponnu supermarket for time of reporting to duty and leaving the establishment, and to keep track of the break times.In the other retail stores workers were expressly told of the timings for reporting to work and taking breaks. Through general enquiry and observation we found that in Reliance Fresh store, generally workers in the second shift workedeven until 10pm, far beyond the 8 PM closing time. Men generally worked in the first shift because stock needed to be unloaded in the morning.

In case of small retail and wholesale storesalmost all the workers mentioned that they worked very long hours. The PDS workers worked 8 hours per day, but had staggered work shifts (8.30 AM to 12.30 PM; 3 PM to 7 PM). One of them mentioned that due to the shortage of staff often she does not always have time for her lunch breaks. After finishing her work for the morning at 12.30 PM , another cycled each afternoon without compensation to deposit the daily sales proceeds at the TI Cycles ration shop.

<u>Leave</u>

Twenty seven of the 37 workers in the full sample got a weekly day off. In the case of large and medium size stores, with the exception of 5 workers employed at Ponnu supermarket, all workers got a weekly day off. The five workers in Ponnu supermarket had only 3 Tuesdays off in a month. In the small retail and wholesale shops, nine of the 14 got a weekly day off while the remaining five worked half a day on Sundays.

Only five of the workers employed in the big and medium retail stores reported access to some form of paid leave or sick leave. All the workers in the small stores said that time off for vacation could be taken with the permission of the store owner and salary was generally not deducted. Again there is no norm on the length of time each worker got.Six of the small store workers said that the owner had promised 10-15 days paid leave for the worker’s marriage.

Toilet/ breaks

Eleven workers in the big and medium retail stores said that they could use the toilet or restroom for 20 minutes during the day but had to inform the supervisor or manager before they did so. The others said that there was no restriction on toilet breaks. In the case of small retail storesthree workers said that 30 minutes could be taken during the course of the day.The others said that there was more or less no restriction.

Supervision and surveillance

All the workers in the big retail stores were very aware of the presence of surveillance cameras.This constantwatch affects their actions and the work atmosphere. Workers in Ponnu stores, Star Bazaar, Nilgiris and Reliance Fresh reported surveillance cameras in their stores. In some cases, women workers reported that they were afraid to sit or talk to one another because of the high levels of surveillance. This was in stark contrast to the small retail stores where no such monitoring mechanism existed and there seemed to be more freedom and flexibility.

Fifteenrespondents in the sample said talking to the supervisor or the shop owner was the only way by which problems at work could be solved. The presence of surveillance cameras clearly makes any form of collective action and workers have little choice but, to seek an individual resolution to their problems with management. In small retail stores, sixworkers also said that they would sometimes approach the wife of the owner if problems arose.

Some workers in the big and medium stores reported supervisors being very “strict”, and “shouting” at workers for making mistakes. However, most of them said that there was not much harassment at the workplace from supervisors. In Farm Bazaar, the workers said that the supervisors were not bad, but the lady manager/ owner could be quite abusive.

Work intensity and health problems

About half of the workers interviewed specifically mentioned that in the normal course of their working day, the work involved some form of strenuous activity. In the case of the small retail and wholesale shops, these included workers who were engaged in home deliveries and had to cycle long distances to deliver orders. In the case of big retail chains, six workers said that standing for long periods of time was difficult and caused leg pain or back pain. Two workers mentioned dust allergy in the storage area because of poor storage conditions. Heavy unloading work of sacks delivered from the miller/ wholesalers is mainly handled by contract workers who accompanied the delivery, though male workers were also sometimes required to lend a hand.

Improving work conditions

Nine of the 14 workers currently employed in small retail or wholesale stores (all men) said that their only reason for working was to gain experience and save money. They would improve their work conditions by opening a new store themselves. The cases of the women who worked in larger stores were dififerent -eight workers saying that they would report to the manager or owner if they wanted to improve their work conditions, while some also said that to do this they would either look for another job, or continue their studies after saving some money.

Wages and expenditure – impact on life – debt:

We would generally expect that employment in retail, with low wages would only be viable in families with more than one wage earner, where typically the wage earned supplemented the existing family earnings.

<u>Migrants</u>

Nineof the 10 migrants in the sample (displaced to Chennai from other districts in Tamil Nadu) remitted money home. Most of them were from Tuticorin, Thirunelveli and Kovilpatti. Seven remitted more than half of their monthly earning to support their families at home.

All the migrant workers' families were able to save some money. Six were able to save Rs.1000-Rs.3000 from their monthly earnings.

<u>Wage adequacy</u>

Only four of the 37 workers interviewed were the sole wage earners for their families. All of them were older male workers living with their spouses.

Fourteen workers contributed more than 50% of the total family expenditure while eight workers contributed around one-third of the total family expenditure.[91]Twenty one workers said that they were able to 'save money at the end of the month'. Yet there was also a significant incidence of indebtedness: 17 workers among those employed in the large, medium and small private stores(nearly 50 percentof the sample) had debts against them, ranging from Rs.2000 to Rs.200,000. So some both save and simultaneously incur debt.[92]

This evidence calls to question the argument that women's employment is a secondary supplement to male incomes and hence wages in sectors employing women can be kept low.

II. The procurement/supply process for rice

---

[91]*This is again in line with the reported experience of garment workers in Chennai as discussed with activists of the Garment and Fashion Workers Union.*

[92]C.f. Guerin,I, S. Morvant and M. Villareal (eds) (forthcoming), *Microfinance, debt and overindebtedness. Juggling with money.*(OUP New Delhi)

Next we look behind the retail stage to discuss the procurement process for rice in Chennai. In order to understand the possibility of change in employment conditions along the supply chain, it is necessary to know the potential impact of the entry of large retail chains in the rice supply chain. This is because the value or supply chain literature stresses the shift in 'governance' power from producer-driven to buyer-driven supply chains which accompanies the increase in scale and reach of capital.

Method: Our findings are based on detailed interviews with 10 managers and owners of establishments, in three large retail chains, three medium sized retail outlets, three small retail outlets and one wholesaler in Chennai. They also include discussions with a large rice miller on the outskirts of Chennai, supplying rice to large retailers and wholesalers – so the total sample was 11.

Table5: Procurement chain: Big retail and Wholesale shops

		Big retailer				**Wholesaler**
	Star Bazaar	**Big Bazaar**	**Reliance**	**More (Birla Group)**		**Rajeshwari wholesale**

No. of outlets	1	6	74	56		Supply to numerous small/medium retailers
Vendors	One - Red Hills	Centralised rice purchase at Guntur, Chennai, Bangalore through sister company Future Agrovet. Chennai purchase from Red Hills	Rice bought from 4-5 vendors in Red Hills in Chennai, Pondicherry and Salem.	Rice bought from ten millers. Boiled rice:Tindivanam, Arani, Kanchipuram, Red Hills and NelloreRawrice:Nellore and Naidupettai		Rice bought from 25 millers through 2-3 brokers in Andhra Pradesh – Nellore, Guntur, Naidupettai; Karnataka – Raichur, Tumkur; TN – Arani, Tindivanam, Kallakurichi.
Estimated annual turnover	20-30MT per month all rice	750 bags*20 kg = **15MT per month** Ponni rice	**180 MT per month**Ponni rice.	Ponni boiled **90MT per month**; Ponni raw **130 MT per month**		10MT per day=**300MT per month** ponni rice
Warehouse	No	Yes	Yes	Yes		Yes

Table5 gives details of the procurement/supply chain for rice for large retailer chains, and for a major wholesale dealer supplying rice to many small and medium retailer stores.

The table shows first that procurement operations for rice in large multi-product retail chains are in most cases substantially smaller than for the specialist wholesale dealer. Only the retail chains'More', of the Birla Group, with 56 retail outlets in Chennai and Reliance, with 74 outlets,even approach the size of the wholesaler. More procures an estimated 220 MT per month of ponni rice, and Reliance around 180 MT per month, as against 300-450 MT per month procured by the wholesale dealer. The other two major corporate supermarkets do not come anywhere near this size of operations.

Second, the depth of the procurement chain is so much greater in the case of the local wholesalers that the rice market appears to be segmented. The wholesalers' purchase system covers a much larger set of millers (25 as against 10 for More and 4-5 for Reliance), and from a much wider range of procurement areas in Tamil Nadu, Andhra Pradesh and Karnataka. In the case of Big Bazaar, while purchase is centralised under a sister company, Future Agrovet, covering all Big Bazaar stores in Tamil Nadu, Karnataka and Andhra Pradesh, in practice most of the purchases for Chennai are sourced from Red Hills. Star Bazaar with a single supermarket outlet procures all its rice from millers in Red Hills. It does not even have a warehouse, paying on a 'just-in-time' basis for cleaned, packed rice supplied directly to the store premises.Two of the medium size retail stores did not depend on the wholesaler for their rice purchases, going directly to the millers. One of them, Demaris Stores in Ambattur specified that they made their purchases from millers in Arni as the millers there used old technology for drying rice, resulting in better quality rice. All three small stores purchased rice from the wholesaler.

Third, the large retail chains use the same transport system, with trucks taken on hire, as the existing wholesale dealers. While Big Bazaar has a dedicated transport service for expensive white goods, all its commodity purchasesare transported using private transporters on hire.

Fourth, the wholesaler deals solely in rice, and makes all his profits from that single commodity. The wholesaler reported a net profit margin of around 5%. A single commodity primary wholesale operation allows for much lower costs of inventory and with no retailing costs. For the retailer however, rice is a small fraction of the total turnover, with low profit margins. The large retail chains gave their gross mark-up on rice as between 2-5%[93], which hardly covered the cost of inventory and shelf space. As the Manager at Tesco (joint partner with Tata in Star Enterprises) explained,“the profit margins are deliberately kept less for certain essential items like rice , pulses, spices, eggs etc because customers will purchase other items if they feel that prices are generally lower.” In effect,for these large retail stores rice along with other staple commodities is a loss leader, being cross-subsidised by other products. Rice attracts customers, while other high value items provide profits.

Further down the supply chain is the paddy milling stage – with a single case study so f ar. The rice miller in Red Hills gave the following details of the rice milling operations. The mill has been in operation for the past 70 years, being modernisedin 2009. The mill operated at 500 MT per month capacity. All operations were mechanised except for packaging. Around 80% of the rice processed was parboiled rice, the remaining 20% beingraw rice.

The sourcing of different varieties of paddy was done on a daily basis depending on demand, from 4-5 rice private wholesale *mandis* in Red Hills. Certainly types of paddy were available only seasonally. There was no storage warehouses (which is unusual for Northern Tamil Nadu) , and so paddy had to be milled within the week.

Processing costs: The miller provided processingcosts as follows. There was no procurement cost as paddy was purchased locally, and delivered by the *mandi* paddy trader. Onward transportation cost for rice varied from Rs.0.50 per kg (for local delivery to the Big Bazaar warehouse at Red Hills) to R.1 - 1.50 for delivery in other parts of Chennai. The cost of processing was estimated at Rs.120 per 75 kg boiled rice, of which labour cost was Rs.30. Packing costs varied from Rs.0.30 per 1 kg bag to

[93]This margin is much lower than for small retail.

Rs.0.70 for a 20 kg bag. The miller estimated his net profit margin as 5-7%. This is lower than the norm and would be almost double if the returns on bran are included[94].

The miller gave his procurement cost for paddy as Rs.1200-1800 per 75kg bag (Rs 16 –24 per kg paddy), while he sold his costliest variety of rice to Big Bazaar at Rs.48 per kg. Assumingthe rice out-turn from paddy as being 65%[95], the weighted cost of paddy for 1 kg rice with paddy at Rs.1800 per 75 kg would be around Rs.36.90.The milling cost at Rs.120 per 75 kg is Rs.2.40 per kg. The miller's total cost is therefore around Rs.39.50 per kg. On top of transformation there is a trade return to milling too. Adding another R.0.50 per kg for transport and Rs.0.30 per kg for packing the landed cost at the Big Bazaar would be around Rs.40 per kg.

The profit margin with a sales price of Rs.48 per kg to Big Bazaar is 16.67%. This is quite substantial compared to the downstream retail activities. We do not know if this level of profit couldattract large business houses into rice milling. The disincentive here would be competing with the entrenched interests of existing millers with their supply networks resulting from long-standing and in-depth knowledge of local growing and crop patterns. If a new large scale of capital enters the milling stage of the supply chain, large business houses might also look to modernising the networks and relations of supply. At present however, although the rice miller reported having been approached by Walmart seeking to explore procurement options, the motivation to establish backward or 'upstream' linkages in this region of India appears low..

Supply chain logistics and employment: Currently, the entry of large retail business houses has little impact on employment relations in activities related to the supply chain of rice. We have details of employment in Big Bazaar at their warehouse in Red Hills. The warehouse has two managers, one commercial person looking after administration and stocks, 3 as store vehicle escorts, and 2 to supervise loading and unloading. *All actual transportation, loading, unloading are done by contract workers*. We see that the procurement activities in 2012-13 do not create many regulated jobs. In comparison the wholesaler employed five workers, all on daily contract. He specialised in rice, whereas the Big Bazaar warehouse dealt with a wide range of commodities. About 25% of the Big Bazaar storage space was devoted to rice. The milling operations also did not employ many tenured workers.The entire rice mill was operated by two technical staff, each earning Rs.1500 per month. There were 5 men and 3 women on contract for all other activities of lifting and loading (done by men) and cleaning and packing (done by women). The entire team was paid at piece ratesof Rs.1 per kg rice milled, amounts which they divided among themselves.

III. Discussion

94

95 According to the International Rice Research Institute, Philippines, while the maximum rice recovery from paddy by weight is around 69-70%, commercial millers would be satisfied with around 65% milling recovery.

Here a number of general conclusions from our discussion of the field material are set out.

First, the field study revealedthe increase in regulation with the scaleof ownership from small store to large retailer. Hours of work are significantly lower in the large retail chain. This indicates a greater concern for work regulation in corporate retail. However, even in the large retail chains, the hours of work are still longer than 8-hours per day and no overtime is paid. The workers interviewed for this research not have an understanding of the law about the working-day, including the 8-hour day norm and the requirement for overtime regulation and compensation of overtime work.

Second, wages (average wages) decline counter-intuitively from the small store through the medium size store to large supermarkets. We have explained this partly as because of longer hours of work in the small stores, with the hourly wage being roughly the same across the sample (excluding the Fair Price Shops). But it may also be because women in big retail have the least work experience. The wage divide mayalso reflect a gender-segmented labour market - with men paid higher wages. However, these explanations do not seem adequate. We wish to suggest that part of the reason is that employment in small stores mobilises kinship relations or ties of locality. The worker in the small store is related to the owner by relationships of family, kinship, friendship and/or old village ties. The employer then also pays for trust and loyalty. In some instances the worker is treated as family, with board and lodging, and medical expenses paid – in a parody of occupation-based social security. The worker in the small store is therefore willing to stay with the job for longer periods of time. Yet another reason is that from their job descriptions, workers in the small shops are given much higher levels of responsibility, including on occasion managing the shop on their own when the owner is not around. The higher wage would also be a return for the worker's handling much higher responsibility, and the owner having to retain the trust of the worker.

The statutory MinimumWage in Tamil Nadu (notification wef April 1, 2012) for Shops and Commercial Establishmentsis Rs.140.57 per day, or Rs.3654.82 per month for 26 working days in a month. This is a very low wage. However this assumes an 8-hr work day. If we take up employment in the large retail sector with average hours of work as 10.3, the overtime wages for 2.3 hours overtime work should be Rs.80.65, giving a legally minimum wage of Rs.241 per day, or Rs.6226 per month for 26 working days. We similarly compute, for the average hours of work of 11.6 in the medium size stores, the legal minimum wage as being Rs.6922; and for 13.1 hours in the small, store as Rs.8290. Taking into account the 8-hr norm and double overtime payment, *across thesample private retail employers are paying wages below the legal minimum wage*.

The interview with a woman worker atfrom Star Bazaar raised some interesting issues. She had a letter of appointment of sometime in 2010, which defined her wage component. She had a basic wage (basic + DA) of Rs.1500 per month, and a total wage in hand of Rs.4594. The wages with the social security component worked out to Rs.5000 per month. This was in 2010.

Table6: Wages of based onan Appointment Letter

	(Rs/month)
Basic + DA	1500
House rent allowance	750
Consolidate allowance	1544
Conveyance allowance	800
Total	4594

Table 7: Wage + Employers Contribution to Social Security Benefit

Total Wage	
Company contribution to PF	180
Company contribution to EDLI	8
Company contribution to ESIC	218
Cost to company	**5000**

We find from the survey that newly recruited employees in Star Bazaar in late 2012 claimed a similar entry wage of around Rs.4, 500-4,600 per month i.e. in two years the entry level wage has remained static. This is despite the fact that the wage includes ainflation indexed wages in the form of Dearness Allowance. For one the indexed portion of the wage is less than a third of the total pay and thereby at best providing limited protection against inflation. In addition that entry level pay has remained the same, during a period of extremely high inflation especially food price in flation, implies that the company is benefiting from a persistent reduction in the real wage. Further, the company is contributing to the PF fund at 12% of the basic wage (basic + DA), whereas, legally the company is bound to pay PF on the gross wage. The company's practice is illegal. Lack of trade union organisation in the sector prevents these problems of regulation and illegality from being taken up.

The norm for range of entry level wage is around Rs.4000-5000 per month in the big retail firms in the sample. From the threecases of experienced workers, with ayear's experience the wage increases to around Rs.5000 per month, and with two years' experience the worker obtains around Rs.7500 per month. A real wage increase therefore happens only after the worker has remained in one company for two years.

Third, it is useful to compare wages and work conditions in retail with those in the garment sector, given that employment in big and medium retail is from the same pool of workers as in garments.

Wages in retail are higher that garments, where the statutory minimumwage for a tailor is Rs.3,632 per month. However the hours of work are longer in retail, even considering that unpaid overtime work is prevalent in the garment sector. The advantage of retail seems to be that supervision is more humane, even granted the use of video cameras in large stores. Some workers in the sample mentioned that there are less rushed periods when they are able to sit down and rest their feet. This is in contrast with the garments sector where workers are faced with a constant, relentless work pressure.

Fourth, this field-research raisesquestions about the impact of modernisation of the retail trade.Will modernisation introduce better wages and working conditions? Does it lead to more women employed in retail – and if so, what impact willthishave upon regulation in the industry? The sample's gender distribution indicatesa progressive feminisation of the workforce with the modernisation and increase in scale of the retail trade.Will this sector also, as in the case of other sectors employing predominantly women, have to deal with issues of sexual harassment at the workplace, and physical safety for women, who often have to work late hours, up to 8 and 9 in the night?

In 2012-3, there is no regulation of work in most of the retail sector, which continues to be informally organised. This lack of regulation of employment relations, and existing low wages in the sector will affect both the regulation of work and wages in the newly growing formal sector in retail. The formal sector will inherit existing business practices in the industry, and there is likely to be no pressure on them to adopt better practicesfrom employees or the government. There will be a pull-down effect of informal retail on the formal sector both for wages and regulation. In our field research, the comprehensiveness of regulation and the hourly wage both increase as economic activity movesfrom formal to informal sector, but the wage band remains very small.

Last, there is also practically no organisation of workers in this sector, to represent them and negotiate their work problems. In the absence of any political interest, and with labour departments' having scant resources, the state regulation of the Labour Laws is extremely poor, except where workers are themselves organised. Our field research evidence demonstrates thatmost workers, even in the corporate retail sector, have no knowledge of their legal rights of employment.

In 2012-3, 'upstream' activities in the rice supply chain do not create substantial regulated employment. The entry of big retail also does not appear to generate either institutional or employment multipliers. Their current operations seem to mirror existing procurement practices which appear already to incorporate reasonably high degrees of operational efficiency. Supply contracts allow retailers the flexibility of low inventory and the benefits of multi-sourcing. In the context, and given the low contribution that rice makes to turnover and profits, the incentive to large corporates to invest substantially in modifying the supply chain appears in 2013 to be low.

THE MICRO-POLITICAL-ECONOMY OF GAINS BY UNORGANISED WORKERS IN INDIA'S INFORMAL ECONOMY

Barbara Harriss-White and Valentina Prosperi

THE MICRO-POLITICAL-ECONOMY OF GAINS BY UNORGANISED WORKERS IN INDIA'S INFORMAL ECONOMY

Barbara Harriss-White with Valentina Prosperi[96]

Abstract

In this review of literature, given the real wage rises since about 2005 and the ubiquity of informal labour contracts, the question of the micro-political mechanisms by mean of which unorganised labour makes gains in wages and other terms and conditions of work is posed. After examining the micro-level impacts of demand and supply factors (focussing on the non-farm economy and on the suite of state interventions of which NREGA is likely the most influential), we look at pressures on employers to concede gains to labour - focussing on CSR and trusteeship, patronage and paternalism. Lastly, the ploys open to labour appear to involve self-employment, migration and shifts in sector, loyalty and the mobilisation of collective identity. More research is not just of scholarly interest, the topic is of some practical relevance to labour organisations, possibly to employers and certainly to informal workers themselves.

Key words: labour markets, gains at work, labour politics

Background

Since the era of globalised capital has not vanquished poverty or secured decent work conditions for the vast mass of workers[97] the 'perverse' question we try to address here is how un-unionised workers in the unorganised or informal economy improve their wages and other aspects of the terms and conditions of work.

Our starting point is that India's informal economy is the actually existing form taken by contemporary capitalism. Informal work is not residual, it is the commonest kind; it is not the reserve army or a separate 'needs economy' with a non-accumulative logic,[98] it is the real economy, it does not consist of 'invisible others'[99] – in (non-metropolitan) India it is impossible to avoid; nor are its actors forgotten - it is not so much marginalised by the state as it is the object of a mass of inadequate regulative interventions with incoherent and contradictory purposes.[100] So far, the 21st century has been marked by increasing informalisation, by serious and extensive deficits in decent work[101] and by growing shares of the work force excluded from accumulation of any sort by relations of exploitation

[96] Barbara Harriss-White is a Senior Research Fellow in the Contemporary South Asian Studies Programme, Oxford University. Valentina Prosperi is with Rome University and a labour consultant. Contact barbara.harriss-white@qeh.,ox.ac.uk
[97] Hensman, 2010
[98] See Jan's critique of Sanyal, 2007: Jan, 2012
[99] Chakrabarti et al , 2008
[100] Harriss-White, 2012
[101] Kantor et al, 2006

and/or exchange.[102]Despite the growth of rights-based politics, formal access to social protection has atrophied[103], income instability has flourished alongside an expansion of casual labour and distress-induced self-employment without access to any work rights – all indicators of deteriorating vulnerability at work. The first 21st century decade has also witnessed the sporadic forced entry and participation of women engaged in smoothing and supplementing their incomes.[104]

The political response to this vulnerability is widely taken to be the mobilisation and organisation of informal workers.[105] Yet most labour experts reason that formal or organised labour is weak in India (evinced by a reduction in industrial disputes and the growing incidence of disputes confined to individual companies)that organised labour is unable to expand as a workers' movement and that the working class 'in itself' is unable to act as a class 'for itself'. In the informal economy types of contract (regular versus casual), labour processes (subcontracting, outsourcing and home working), social stratification and discrimination (by locality, caste, ethnicity, religion, gender, age and health status) do not only structure the informal economy[106] and differentiate returns to work, but they also make it extremely difficult to organise workers. Further, what Gooptu (2009) has termed an individualistic 'enterprise culture' is seeping progressively into production relations in all sectors, further sapping collective political strength. For the vast mass of workers, the most that the literature acknowledges is acts of 'everyday' or 'silent resistance' for example through squatting for home plots[107]– often distinguishing the politics of poverty outside work from the politics of work itself, while workers see such acts as a seamless part of their life-world.[108] In the work place there are a few noted cases of the informal organisation of workers by sector and site (e.g. in the construction sector, coastal fishing and beedi wrapping) together with SEWA's achievement in organising 1 million self-employed women.[109] Even then, the point is often made that 'informally organised' workers struggle for welfare rights rather than work rights and against the state rather than against employers. [110]

Yet of late, in particular since the round of NSSO data gathering in 2005,wages for both regular and casual employment in the informal economy and real wages (adjusted for price inflation) appear to have bottomed out and started to increase, though until recently and through most of India their growth rates were far below the rate of growth of GDP.[111]

[102] Harriss-White, 2012
[103]Sharma and Arora, no date
[104] Corbridge, Harriss and Jeffrey, forthcoming
[105] see Bhalla, 1999
[106] The informal economy is termed 'unorganised' in India but it would be incorrect to argue that it is eith4r chaotic or disorganised – quite the opposite (Harriss-White, 2003).
[107] In the case of Dharavi slum, in Mumbai, see Mukhija, 2003
[108] Gooptu, 2001
[109] Jhabvala and Subramaniam, 2000
[110] see Vijayabaskar, 2011;Lerche, 2010
[111] Chakravarty, 2011; Kar 2011; Gulati and Jena, 2012

Between 2005-10, the number of openly unemployed people declined;[112] real 'All-India' average wages for casual agricultural labour were on an upward trend[113]; those of women increasing by 14.6 % in real terms and men at 7% between 2005-10.[114] And, with expenditure regarded as a more reliable indicator of poverty than income, the consumption expenditure of the bottom quintile (20%) was also found to have increased over this period.[115]When inflation is high and rising,then nominal rates of wage increases will appear to be dramatic. While the distributive share between wages and profit continuesto be adverse to labour[116] and while the All India average is known to hide significant regional differences in levels and trends, the paradox of increasing vulnerability alongside increasing real wages prompts us to seek to understand***how vulnerable, un-unionised workers make gains at work in the informal economy***.

The question is not confined to academic interest but is of some practical relevance to labour organisations, possibly to employers and certainly to informal workers themselves.

*Method:*Beyond the abstractions of labour supply facing greater demand, however, and beyond the impact of state interventions on raising the reservation floor for wages, there is no theory, even of an institutional kind, to guide the search for answers. We therefore examine these conventional approaches first; and then turn to summarise a scoping review of the Indian literature on the political economy, institutions and practices of informal labour gains.[117]

Macro-level explanations of gains by informal labour:

1.Markets: demand for labour. Where the non-farm economy has flourished (as in Northern Tamil Nadu)[118]and/or sectors are booming (notably in construction throughout India)[119]and /or demand for specific skills rises (e.g.in the handloom silk industry in South India),[120]and where transport and communications infrastructure has reduced the transactions costs of work and widened local fields of labour supply through commuting, [121]real wage gains to labour have been recorded.

In the agricultural economy, higher agricultural product prices, when not matched by higher bio-chemo-mechanical inputs prices, have been found to enable higher agricultural wages to be conceded,

---

[112] Ray, 2011
[113] According to the NCEUS, 2008, they had increased from Rs 34 per day in 1993-4 to Rs 43in 2004-5.
[114]Gulati and Jena , 2012
[115] Nathan and Sarkar, 2012. It has subsequently dipped to a 7 year low in 2012 http://india.nydailynews.com/newsarticle/50215dbbc3d4ca5129000005/india-consumer-spending-weakest-in-seven-years-as-slowdown-bites
[116] Allirajan,2013
[117] See Prosperi, 2010 and forthcoming for analyses in the construction industry, garments and textiles, food processing and agriculture..
[118]Harriss-White and Janakarajan, 2004
[119] Prosperi , forthcoming
[120] Roman, 2008
[121] Carswell and de Neve 2013

irrespective of the effects of the Employment Guarantee Scheme and the real wage effects on net consumers.[122]

Where a new technology enhances net labour demand (as is said to have happened in the case of Bt cotton), other things being equal, agricultural wages have also been found to have risen. [123]

But the literature on these gains is content to stay at the level of description; it does not account for the micro-political means whereby these real wage increases have been gained.

2. The state and supply. While the ILO caught the world's attention by developing the concept of Decent Work – involving rights to work, at work, to labour organisation (or 'dialogue') and to social security, far less attention has been paid to forms of political mobilisation which could actually secure Decent Work rights. In India in late 2005 a significant concession was secured through an employment guarantee that grants 100 days of work (in practice about half that) to all self-selected work-seekers at levels of pay at or above the local minimum wage.[124] If confined to the rural slack season this intervention has income smoothing effects. When clashing with peak agricultural demand, by being an alternative it has the potential to set a wage floor. There is sharp and inconclusive debate over the varied local effects of the employment guarantee. At less than 1 % GDP it can hardly drive national wage-rate gains. Gaiha records supportive effects on slack season agricultural wages.[125] In three states of India studied by Reddy and Upendranadh (2009) there was significant female participation on the NREGA when due process was fair and 'minimum wages' on the scheme exceeded agricultural wages.[126]In rural Tamil Nadu, Heyer has observed employers' willingness to follow the rises in NREGA rates under conditions when not matching NREGA pay affects the supply of labour.[127]

The employment guarantee can be seen as a component of a slowly emerging and fragile welfare state. The PDS is the oldest and central element of this bundle of policies – developing from 1965 and actually strengthening its performance in the current era - amid criticism and proposals for alternatives.[128] A national social assistance programme was put before parliament in 1995.[129]Social security bills for informal workers were placed in the Lok Sabha(Parliament) in 2008; a (much debated) food security bill in 2012 and there is expert as well as public mobilisation for wide reforms to health and education. Threatened by the policy turn towards cash transfers and vulnerable to the

[122] Rao, 2011
[123] Subramaniam and Qaim, 2010
[124] Reddy and Upendranadh, 2009
[125]Gaiha , 1997
[126] Reddy et al, 2010
[127] Judith Heyer, Pers Comm, 2012

[128]Khere, 2011
[129] Justino, 2003

health of the budget, this skeletal welfare state aims to improve conditions *outside* work and compensate those incapable of working.

Its impact on wages and working conditions in the informal economy is thought to be traced indirectly - first through expanding the capacity of workers to withdraw from the most degrading and oppressive conditions of work to devote time to other aspects of domestic work, to themselves, child-care [130]or education[131]and second through notable improvements in the respect paid to labour through the language and idioms of work.[132] At the same time, in failing to address work conditions and focussing on welfare outside work, this suite of interventions does nothing if not legitimate informal labour. *One hypothesis needing further exploration across the federation of Indian states is that the extent to which the state assumes the role of patron and develops a welfare state is related positively to gains in informal sector wages*. [133]

These state welfare rights are being secured in a vulnerable and drawn-out process involving civil society movements and academic activism together with left party pressure whenever this is politically possible. They have not been secured directly by informal workers themselves. And both the political and the analytical framing of gains is confined to the wage level – no other aspect of work is well addressed.

So the macro-level literature shows that the question of the tactics and institutions through which gains are secured is ageneral question that requires micro-level and detailed, context-rich research for its answers.

Micro level explanations: Moving beyond descriptions of levels and trends, demand and supply, we first examine explanations involving action by employers before turning to employees.

Employers

1..Trusteeship – Corporate Social Responsibility (CSR). Pressurised by campaigns on the part of consumers and civil society representatives, highly selective and limited improvements in labour standards have been imposed on informal producers by registered global companies under 'CSR' (Ruthven, 2008). Case studies document elaborate evasive tactics as well as strategically selective success.[134] In the case of IKEA for example, gains have been made in health and safety and in environmental standards. But the IKEA work-forces' own demands reflect different priorities (e.g. lack of over-time pay and undercutting by contract labour) and these have not been addressed under

[130] Heyer, 2011, a and b
[131] V Prosperi, forthcoming.
[132]Judith Heyer, Personal Communication, 2012
[133] Harriss-White, 2010, reviewed literature to argue the reverse however – that even in the informal economy, work status had a major impact on access to social security.
[134] Samy and Vijayabaskar, 2006

CSR. Rights to organise have not been honoured, nor has social discrimination in the workplace been countered.[135]

2.Patronage and Paternalism; the Roles of Labour Contractors and Gang-masters. Increasingly daily wages are being replaced by piece rates and, though the practice is still not widespread, farmers' own searches for labour are being outsourced to labour contractors. There is a growing literature on the hold of contractors over agricultural –especially migrant – labour[136] but labour contractors are now spreading through the informal economy. In a case from the construction industry, Prosperi found contractors able to discriminate in wages between individual gang members, based on personal relations of loyalty, reliability and trust. With power to divide the work force, they may concede gains to individuals at the expense of the collective. Some gang labour has been found to be seasonally bonded. Gang-masters may also organise housing, food, health care and communication for groups of migrant labour, though this is certainly not a common occurrence.[137] The extent to which they mediate claims with employers on behalf of labour awaits a dedicated study of contractors.

The body of evidence about employers' actions invokes cause and effect, mostly by inference. Gains to labour are not conceived as a micro-political struggle.

*Employee*s:

1 .Assets and the Role of Self Employment. In a closely observed case study of women's work in rural Andhra Pradesh, Garikipati shows that the ownership of assets relates to stronger bargaining power. She argues that this result from self-employment's being an alternative to wage work. Indeed experts on labour often see self-employment as 'good quality work' [138]since the distribution of earnings from self-employment has a higher and longer right-handed tail than that from wage work and since 'autonomy' is found to be a valued attribute of work.[139]The 'shift to self-employment' is conceived as a gain in work quality rather than asa form of production or trade generating an opportunity to accumulate.

In fact, while it is true that self-employment is now the commonest form of work in India accounting for 53% of the workforce,[140] much evidence shows it to be propelled by the compulsions of poverty rather than entrepreneurial prospects for accumulation. Self-employment may be understood as self-exploitation, or undertaken part-time or in slack seasonal employment troughs. Or it is the preserve of

[135]Prosperi , 2010; forthcoming
[136] See Breman et al, 2009
[137]Harriss-White, 2010; Picherit, 2009
[138] Sundaram, 2007
[139] ,Ruthven, 2008; see also Chandrasekhar and Ghosh, 2007
[140]This is driven by the agricultural sector and varies greatly within the non-agricultural economy. See references in Harriss-White, 2012

women returned to home working after a period (1999-2005 judging by the labour statistics) spent in wage work as a result of agricultural distress.[141]

It is a matter of some importance that self-employment is classified by labour economists and lawyers alike as ‘disguised wage labour’ because with no consensus on its terminology, self-employment/petty production/own account enterprise/ micro-enterprise/cottage industry/ the tiny sector etc is consensually interpreted as a positive shift in the terms, conditions and returns to labour.

In fact, there appears to be a continuum of forms of self-employment from hardly disguised wage work to complete autonomy. Its distinctiveness takes several forms: first, while labour is exploited on labour markets , self-employed workers can be exploited on (rental) markets for property, raw materials , money and finished products – they may shift the balance of power towards them in exchange relations on four markets (contracts may shift adversely too).Second, self-employed people can operate a distinctive logic of super-exploitation or super-efficiency in which production is maximised rather than (marginal) productivity (in which improvements would be indicated, perversely, by reductions in production).Third, exchange relations contrive to prevent accumulation and self-employment expands instead by multiplication; so the question whether an expansion in self-employment is an indication of social gains to labour or rather a signal of the power of relations preventing accumulation (or both) is an open one. Fourth, self-employed workers are disenfranchised in labour law when they cannot identify a single employer against whom to bring a grievance to court (the multiple exchange relations in which the self-employed are entangled making this impossible).

The possession of assets may make it possible to bargain higher wages, but the turn to self-employment is not a solid indicator of gains by labour.

4.Migration. Migrant labour appears to bring mixed effects on labour markets. On the one hand, an increase in the supply of (compliant) labour threatens employment opportunities as well as wages of workers in the destination sector and site – worse for women than for men and worse for older rather than younger workers. On the other hand migrant labour often manages to improve wages over and above rates in the origin.[142] The effects of migration on migrants themselves are far from homogeneous. They may involve bondage or they may include social liberation, especially for oppressed dalit labour.[143] Migration is also structured through institutions of caste, gender, locality, kinship and friendship but the literature suggests that while these relationships are vital in recruitment *per se*, their effectiveness in bettering work conditions is not well researched or established. As with the case of individualised relations with contractors so here with entire groups of migrants, low wages may be accepted in the interest of stable work opportunities. There is little evidence of migrants

---

[141141] Corbridge, Harriss and Jeffrey, forthcoming
[142]Picherit, 2009 andPattenden, 2012
[143] Rogaly and Coppard 2003

themselves attempting to improve work conditions. One case of informal labour mobilisation observed by Prosperi was a frustrated reaction to non- and extremely delayed payment of wages.[144]

5.Shifts in sector/ location. Net of migration, other shifts may result in better working conditions. Moves from agriculture to the rural or local non-farm economy, and from rural to urban work have long been associated with increased earnings.[145] So much so that the local urban non-farm economy may become a segmented redoubt – barring women and low caste aspirants.[146] Entry for them is a political struggle.

2.Long Term Loyalty: Case material demonstrates that, despite contractual precarity, wages may increase with the length of 'service' with a given employer.[147] One the one hand this may be a customary norm; on the other it may reflect individual skill and experience. Gains are slow and individualised. Employers may also seek to bind long term informal employees without written contracts who they desire to retain, using loans.

3.Deployment of Collective Identities: In village studies in Tamil Nadu[148] networks and social relations among agricultural labour based upon kinship, friendship and caste are described as being deployed to raise wages and improve conditions. Unorganised labour may also organise itself by village of origin and locality (where it can restrict entry, operate a closed shop, and negotiate periodically and in the collective interest against a set of employers).[149]Research in Haryana demonstrates that collective identity may be as much a structure of control as it is one of enabling and empowerment.[150]How localised the gains achieved by the mobilisation of social identities are - and whether they are made at the expense of other groups of workers – has not been established. The dynamics of such processes have mainly been researched in the context of migration.

Conclusions:

While India's informal economy provides evidence of on-going vulnerability, there is recent evidence for real wage gains. Yet the question of the micro-political practices by means of which gains in wages and improvements in working conditions are achieved by un-unionised, un-organised labour in the informal economy is one that does not seem to have been researched explicitly. It is also a general question whose answers have to be sought at the micro level.

The literature of case material does not appear to be abundant. Time series or historical evidence hardly exists and the trend of All-India real gains appears to be too recent for research cycles to have

[144] Prosperi ,2010
[145] Jayaraj 2004; Jha nd
[146] Haggblade et al 2010
[147]Prosperi, 2010; forthcoming; Harriss, 1981; Harriss-White 1996
[148]Ramachandran et al 2001
[149] E.g. marketplace porters in the town of Arni, South India: source - author's field interviews, 2012.
[150]Rawal, 2006

been completed. To date answers have to be found between the lines of research which has other objectives. Much of the existing evidence associates certain economic conditions with certain labour-market outcomes inferring cause and effect. Even literature rich in the details of working conditions (in agriculture in particular) ignores the question of the tactics used to struggle for wage gains or for changes in non-monetary gains, such as respect.

Surprisingly little is known substantively. Relations of clientelism or loyalty may bring gains to individuals. The existence of alternative work at higher rates (state-supplied / self-employment/ different sectors / different locations) with the option of not working, or not working as many days may force employers to raise wages. They then start to worry about the timing of labour supply - they may try to treat labour better - 'like a bride'[151] - not merely offering higher wages but also better conditions. Not enough is known about how they resist or capitulate.

Labour may organise for objectives outside work – conditioning their life-world and their reproductive space – when mobilising to improve conditions at work is currently faced with insuperable obstacles. Collective identities may be deployed in the search for work but are rarely recorded as the basis for struggles for improved conditions. If non market forms of exchange, co-ownership, solidary institutions, co-operative and collective practices of labour protection play roles in the securing of gains to men and women workers, they are not yet identified and recorded.

For a wide constituency of public interests, and since there is no sign of anything other than further informalisation, systematic research is needed into the means whereby informal labour reduces its vulnerabilities and achieves improvements in its working conditions.

Acknowledgements

We are grateful to Judith Heyer, Gautam Mody, D N Reddy and M Vijayabaskarfordiscussions over this topic and comments on the first draft. The research is part of the project RESOURCES, GREENHOUSE GAS EMISSIONS, TECHNOLOGY AND WORK IN PRODUCTION AND DISTRIBUTION SYSTEMS: RICE IN INDIA (RES-167-25-MTRUYG0; ES/1033768/1) funded jointly by the UK's Economic and Social Research Council and the Department for International Development. Views expressed here are the authors' and not policy of either funding institution.

[151] Judith |Heyer, Personal Communication, 2012

References

Allirajan M. 2013India's Q3 profits to grow 26% on lower costs *Times of India* Jan 2nd http://articles.timesofindia.indiatimes.com/2013-01-02/india-business/36110741_1_interest-costs-cmie-march-quarter

Bhalla, S. 1999 Liberalisation, rural labour markets and the mobilisation of farm workers: The Haryana story in an all-India context, *Journal of Peasant Studies*, 26:2-3, 25-70.

Breman J., I. Guerin and A. Prakash (eds) 2009 *India's Unfree Workforce: Of bondage old and new* , New Delhi, OUP

Carswell G and G. De Neve, 2013 Labouring for Global Markets: Conceptualising Labour Agency in Global Production Networks. *Geoforum* 44: 62-70.

Chakravarty M. 2011Decline in share of wages in GDP must be reversed, http://www.livemint.com/2011/09/07200029/Decline-in-share-of-wages-in-G.html (accessed the 10th of July 2012).

Chakrabarti, A., A. Chaudhury and S. Cullenberg 2008 Global order and the new economic policy in India: The (post)colonial formation of the small-scale sector. *Cambridge Journal of Economics*, 33(6), 1169–86.

Chandrasekhar C. P. and J. Ghosh 2007 Self-employment as Opportunity or Challenge *Macroscan*http://www.macroscan.org/fet/mar07/pdf/Self_employment.pdf

Corbridge S., J. Harriss and C. Jeffrey, forthcoming, 'Lopsided', 'Failed', or 'Tortuous': India's Problematic Transition and its Implications for Labourin (eds) D. Davin and B. Harriss-White *China-India: Paths of Economic and Social Development,* London, Proceedings of the British Academy

Gaiha R. 1997Do rural public works influence agricultural wages? The case of the employment guarantee scheme in India, *Oxford Agrarian Studies*, 25:3, 301-31.

Gooptu N. 2001 The Politics of the Urban Poor in Early-Twentieth Century India, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press

Gooptu, N. 2009 'Neoliberal Subjectivity, Enterprise Culture and New Workplaces: Organised Retail and Shopping Malls in India', *Economic and Political Weekly*, 44, 22, 45-54

Gulati A. and A. Jena 2012 Rural Prosperity No Mirage *Economic Times* October 4thm.economictimes.com/.../rural-prosperity-no-mirage...rural.../16662...

Haggblade S., P. B.R. Hazell and T. Reardon 2010 The Rural Nonfarm Economy: Prospects for Growth and Poverty Reduction,*WorldDevelopment*38,10,1429-1441

Harriss. B. 1981 *Transitional Trade and Rural Development*, Delhi, Vikas

Harriss-White B. 1996 *A political Economy of Agricultural Markets: Masters of the Countryside,* New Delhi, Sage

Harriss-White B. 2003 *India Working: Essays in Economy and Society* , Cambridge, Cambridge University Press

Harriss-White B. 2010 'Work and wellbeing in Informal Economies : The regulative roles of institutions of identity and the state', *World Development* , 38,2,170-183)

Harriss-White B., 2012, 'Capitalism and the Common Man' *Agrarian South: Journal of Political Economy* 1,2, 109–160

Harriss-White B. and S. Janakarajan 2004 *Rural India facing the 21st Century*, London, Anthem

Hensman, Rohini, 2010, "Labour and Globalization: Union Responses in India," *Global LabourJournal* 1, 1, 112-131

Heyer J 2011a Social Policy and Labour Standards: A South Indian Case Study paper presented in the Contemporary and HistoricalAspects of Labour Regulations and Labour Standards Panel of the 21st EuropeanConference on Modern South Asian Studies (ECMSAS), 26-29th July 2010, Bonn http://www.esrc.ac.uk/my-esrc/grants/RES-167-25-0296/outputs/read/d56e64ec-442a-445c-bea2-65486c472ef7

Heyer J 2011 b Dalit women becoming 'house wives : lessons from the Tiruppur region, 1981/2 to 2008/9 Paper presented at the Conference on Mobility or Marginalisation: Dalits in Neo-Liberal India, Oxford University, 1-2 September 2010http://www.esrc.ac.uk/my-esrc/grants/RES-167-25-0296/outputs/read/575f358c-cdb4-4975-a405-4ed28631b8e2

Jan M.A. 2012 'Ideal-types' and the diversity of capital: A review of Sanyal

http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/sites/sias/files/documents/ali%20jan%20sanyal-review-final.pdf

[Jayaraj D 2004 Social Institutions and the Structural transformation of the Non-Farm Economy, ch 1-6pp175-194in Harriss-White B and S Janakarajan Ryural India facing the 21st Century, London Anthem

Jha B no date Rural Non-Farm Employment in India: Macro trends, micro evidence and policy options *Institute of Economic Growth (New Delhi) Working Paper 267* http://iegindia.org/workpap/wp267.pdf

Jhabvala, R.and S. Subramanian (eds.) 2000*The Unorganised Sector: Social Security*. New Delhi: Sage Publications

Justino P. 2003Social Security in Developoing Countries : Myth or Necessity? Evidence from India *PRUS Working Paper No. 20*http://aajeevika.in/studies/important-analysis/Social-Security-in-Developing-Countries-Myth0-or-Necessity-Evidence-from-India.pdf

Kantor P., U. Rani and J. Unni 2006Decent Work Deficits in Informal Economy: Case of Surat *Economic and Political Weekly* 41, 21, 2089-2097

Kar S. 2011 Issues in Informality, WIEGO Research Conference, CapeTown S Africa http://wiego.org/sites/wiego.org/files/resources/files/Kar-India-Panel.pdf

Khere R. 2011 Revival of the Public Distribution System: Evidence and Explanations *Economic and Political Weekly*, Nov 5th46, 44 & 45,36-50

Lerche J. 2010. From 'rural labour' to 'classes of labour': Class fragmentation, caste and class struggle at the bottom of the Indian labour hierarchy.(pp. 64–85)in B. Harriss-White and J. Heyer (eds), *The comparative politicaleconomy of development: Africa and South Asia compared* London, Routledge

Mukhija V. 2003 *Squatters as Developers: Slum Redevelopment in Mumbai* London, Ashgate

Nathan, D. and S. Sarkar 2012 Global inequality, rising powers and labour standards, *Capturing the Gains Working Paper 2012/09*, http://www.capturingthegains.org/pdf/ctg-wp-2012-09.pdf

NCEUS 2008*Report on Conditions of Work and Promotion of Livelihoods in the Unorganised Sector*, New Delhi,Government of India.

Pattenden, J. 2012 "Migrating Between Rural Raichur and Boomtown Bangalore: Class Relations and the Circulation of Labour in South India," *Global Labour Journal*3,1, 163-190. http://digitalcommons.mcmaster.ca/globallabour/vol3/iss1/8/

Picherit D. 2009 'Workers, trust us!': Labour middlemen and the rise of the lower castes in Andhra Pradesh, pp. 259-283in J. Breman, I. Guérin and A. Prakash (ed.), *India's Unfree Workforce. Of Bondage Old and New*, Delhi, Oxford University Press
[
Prosperi, V. 2010 Informal Migrant Workers in the Indian Economy. The Case of the Construction Industry, La Sapienza University of Rome, PhD thesis.

Prosperi V forthcomingHow informal labour in India improves its conditions and wages: the micro-political economy of gains,*Working Paper*,Technology.. research project, CSASP, SIAS, Oxford Universityhttp://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/resources-greenhouse-gases-technology-and-jobs-indias-informal-economy-case-rice.

Ramachandran V.K., M Swaminathanand V.Rawal2001 How have hired workers fared? A case study of women workers from an Indian village, 1977 to 1999, *Centre for Development Studies, Trivandrum Working Paper*,Centre for Development Studies, Trivandrum,

Rao, S. 2011 Work and Empowerment: Women and Agriculture in South India, *Journal of Development Studies*, 47, 2, 294–315.

Rawal, V. 2006 The Labour Process in Rural Haryana (India): A Field-Report from two villages, *Journal of Agrarian Change*, 6, 4, 538-583.

Ray, A. 2011 Growth has become more inclusive. Real wages, employment and per capita consumption have risen across rural and urban India,*The Hindu Business Line*http://www.thehindubusinessline.com/opinion/columns/alok-ray/article2313892.ece(accessed the 10th of July 2012).

Reddy D.N. and C. Upendranath 2009 National Rural Employment Guarantee: Issues Concerns and ProspectsPaper for the Workshop on Inclusive Development. November, Institute for Human Development / Oxfam India, New Delhi

Reddy D.N., C. Upendranadh, R Tankha and A N Sharma 2010 'NREG as a Social Protection: Role of Institutions and Governance' Institute of Human Development, New Delhi

Rogaly B. and D. Coppard 2003 They Used To Go to Eat, Now They Go to Earn': The Changing Meanings of Seasonal Migration from Puruliya District in West Bengal, India *Journal of Agrarian Change* 3,3, 395–433

Roman, C , 2008, 2008 Learning and Innovation in Clusters: Case Studies from the Indian Silk Industry, D.Phil. Thesis Oxford University

Samy L. A. and M. Vijayabaskar 2006 *Codes of Conduct and Supplier Response in the IKEA Value Chain. The Case of Handloom Home Furnishing Suppliers in Karur, south India*, http://www.inmotionmagazine.com/global/lasamy_ikea.html (accessed on the 28th of June 2012).

Sanyal K. 2007*Rethinking Capitalist Development : Primitive Accumulation, Governmentality and Post-Colonial Capitalism*, London, Routledge

Sharma A. and D. Arora, no date, Social Protection in India: Issues and Challenges Institute of Human Developmenthttp://wiego.org/sites/wiego.org/files/resources/files/Sharma-Social_Protection_in_India_Issues_and_Challenges.pdf

Subramanian, A. and M. Qaim 2010, The Impact of Bt Cotton on Poor Households in Rural India, *Journal of Development Studies*, 46, 2, 295–311.

Sundaram, K. 2007Employment and Poverty in India, 2000-2005,, *Economic and Political Weekly*, 42,30 , 3121-3131 **27th**

Vijaybaskar M. 2011 Global Crises, Welfare Provision and Coping Strategies of Labour in Tiruppur,*Economic and Political Weekly*46, 22, 38-45

THE REGULATION OF MARKETS AND THE INTERFACE BETWEEN FORMALITY AND INFORMALITY

Aseem Prakash

THE REGULATION OF MARKETS AND THE INTERFACE BETWEEN FORMALITY AND INFORMALITY

Dr Aseem Prakash,[152]

Abstract

Any future low carbon transition would have to be guided by policy and would have to negotiate the informal market economy. Markets are important institutions that propel economic growth on one hand and also configure the relationship between social groups and individuals. Following Polanyi we understand that, over and above being regulated by the state, market exchanges are embedded in non-economic as well as economic institutions. Formal policy pertains only to the powers of the state. The line between formally state-regulated and informal social- regulated activity has been called 'blurred' (Akhil Gupta). The research developed here seeks to improve the precision of understanding the boundary between state policy levers and the informal economy.

Accordingly, it explores three different physical kinds of markets to understand the regulation of economic transactions and outcomes.

a) Commercial Transport Sector (goods transport) in Sonipat, Haryana

b) Electricity Distribution in *Madhepura* district of Bihar

c) Land Acquisition and Real Estate Development in the National Capital Territory of Delhi

It focuses on formal institutions and how they interact with informal institutions in order to 'efficiently' regulate market outcomes. It examines in detail the interface between formal and informal structures; the institution, instruments and practices which help informalise the formal structure and vice versa; and the process of regulation, showing the rationale for the limits of formal regulatory instruments.

Excerpt:

Case –study c): The Politics of Land: The Real Estate-Housing Business on the Urban Periphery

I: Introduction

Importance and speed of growth: A recent report by a unit specialising in the sale and purchase of property pointed out that the Indian real estate market has shown robust growth in 2013, althoughthe economy and economic growth has taken a downward turn. The report mentions that the 7 top cities/areas, which are driving growth in the real estate sector, are – Delhi-NCR, Kolkata, Mumbai,

[152] Professor and Assistant Dean, School of Government and Public Policy, Jindal Global University Aseem Prakash (aseemprakash@gmail.com)

Bangalore, Pune, and Hyderabad. The capital value growth in Delhi-NCR and Kolkata has grown at 20 and 17 percent respectively while other cities have experienced a price appreciation of 12-15 percent over the last one year[153].The latest Economic Survey of the Government of India indicates that financing, insurance, real estate & business services contributed 11.7 % to the GDP in the year 2011-12[154]. As per the estimate of the Federation of Indian Chambers of Commerce and Industry (FICCI), the real estate- housing sector contributes 5-6 per cent to India's GDP[155]. Thus, one can safely conclude that real-estate housing is one of the fastest growing economic sectors in India.

*Multipliers:*This sector not only generates a high quantum of direct employment, but also propels a demand in over 250 ancillary industries, such as cement, steel, paint, brick, building materials, consumer durables and so on[156]. Given the current growth rate and extremely positive future prospects, this case study attempts to understand the regulation of this particular sector by exploring the experience of real estate firms. By examining their interaction with various decision-making andregulatory bodies and the instruments used by such firms to conduct business with the state's regulatory bodies, it starts to unpack the political frontiers between the formal and informal policy and the formal and informal economies.

II: Field Method

The study was conducted with the help of partially structured open ended interviews with 13 real estate developers (proprietors), 7 government officers in the Office of the Town and Country Planning, 4 property liaisoning officers and 3 local politicians including a politically powerful Member of Legislative Assembly and 2 leaders of caste Panchayat, also known as *Khap* in Haryana.

Before the interviews, carefulbriefing and preparation was made though interacting with real estate brokers (property dealers) which in turn helped us to ask relevant and pin-pointed questions.

III: Urban Periphery in the Real Estate Business

The real estate sector has seen phenomenal growth in the last decade. The sector has seen the entry of several new domestic players as well as arrival of many foreign real estate investment companies. The factors fuelling such massive expansion are many and include continuous growth in population, in-migration to urban areas in the rapidly growing service sector, the increase in household income

[153]*Property Price Trends Across*, 99 acres.com
[154]*Economic Survey 2012-13*, Government of India, Ministry of Finance, New Delhi
[155]*Overview and Sector Profile of Real Estate*, Federation of Indian Federation of Indian Chambers of Commerce and Industry, New Delhi, available at http://www.cci.in/pdfs/surveys-reports/Real-Estate-Sector-in-India.pdf
[156] Ibid.

coupled with an expanding middle class, the rising number of nuclear families and easy availability of finance etc. It has been estimated that the housing shortage in urban areas, which was nearly 15.1 million units in 2005, increased to 19.3 million units at the end of 2008 and is expected to reach 21.7 million units by the end of 2014[157].Geographically, one of the fastest growing areas in real estate-housing in India is that around Delhi. Spiralling costs of property are making it impossible for many aspiring house owners to purchase in the main city and they are increasingly investing in property at the periphery.

Peripheral transformations: It is here that the pattern ofeconomic development in the urban periphery becomes important. Despite dissimilarities, urban development in the peripheries of Indian citiesis characterised by following common attributes[158].

First, a major portion of urban growth occurs in*peripheral areas* as people move outwards from the congestion of central cities. This movement propels the parallel development of commercial real estate (offices etc.), organised retail real estate (malls etc.), hospitality real estate (hotels etc.) special economic zones and residential real estate.The development of commercial real estate in Delhi is also due to a desire to stay close to the national capital. In the absence of sufficient affordable office space in the city, commercial establishments are increasingly moving to the satellite towns of NOIDA, Gurgaon, Faridabad etc.

Second, as commercial establishments and business and residential areas move out of the main city, *property / asset prices*in peripheral areas escalate.

Third, these two processes are contingent on*policy changes in land use patterns*, that is, the shift from agriculture to commercial use including housing. The latter in India is achieved through the preparation of master plans thatallot land for different developmental uses (commercial, housing, industrial, hospitality etc.). This point will be further discussed in the subsequent section.

Fourth, it triggers a *structuraltransformation* in the region, that is, from a (capitalist) agricultural based economy to an economy based on capitalist networks of trade and services linked to national and global capital.

Fifth, it further accentuates the *class differentiation* of the local economy.The middle and large landholders whose land is acquired by private players are found to diversify toother service providing

[157] *Estimation of the Urban Housing: Report of the Technical Group, 11th Five Year Plan (2017-2012*), Ministry of Housing and Urban Poverty Alleviation, New Delhi

[158] The discussion is largely based on the inferences drawn from the region of National Capital Territory (NCR) of Delhi. Although this will be largely true for any region in India where land acquisition has been through market mechanism.

sectors like transport, cable television, general store, real estate business[159], construction etc. Several of them may retain a portion of their land and continue to invest time and money in agriculture along with the diversificationof their economic effortto include the service sector. Further, with the development of the area, the price of land increases exponentially. This gives them either control over large sums of money (if they choose to sell the remaining land) or a potential future source of capital. This particular class of people are then seen to have a large amount of disposable income, often invested in lavish consumer goods. Small farmers who choose to sell their land in the initial phase are either content with small-scale service sector opportunities or have frittered their newly acquired wealth in conspicuous consumption. The landless, as per local observers, constitute 20-30 per cent of the population. Although, they are absorbed into the local economy, they command a relatively meagre incomein the unorganised service sector. Lastly, the service sector creates substantial opportunities and drawsboth *professional and unskilled migrant workers* from various parts of the country. The professionals provide an important basis for real estate housing business development either through the purchase of new properties or the renting out of accommodation in the new residential sites developed in the area. The other class of migrant peopleare thelarge number of wage labourers who are drawn by the labour opportunities provided by the unorganised service sector. They survive on bare minimum wages/earnings and live in miserable conditions.

Sixth, real estate development has led to the emergence of a fresh class of *economic agents* who act as facilitators of different types in the property business. They are often the primary human agency through which real estate development has unfolded in the periphery. The first categories of economic agents are the *big real estate players* who have massive presence not only in the region of our case study-NCR of Delhi- but also in other big metros of India. This includes big firms like DLF, AnsalsAPI, Chintel, Bestech etc. The second category of economic agents are *big farmers* of the region who have sold a portion of their agricultural land and have used the surplus as seed money to start small real estate projects- both commercial and housing – on their own land. The third category of economic agents are the *power brokers* who facilitate the interaction between the regulators and the real estate developers. This may include small time politicians who have access to the corridors of power as well as professional brokers who have made this particular economic activity as the mainstay of their earning and livelihood. This point will be further taken for discussion in the following sections.

IV: Master Plan: An Insight from Gurgaon, NCR of Delhi

A master plan lays down the vision for the long term development of the city. The document endeavours to outline the guidelines, policies and space requirements for various socio economic

[159] Real estate business is discussed further in the following paragraph.

activities (commercial, housing, parks, roads, special economic zones etc.) that are expected to support the city population during the plan period. It also proposes a plan for all infrastructuralrequirements. The master plan also delineates the institutional mechanisms needed to realise the plan's objectives.

As is evident from the purpose of the Master Plan described above, it is inevitable thatcities in the modern era are planned through a master plan. The master plan is generally developed for a period of 10-15 years. However, in recent years,Gurgaon, one of the prominent cities of the state of Haryana and also a satellite town of Delhi has seen *three such plans* released by the government.The first Draft Master Plan 2021 was released in 2006 and subsequently notified in 2007. Within four years, another plan titled Draft Master Plan 2025 was released in 2010 and subsequently notified in 2011. Again, within a year, in 2012, a new Master Plan 2031 was notified.

These successive master plan freed up agricultural land for the following purposes:

No.	**Land Use**	**Master Plan 2021 (Notified in 2007)**	**Master Plan 2025 (Notified in 2011)**	**Master Plan 2031 (Notified in 2012)**
		Areas in Hectares		
1	Residential	14930	15148	16010
2	Commercial	1430	1429	1616
3	Industrial	5441	5431	4613
4	Transport and Communication	4231	4289	4420
5	Public Utilities	564	609	626
6	Public and Semi Public Use (Institutional)	1630	1775	2035
7	Open Spaces	2675	2688	2775
8	Special Zone	106	106	114
9	Defence Land	633	633	633
	Total	**37069**	**37512**	**32842**
Source: Various Notified Master Plans of Guragon, Haryana, Town and Country Planning Department				

The Politics of Land: Interpreting the Master Plans

As is evident from the above table, nearly 40 to 48 per cent of the land is allocated to private realtors for development of residential blocks. Several key informants during the course of field work, including senior government officials informed us that the frequent change in the master plan is under the influence of a rich and politically powerful lobby of real estate developers. While this information cannot be conclusively proven, the available facts collected and patterns observed during the course of fieldwork give us enough evidence to reasonably conclude that the formal regulatory institutions of the state have been breached by the *informal networks and lobbies of private relators*. In order to pursue this line of argument, the following institutional process of land conversion should be taken into account.

a) There are two stages in the preparation of the Master plan. First,a draft Master Plan is prepared and subsequently the Master Plan is officially notified. It was pointed out that the Draft Master Plan of 2021 was changed substantially by the time it could be notified such that many public and semi-public spaces/public utilities were converted to residential and commercial use. The process was repeated at every successive graduation of draft Master Plan to the notification stage.

   The breach of the formal regulatory process can be gauged by the fact that many of the realtors had bought a significant amount of agricultural land even before the draft Master Plan was announced. However, a few realtors found that the land purchased by them was notified as designated for public and semi-public spaces/public utilities. However, in the final notified Master Plan muchof the land designated for public use was re-designated for commercial/residential use.

   The process underlying such re-designation is crucial to understanding the politics of land. First, it is more than possible that the realtors had *inside information* about the forthcoming Master Plan and hence the mad scramblefor purchase of agricultural land just before every successive draft Master Plan was announced.

b) Further, as evident from the above table, each successive master plan increased the *residential category* by 1080 hectares. A senior official in the Town Planning Department explained that this addition was achieved through political intervention at the highest level at the behest of the private realtors lobby thereby enormously benefitting few select builders.

c) The state government while rushing the Master Plan 2031 announced that 4570 hectares of land earmarked for Special Economic Zones was to be developed for commercial and residential use. The rationale given by the notified Master Plan 2013 was "The scenario regarding setting up of SEZs has undergone sea change since notification of these plans and virtually there are no more takers for SEZs now. Even the already notified SEZs are not being implemented and resultantly, the landowners of such land were demanding replanning of their land so that they are able to utilise the same for some other purpose."[160]The chief beneficiaries of this process were some big real estate companies. Therefore, the state government simply choose to go by the interest of the realtors instead of protecting the interests of the farmers whose land was originally acquired and who were ignored.

[160] Master Plan 2013, Town and Country Planning Department, Haryana Government, 15 November, 2012, Pg 1

The above cited frequent changes in the Master Plan as well several crucial policy changes (for instance, increasing the density per acre from 80 to 100 persons in 2009) indicate several *informal political processes* which are interacting with the formal regulatory processes, a fact repeatedly attested by scores of informants during the course of the field trip. This process involves breaching of the formal mechanisms through a *collusion of the bureaucracy, private realtors and political leaders*.Therefore one aspect of the "politics of land" can be described as the influence of informal processes on formal processes in such a way that*the interests of the private economic agents are formalised through the state's formal policy pronouncements*.

But the politics of land is not limited to macro-policymaking; it also operates at the micro level during the actual real estate development, a process documented below.

V: The Politics of Land Seen through the Process of Actual Development of Real Estate-Housing

The following narrative captured through several detailed interviews of real estate developers captures another aspect of the politics of land. The narrative captures the policy mechanism of how real estate agents interact with the formal policy processes once the land has been cleared for a real-estate housing project (group housing).

The Formal Process

The first stage in real estate-housing development is to obtain a 'letter of intent' (LOI). In order to obtain the LOI, the file has to be approved by the office of the Senior Town Planner, District Town Planner (DTP) and by the Financial Commissioner (FC). After all the clearances, the file goes to the Principal Secretary in the Office of the Chief Minister. The latter is due to the fact that the current Chief Minister holds the portfolio of Town & Country Planning and Urban Estates. This process involves the following steps:

Office of the District Town Planner: In the DTP office, two officers are responsible for scrutinizing the proposed housing project. They are Planning Assistant (PA) and Junior Draftsman (JD). These two officers are responsible for approving that the proposed site has the required access, the map of the proposed scheme, plotting scheme. There seems to be no universal format and guidelines for submitting these details which in turn gives lot of leverage to the PA and JD to use their *discretion*.

Office of the Senior Town Planner: The STP re-scrutinises the file and attests if the DTP has correctly approved the proposed site and is deemed fit for initiating construction.

Office of the Director General Town and Country Planning: The file is sent back to the DTP office where the Director General has to give her approval.

Office of the Finance Commissioner: Once all the approvals are procured, the file is sent to the Finance Commissioner who has to attest all the earlier approvals.

Office of the Chief Minister: The file is finally sent to the Office of the Chief Minister (since the current Chief Minister holds the portfolio of Town & Country Planning and Urban Estates). Technically the file has to be cleared by the Principal Secretary of the department but in the current government, this is done by the Principal Secretary to the Chief Minister.

Once all the approvals are obtained, the LOI is granted to the real estate developer, though certain conditionalities are placed. These conditionalities demand deposition of External Development Charges, Internal Development Charges, License Fee and Scrutiny fee. Once the LOI is obtained and conditionalities are fulfilled, the real estate developer has to apply for a license. The license can be obtained on providing the following documents:

1. Master Plan of the proposed housing project
2. Building Plan
3. No Objection Certificates. The certificates are to be obtained from 8 different departments. They are Municipal Corporation, Director, Urban Local Body, Haryana Urban Development Authority (local office as well as main head office), Pollution Control Board (local office as well as main head office), Department of Forest, Department of Irrigation, National Highway Authority of India, Office of the Electricity Distribution (local office and main head office)

Once the license is procured, the real estate developer has to submit the following documents to the office of DTP, STP, and DGTP and take their respective approval.

1. Zoning plan (it indicates the entrance and connection to the main access road)
2. Service Estimate (it indicates the plan for internal road, electricity, drainage, sewerage)
3. Building Plan

Once all the approvals have been procured and adhered to as per the approved plan, the completion certificate is granted

Informal Process of Obtaining Approval

The politics of land at the micro level or at the stage of execution is similar to the one discussed above while presenting various aspects of the master plans. The approval by various regulatory authorities is never obtained through the merit of the case but by *breaching the formal institutions through informal means*. The real estate developers informed us about various informal institutional means to get the clearances from various regulatory authorities. The same are discussed below.

a) *LiaisonAgents*: These are the locally influential people, often coming from the local dominant caste. They have presence in local politics and known to have access to political leaders and bureaucracy. They act as professionals and are hired at a fixed sum by the private real estate developers to get the clearance and approvals at various stages of the regulatory processes.

   The big real estate developers have such agents on their pay rolls, while the small time real estate developers hire them on a case-to-case basis. Often, the agents specialise in procuring approvals for the realtors from a specific office/ regulator. In such a case more than one agent is hired.

   The cost of the agent depends on her proximity to the office/ minister/ local politician. If the agent herself reaches the concerned regulator through another contact the cost is higher since a portion of the money also has to be paid to this particular contact. The real estate developers informed us that the latter not only results in cost escalation but also delay in terms of time.

b) *Political Network*: A strong political network with the right ministers and other (senior) elected representatives results in smooth facilitation of the procurement of the approvals. However such a network is not without cost. The cost is contingent on the *proximity of the facilitator with the concerned minister.*

   Facilitators who use the political network take money from the real estate developer. We were told that these facilitators are often conduits/agents of relevant ministers or they provide political funding during elections and claim their 'return favour' by facilitating the procurement of various approvals for real estate developers.

c) *Caste Network*: The caste leaders are also understood to have access to political leaders who operate on the lines of the political network discussed above.

Mode of Payment of the "Approval" Fee to the Political and Bureaucratic Decision Makers

The payments made to the various decision makers acquire different form. The interviewees informed us that cash seems to be preferredonly by liaisoning agents.

Other may prefer something *in kind* (though this is not always necessary) which may be later en-cashed. At times some flats/land/commercial spaces are allotted to the relatives of decision makers at prices much lower than the market price. However, this kind of "approval" fee is only given to facilitators belonging to political and caste networks, who in turn divide the "approval" fee between them and the decision makers. The reason being that they are able to provide, what was described as, '*single window clearance*'. In other words, politically influential facilitators are able to secure all approvals and the real estate developer is saved the trouble of hiring multiple agents for various regulatory authorities.

Another form of popular payment method is gold and other precious metals. Two small real estate developers informed us that they had presented a luxury car to a senior bureaucrat for obtaining a necessary clearance.

VI: Conclusion: The Politics of Land

The politics of land thus consists of two essential aspects. While the state creates the market in land and real estate-housing, it also in-formalises itself and in return shapes the formal processes of policy making in the interest of private real estate agents. The other aspect of politics of land caters to the regulation of the actual development of the land. Here, the regulatory arms of the statecomplicates and delays the decision making process so as to extract rent. Again the regulatory process is breached through informal channels to procure formal decisions for real estate development.

‘PUDUMAI’- INNOVATION AND INSTITUTIONAL CHURNING IN INDIA’S INFORMAL ECONOMY: A REPORT FROM THE FIELD

Barbara Harriss-White and Gilbert Rodrigo

'PUDUMAI'- INNOVATION AND INSTITUTIONAL CHURNING IN INDIA'S INFORMAL ECONOMY: a report from the field[161]

Barbara Harriss-White and Gilbert Rodrigo

1. CONTEXT

Given the unfolding changes to global climate, established beyond reasonable doubt as anthropogenic in cause, a low carbon/low matter industrial and agricultural revolution is very urgently needed (Anderson, 2011).Since the 'silver bullets'of market mediated responses - cap and trade, and the clean development mechanism - have not yet shown any sign of reducing global GHG emissions,and since climate change is a very politically sensitive topic, the alternative – an approach of 'silver buckshot' – can only be a multitude of new, low C activities whichhave'co-benefits'*other than* climate change as theirobjectives.[162]Co-benefits might be poverty reduction and/or an expansion of the size and quality of the labour force and/or the quality of work.[163] Lowering CO2 – or other environmental benefits – would find political favour on these other grounds.India has formally adopted a co-benefits approach to climate change policy.[164]

Despite the fact that the informal economy accounts for about two thirds of GDP and 90% of employment[165], the informal economyseems absent from almost all discussionsof any kind of low-C revolution.[166]Poor consumers are least responsible for GHGs,but many of the products of the formally registered and regulated industries which cause 70 % India's pollutionare retailed in the informal economy.[167] So does it play such a negligible role in pollution as most people have assumed?[168] Another significantquestion is whether India's informal economy would be an obstacle to a low carbon revolution.Our wider research has tackled both these questions but it is thesecond question that provoked the exploratory project reported here. While the technological and organisational

161 References are at present incomplete

162162Lohmann 2006; (Prins and Rayner, 2007 The wrong trousers; Hartwell Paper, 2010) .

163Dubash et al 2013, have used the co-benefit approach in a novel multi-criteria analysis of climate change policy for growth, inclusion and environment. (Dubash N, D Raghunandan, G Sant and A Sreenivas2013 Indian Climate Change Policy: Exploring a Co-benefits Approach. Economic and Political Weekly June 1stvol XLVIII pp 47-62

164 Expert Group 2012 Low Carbon Strategies for Inclusive Growth, 12th Five Year Plan, Planning Commission, citied in Dubash et al ,2013.

165 While space is regulated: land titles are registered throughout India and forests are properties of the state, the agricultural and forest economies are officially part of the unorganised sector.

166 One South Asian exception is Manchester university's research into climate change adaptation by low income groups in Bangladeshi cities.

167 Iron and steel cement, aluminium, fertiliser, energy, paper pulp (CSE 2012)

168 While all land-based agricultural activity and agro-industry is estimated at 45% of global GHGs, the proportion in the informal economy is not known.

components of a low-C revolution have been modelled in scenarios,[169] here we focus on the sector's own capacity to adopt the kind of technological and organisational changes that would be needed – in short to innovate. We ask whether and how innovationtakes place in the informal economy.

The paper has three parts. We first introduce and try to clarify the complex and often 'fuzzy'structure of knowledge within which the question has to be answered. We then present the case material from our fieldwork, before welding it into an argument relating to the sets of ideas with which we start. An appendix of evidence may be found at http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/resources-greenhouse-gases-technology-and-jobs-indias-informal-economy-case-rice

PART ONE

2. A UNIVERSE OF FUZZY CONCEPTS AND SUB-FIELDS

THE INFORMAL ECONOMY

The term *informal economy* is a fuzzy concept with multiple interpretations and meanings (e.g. small / primitive activity; unlicensed / unregistered; untaxed; work without rights). Poverty and illiteracy reside in the informal economy. For the most part, the informal economy also lies below the state's radar (Kanbur et al, 2012).[170]Illegal activity evading the law overlaps with behaviour that pre-emptive the law, or which occurs in areas where regulations are not enforced or where they are neglected by the state. It overlaps with behaviour that doesn't come under the ambit of regulation at all, or that doesn't conform with it, or that developed prior to the imposition of regulation. .[171]

It is the relation of the economy to state regulation that makes informality particularly interesting. In relation to climate change, the informal sector is significant because the state cannot enforce policies in it; efforts to do so typically lead to extortion and police action and complicity but not to compliance.

169http://www.cccep.ac.uk/Research/Programmes/climate-change-mitigation/home.aspx; ref Tim Foxton.

170The National Policy on Urban Street Vendors 2009 has been analysed by TeL intelo as a means of evicting them on phyto-sanitary grounds. The 11th and 12th Five Year Plans have sections on Inclusive Cities (focussing on sites for street vendors, housing for informal settlements, the integration of rag pickers into the municipal solid waste process chain etc. In Mumbai, planners are identifying specific zones for informal settlements and activity (Champaka, Pers. Comm., 2013).

171Labour, migration status, civil rights, tax, health and safety, land use, environmental damage are increasingly prominent theatres of informality in the so-called developed economies of the west (Larsen, 1992) J. Larsen 1992 in f illegality and enforcement Yale Law and Policy |Review

India's informal economy is now linked directly through supply chains to consumption processes all over the globe, with all stages of a production-distribution system weaving in and out of it.[172]In addition, many if not most firms in the informal sector have aspects that are subject to regulation and some that are not: e.g. being licensed but not paying taxes or complying with labour laws or environmental standards. So,in the institutional matrix underpinning innovation, formal and informal are intertwined.

INNOVATION

In Lundvall's authoritative review of the concept (1992), i*nnovation*is also a fuzzy term, but at the core of its multiple meanings and strategic vagueness there is, at least, novelty. Innovation is an interactive process, generating not only new products but also new processes and technology, substituting new factors of production in an unaltered finished product capable of changing the social relations of work, e.g. through new labour requirements[173]). New forms of organisation (the organisation and institutionalisation of supply / exchange relations for the assembly of raw materials, the interactive processes of production and distribution, controls over finance, commodities and labour) are innovations. In new markets, two processes are at work, both of which involve innovation: i) invention to compete by reducing costs or to not compete by securing and defending a market share and ii) commodification, the conversion of things and activities into commodities in order that profit may be made from them. [174]New activities can create further markets for the product or service and give rise to other multipliers through invention and commodification.[175] New kinds of persuasion create new forms of consumption and need. Kline and Resenberg in their (1986) overview of innovation also point out that improvements in the methods of innovation are themselves innovations, and to this we should add that the discarding of old practices is also distinctive part of the process of innovation, and one little examined in the literature. Innovation is often said to precede regulation (Dickson, 1988), from which it is a short step to argue both that innovators resist regulation and/or that regulation stifles innovation.

NEWNESS/NOVELTY

Innovation emphasises 'newness' but newness is itself also a repertoire of concepts. Schumpeter defined the innovator as an entrepreneur who invents new ways of linking factors of production. Invention is a process distinguished in two ways: on the one hand it differs from adoption / diffusion/

---

[172] Forty % of India's manufactured exports are estimated to be produced there.
[173]The labour *processes*themselves are often neglected by scholars of innovation
[174]http://www.opendemocracy.net/ourkingdom/colin-leys-barbara-harriss-white/commodification-essence-of-our-time
[175]Manufacturing and service provision in the informal economy have been recognised as continual, dynamic active processes with indirect multiplier effects ('indirect network effects') and formal-informal inter-connections throughout the system – from raw materials supplies, to final effective demand.

‘transfer’,and on the other hand it differs from adaptation, which fits a transfer to the circumstances of a local society and region and may involve pure invention along the way. Yet even adoption and transfer may involve unadulterated novelty, physical courage and unprecedented risk-taking as it diffuses to a new a region or social group (the retailing by a dalit of symbolically ‘pure’ milled rice in 1973 in Vellore being one such example).

DEVELOPMENT

Development is such a fuzzy term that textbooks are rare and encyclopaedias common.[176]For Schumpeter development was a continuous process of innovation. The centre of gravity of the idea of development has shifted from industrialisation, state-building and citizenship and the sustaining of those excluded from the process, to the aid-driven ‘war on poverty’ and a set of dematerialised conceptions of human development and improvement in the human condition, spawning hundreds of thematic subfields along the way. Some recent inter presentations of development for example that of Paul Richards in his 1985 ‘*Indigenous Agricultural Revolution*’,[177]bear witness to Schumpeter, in conceiving development as embodying the constant adaptive innovations - in his case by West African farmers- and stress an indigenous capacity to innovate, unconfined to research institutes[178].The relation between technology, work and employment, influentially invoked as a route out of poverty also stresses inappropriate technology transfer and the lack of indignity as being at the heart of the problem of slow development.[179]Lant Prichett has provided a good analogy of how it is supposed to work in developing countries: entrepreneurship there is a matter of adopting transfers invented, developed and protected elsewhere. But the transfers of technology to DCs frequently fail when transferred to a new environment ‘trees’ are transferred without their organic ‘roots’. In India the organic/institutional roots, certainly for livelihoods and the mass of the labour force, are in the informal economy.

TECHNOLOGY

Technology is as central to any response to climate change as it is to development, involving the social application of knowledge. But what knowledge, and applied to what part of society?

---

[176]Textbooks – Cowen and Shenton, Leys. Dictionary - Sachs, Encyclopaedias - Corbridge, Forsyth, Clark, Desai

[177] 1985 *Indigenous Agricultural Revolution: Ecology and Food Production in West Africa*, Hutchinson

[178]See also Anil Gupta, 1999, Science, Sustainability and Social Purpose http://www.hks.harvard.edu/sustsci/ists/TWAS_0202/gupta_300199.pdf).

[179]F Stewart and F Shumacher.proviso that tech is appropriate for factor endowment and benefits resultingMore notes from. Fitzgerald Heyer and Thorp Introduction in eds (FHT Overcoming the persistence of Poverty and Inequality pp1-18

A major stream of science and technology literature[180] is concerned with high tech frontiers and cutting edges – where human control over machinery/technology is often remote and mediated. This science and technology literature (SCITECHLIT) also makes the assumption that innovations happen in laboratories, with their distinctive social cultures [181](whether such labs are corporate, university or state institutions).They are then protected by property rights and developed and diffused with financial support, or learning by doing, and with further spill-over effects beyond the sphere to which they are first diffused[182]Many questions arise when the conditions of this institutional scenario are relaxed. What are the factors really driving the choice of a production technique? What effect does the introduction of a technique have on production relations outside the immediate adoption process? How do the most efficient technologies in terms of competitiveness in global markets influence labour markets?Is this beneficial or detrimental to labour? What is the role of public policy institutions in this regardwhen it comes to the informal economy?[183]

FIRMS AND SOCIO-TECHNICAL SYSTEMS

Yet another subfield addresses these questions. Innovation through technological change is generally taken to be about firms responding to opportunities for which there is as yet either no demand or no supply, or neither. Yet firms cannot be understood solely in terms of markets and in isolation from non-market institutions due to i) externalities ii) the lumpiness and indivisibilities of innovation, iii) scale economies which need appropriate finance and iv) technological discontinuities which affect other firms (Roman, 2008). So the study of technical change needs to understand not only firms as institutions, but also their institutional 'ecosystem'. The disruptions due to innovation, especially the consequences of capital-biased technological transfers, may include 'public bads' which need to be regulated by public intervention (Dickson, 1988).But can we impose these conceptual frames onto the informal economy, and ask the same kinds of questions about the informal institutional preconditions of innovation?

INNOVATION SYSTEMS

Science and technology studies have developed the concept of an *innovation system*(IS): the public and private sector institutions and information needed for an innovation to be (commercially) developed and diffused. 'Agricultural innovation systems (AIS)' for instance 'are systems of individuals, organizations and enterprises that bring new products, processes and forms of organization into social and economic use to achieve food security, economic development and

[180] Another stream sees science and society as inseparable; a third deals normatively with the public outreach and engagement of science.
[181]Sunder Rajan , 2006, Biocapital
[182] Fu, X. (2012) 'Foreign Direct Investment and Managerial Knowledge Spillovers'
[183]Vijaybaskarperscomm 2012

sustainable natural resource management'.[184]The AIS includes a multitude of potential actors, such as producer organizations, research organizations, extension and advisory services, universities and educational bodies, governments and civil society organizations, co-coordinating bodies, individual farmers and farm labourers, and the private sector (including traders, processors, supermarkets etc.).[185]This approach is useful because it allows for a great diversity of possibilities, consistent with real-world complexity.

For its proponents, what the concept of an Innovation System implies is thati)that if innovation can be a process as well as a product, the institutional matrix through which innovative knowledge and technology are created and transferred matters; ii) that the institutional matrix in innovation hotspots can be stylised into models of best practice ; iii) that this will involve a laboratory - > property rights -> scaling up diffusion; iv) that the creative act of innovation can be standardised and v)that deviations from best practice – 'innovation deficits'- can be a) identified and b) filled. Empirical studies of IS are inherently trans-national ,comparative and macro-social: societies or companies with good innovation systems are then seen as able to leapfrog over long-drawn out / failed stages of lagged development.

But in our wider research[measuring costs, GHGs and human labour in the informal economy with a view to ascertaining alternatives as components of a new industrial revolution with low-carbon, decent-work co-benefits]there is no already-identified ground on which leapfrogging is to land, whether in ACs or DCs. The idea of the innovation system has also come under convincing attack (Floysand and Jakobsen2011[186]) for treating innovation as something purely technical when it is always a social and political process operating in what the authors call, with strategic vagueness, 'social fields'. 'Social fields', for Floys and Jakobsen, are social sub-'systems' at various (interacting) scales capable of generating social economic and political multipliers and requiring complementary institutional preconditions they call 'super modularities' (i.e. packages of institutions) which can also include culture, the household, and institutions of work. While their case studies are in the formal economy of Scandinavia, in being expansive, the Floysand-Jakobsen approach is more useful than the orthodox IS, in which social structure is exogenous, for the context of an informal economy; although they completely neglect class relations.

INDOVATION

[184]http://agro-ecoinnovation.eu/wp-content/uploads/2012/07/The_role_of_knowledge_in_agro_eco_systems.pdf
[185]From: Global Forum on Agricultural Research <gfar-secretariat@fao.org>
To: kassamamir<kassamamir@aol.com>
Sent: Fri, Jun 1, 2012 7:25 pm
Subject: [EGFAR newsletter] Agricultural Innovation Systems and Family Farming - An FAO E-mail Conference - June, 2012
[186]Fløysand, A. and Jakobsen, S.E. (2011): The complexity of innovation: a relational turn. Progress in Human Geography 35 (3), 328-344

A new family of concepts provoked by the *Bottom of the Pyramid*(BoP)movement in corporate marketing [187]appears to have addressed these questions. But appearances are deceptive. '*Indovation'* is a concept meant to encapsulate the idea that (Indian) poverty leads to creativity. Although the relevance of this insight to the informal economy cannot be doubted,[188]the examples invoked – the Nano car, solar lights - are unfortunate in having origins far removed from the abode of the poor. Another concept is '*Jugaad*', a North Indian word for a cost-cutting quick-fix, possibly unsafe, nearly always 'bending the law' or ignoring it completely. It is a peculiarly Indian contribution to the literature on '*Frugal Innovation'*,itself a powerful term which is focussed on (multi-national) corporates. Its allure derives once more from its fuzziness. First, it celebrates least-cost ways to maximise profit. Second, this may at the same time involve an improvisatory and flexible approach to innovation (rejecting the research labs/innovation systems) and an exploration of the many sites inside a corporation where new ideas may originate. Third, further sites of frugal innovation include consumers themselves, normally regarded as 'the market' outside the organisation. In this literature the BoP is relabelled the poor, marginalised and excluded, un-bankable, sick and disabled, ignorant and ageing consumer whose living conditions can be greatly improved by corporate innovations able to be paid for by them.[189]

The argument for the desirability of jugged or frugal innovation is built up from case material and inductive generalisations. The cases selected in this literature are very distinctive – innovators are educated people capable of scaling up. The cases provide 'lessons', targeted at and driven by corporates. Now, while frugal innovation will certainly have an impact on the informal economy (in many instances formalising it), the entire family of concepts is geared to the business school, to a possible strategic option inside a big firm, rather than to the informal economy. We may indeed find frugal innovation in a literal sense in the informal economy but we must distinguish its application in self-employment from the concept developed for the corporate sector.

INNOVATION AND THE EXPANDED CONCEPT OF ENTERPRISE

Nandini Gooptuand colleagues (2009; forthcoming) have taken the debate forward in finding that in contemporary India all kinds of agency are being considered as 'enterprising', with the connotation of being innovative,. Gooptu argues that the idea of enterprise is being generalised to an 'enterprise culture' in which innovation inside and outside work loses its original Schumpeterian meaning and acquires others appropriate to conforming as a subject to the totalising neo-liberal era. For an overeducated segment of the labour force even mundane work for a wage in a supermarket is

---

[187]Though it is nothing new. Shampoo and soap were being retailed in sachets in periodic marketplaces in South India in the early 1970s.
[188]Its implicit romanticisation of poverty is another problem.
[189] See N Radjou, J Prabhu and S Ahuja 2012 Jugaad Innovation: a frugal and flexible approach to innovation for the 21st century Random House

relabelled as ‘enterprise’, carrying no implication of entrepreneurship in a Schumpeterian sense. A focus on wage work for corporates also ignores the explicit characteristic of the informal economy: self-employment.[190]In the same way the idea promoted by some scholars that self-employment is ‘good or better quality employment’(better than wage work),[191]and that enterprise automatically includes innovation is a watered-down re-deployment of the concept of entrepreneurship which suffused the early Green Revolution literature of the 1970s.[192]In this literature the entrepreneur at best managed the risks of a small business and at worst was driven into self-employment by poverty and the lack of wage-work. To avoid the circular conclusion that since self-employment is enterprise and the informal economy is dominated by self-employment, so it must be enterprising and innovative, enterprise as a loaded term must be deconstructed and used critically in explorations of innovation in the informal economy.

INSIGHTS FROM OTHER WAYS OF KNOWING: THE CLASS STRUCTURE OF KNOWLEDGEAND INNOVATION

From the critique of perspectives that view technologies and innovations in isolation from their social economic context, science and technology studies have scrupulously researched the social relations, work practices and discoveries of the labs.[193] But anthropologists of work have also shown that innovation requires a bed of existing knowledge and practice, nowhere more so than in the informal economy.[194]There are at least two aspects to it. First, technologies combine external tools and our ‘internal tools’ (body organs including our brains) in order to shape our environment. Brain-hand-foot-body co-ordination is a set of learned skills and a physiological state –which, as in hand-weaving, may require long periods of time to develop. The capacity to adapt to the physical rigours of practice is often built into apprenticeships and even less formalised processes of childhood learning and socialisation to work (Roman, 2008).

Second, innovation, even of a *jugaad* kind, does not happen out of the blue: existing knowledge resources feed innovation. Whether these resources / ‘repertoires’ are competitive bodies of knowledge or complementary ones, how they are kept secret or controlled or released publicly in the informal economy are all empirical questions. The implication for our understanding of innovation is that a systematic and embedded analytical approach to technology, product innovation and organisational change is needed. The relation between change and continuity in knowledge resources needs integrating into any analysis of innovation dynamics. Eric Ohlin Wright (2012)[195] distinguishes

---

[190] The NCEUS is an expression of the ambiguity of ‘enterprise’ see Corbridge et al in British Academy book
[191] See for instance Sundaram in Corbridge et al in British Academy China-India book
[192] As in many publications from FAO’s agricultural services division, itself a euphemism for trade in inputs and products.
[193]Kaushik Sunder Rajan 2003 Biocapital
[194] Lave
[195] E Ohlin Wright 2012 *Worker-owned Co-operatives* DPRI, May 23rd, Oxford

the various kinds of institutional churning into ‘interstitial’ versus ‘ruptural’ versus ‘symbioticchange’ interlocked in a pluralist arrangement of laws and social norms.

A political anthropological approach to innovation i) admits class and sees labour as well as capital as able to innovate; ii) sees innovation in every aspect of the production-distribution ecology; iii) explores multipliers and effects of innovation (both interstitial and ruptural); iv) acknowledges the continuity of the existing knowledge base as a vital precondition for innovation; v) regards the state which only indirectly regulates the informal economy as being vital for innovation, especially through its role in providing infrastructure and communications; and vi) finds a range of motivations for innovation (over and above the profit/ CSR[196]/ social enterprise motives of the mainstream literature). These often powerful motives include securing livelihoods, power (especially over labour), pleasure (reducing drudgery, satisfaction in skill) collegiality and political solidarity, altruism and nurture (Roman, forthcoming).

So the existing dynamics of informal innovation need understanding, because the next stages of development, or a response to climate change, will emerge from existing socio-technical configurations. If India’s regulative structure is not to undergo radically disruptive change, a new ‘green’ industrial revolution / a low carbon transition would develop out (or in and out) of direct state control.

To sum up, we take from these knowledge fields the following ideas. While the basic unit of production, self-employment, is an enterprise, it is not to be supposed to be entrepreneurial or free of the coercions of poverty. However, while there are no research labs in the informal economy, this is not to deny the possibility of three kinds of innovation: invention, adaptive innovation and adoption or transfer in new circumstances. Innovation may happen as a product, a process or a technological repertoire throughout the institutions in which it occurs, including in derived markets such as transport; it may need protection and incentives to develop and diffuse. The labour force may innovate too, for it is a repository of knowledge that forms a crucible for innovation. While not directly regulated by the state, the informal economy is regulated by an institutional ecosystem, or socio-technical system, even generating hybrid institutions and practices combining both formally regulated and socially regulated behaviour..But the identification of the most significant facilitating and obstructing institutions is an empirical question. So also is discovering the ways in which they act as incentives or disincentives. All forms of innovation arise through the continuities of history and will have effects through spill-overs and multipliers which the method of field research must try to capture. Last but not least, to innovate means to destroy previous habits and products (one of many insights from Schumpeter) and their destruction is part of the process of innovation. People we

[196] Corporate social responsibility activity

interviewed didn't conceive the last aspect of innovation naturally as part of their accounts but it proved significant as we will see.

3. PRACTICAL METHOD

We returned in 2012 to a small town, Arni, in Northern Tamil Nadu that has been studied systematically, every 10 years from 1972 to the mid nineties and almost continuously though less systematically throughout the 21st century – nonetheless over a uniquely long 40 year period. It has grown from about 30,000 to well over 100,000 inhabitants as it receives rural-urban migrants and engulfs villages outside its formal boundary.

While there can be no representative town or local non-farm economy, this town has been accepted as a useful site in which to study rural-urban relations and local capitalism. (Nagaraj et al, 2004; Arisi, forthcoming; Srinivasan 2011;Basile,2013).The town is used here as a historically specific case, but one which generates examples that we think are of wider relevance. Local more or less registered business associations have long had a crucial role in regulating the urban economy, representing sectors, negotiating particularistic interests with the government and controlling threats to their hegemony (Harriss, 1981). Presidents of Business Associations are elected as knowledgeable representatives and were also assumed able to tell stories that might be sensitive from a comfortable 'third person' perspective. We discussed change and innovation with them.[197]Taking the population of 67 business and caste associations and major trade unions last studied in 1997in this town (Basile and Harriss-White, 2000), we had resources to interview a randomly selected 40% of the presidents, along with a smaller number of office bearers of salaried workers unions – totalling 34.[198]

We had with us a note in Tamil and English explaining our familiarity with the past of the town, the project's background and our exploratory purposes and seeking verbal consent. We also had a template questionnaire (Appendix 1) which was learned by heart and never shown to respondents. In none of the interviews was the full set of questions completed- an expected and routine feature of this kind of fieldwork. Establishing rapport with busy businessmen requires allowing them to lead the encounter while the researcher attempts to structure it. The 'incomplete' method generates a data base like an un-finishable jigsaw puzzle which requires much imputation afterwards to use it for a regression-style analytical approach, but which more straightforwardly provides the elements for analytical profiling and narrative.

---

[197]Our questionnaire template is appended, though few interviews approached being complete.
[198]The population of business associations may have been expanded through the self-organisation of firms dealing in commodities new to the town since 1997.

The response was unexpectedly positive. Several of the interviews were prepared for in advance by the presidents concerned, who organised groups of up to 10 people to meet us (electricians, teachers, transport and sanitary workers). These were not 'focus groups' but generated very wide- rangingand informative conversations 'outside the box'. So the total number of people to whom we talked about innovation and change was in the region of 75. The fieldwork took a month with two researchers familiar with the region.

The narratives provide a series of snapshots and micro-histories. While they are not comprehensive, they proved much richer than anticipated (and too many to write up as case studies). This very richness has generated a problem for analysis, since a book-length treatment– the method of '*Jugaad Innovation'* for instance - is impracticable Instances of novelty and innovation have been rearranged and listed by *type* and *themes*.[199]We then did a content analysis to establish an account which stresses relations, institutions and processes, rather than quantitative generalisations, - leading to conclusions which engage with the ideas that provoked the research questions in the first place. We also absorb quotations into the narrative as illustrative of the claims and comments that men (and some women) in Arni make as they struggle to make sense of their contemporary conditions.

Does the informal economy innovate? If so, what kinds of innovations emerge from non-formal institutions?

PART TWO:

4. THE TOWN

'Arni is not a poor town'. 'Arni's economy is in good shape.' (President of Arni's Chamber of Commerce, June, 2012)

Though we have argued that Arni is a useful site, it is a particular settlement with its own distinctive history.

THE SPATIAL ARRANGEMENT OF THE ECONOMY –Economic power in Arnihas been reconfigured and relocated a number of times since Independence. Then, the heart of the bazaar was located in what is now an impassably narrow, pigand rat-infested side street, just wide enough for a single van. The weekly market site near the old centre no longer exists, having been transformed into a bus-stand. Its former regional role in the marketing of cattle has also disappeared with the replacement of animal traction by fossil fuel (Gathorne-Hardy, 2013). The pre-Independence site of the town is still the heart of the congested informal business economy. To the west, the by-pass to this throbbing heart, incongruously named Gandhi Market Road where statues of the Mahatma and Ambedkar vie for public space, there is now a post-1960s central business district, but in 2011the road

[199] See the Appendix at http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/resources-greenhouse-gases-technology-and-jobs-indias-informal-economy-case-rice

was reinforced and widened and a motorway style central barrier erected to prevent customers from crossing. The wide, earth verges, which used to accommodate lines of cycles, motorbikes and squatter-stalls, have been tarmacked over for traffic, making the mall very difficult to park on the now narrow metalled verges. Though it is often filthy, the town is not run-down. New residential quarters sprawl further west, while the relatively neat silk quarter, a product of the 50s and 60s, occupies the south of the town. There, dyeing, spinning, weaving and marketing compete for space with residential housing. Rice go-downs [warehouses] used to line a number of streets in the heart of town but are now located on the periphery where their owners profit from lower land values/rent. A new by-pass encircling the entire town is rapidly becoming a 'ring of steel' for fully automatic rice mills. North of the bypass, but umbilical connected to the town through roads and transport, residential demand and low-order service jobs, a huge tract of agricultural land has been turned into a private higher education cluster by a single investor – the former AIADMK MLA and MP.

ECONOMY- The town's economic base has been agricultural marketing, general retail, energy retail, and administration, together with a small industrial district for silk handloom weaving and a cluster of goldsmiths and pawn brokers. Now the bazaar economy of more or less independent small family businesses is being threatened by a new scale of sub-national and national capital, currently with branch firms and agents for sectors such as cement, dairy products, fuel-oil. For the future there is also the perceived threat of supermarkets.

The town's engagement with the global economy is at best indirect. It is linked through the export of silk products to S.E. Asia, brokered by wholesale firms in Chennai (some silk material now even reaches China, from where until recently the raw material was imported);the export of fodder from rice mill bye-products (via Chennai to Europe);and the import of clothing and laminated wooden computer-furniture. Arni is being globalised by pre-emptive responses to threats, rumours and images, rather than by the active intervention of global supply chains. The latter are sited nearby. Every day vehicles from Nokia and other factories on the Chennai-Bangalore corridor to the north east and from the leather export factories around Vellore to the north west scoop upa (semi)educated labour force from the town and its hinterland- enabling it to commute quite long distances for work.

POLITICS- After the North Arcot District was split in two in 1990, Arnibecameeven more remote from the new (Tiruvannamalai)district HQ than it had been from Vellore before. Its positioning then disadvantaged it in post 1990 district politics. Before 1990 the ruling party MLA in Cheyyar to the east had exercisedsuch a powerful patronage(courts, colleges etc) on behalf of that much smaller town that Arniwas politically emasculated. Meanwhile Arni's own MLA accumulated land for private purposes. It is reportedlocally that outrage and shame at the national 2G scam which broke in 2011-12, implicating Tamil Nadu's then ruling political elite, propelled Arni voters further into the oppositional wilderness through their support for the minor DMDK party of actor Vijay Kant. '*Now*', said a cynic in 2012*'Arni is better taxed but there is no quid pro quo'*.Cutting tax evasion is one way the state keeps an eye on the informal economy.

5. FORMS OF 21st CENTURY INNOVATION IN ARNI'S INFORMAL ECONOMY

There is no scholarly consensus over the typology of innovation. In the separate appendix[200]we have summarised the innovations described by our respondents. Here our analytical narrative focuses on examples which we judge most richly illustrate the political economy of innovation in the informal economy.

SCHUMPETERIAN INVENTION –

Three examples are captured in the field survey (under-specification while 'maintaining safety' in reinforced concrete; site design in rice mills; and phase change by electricians, which is explored here).From only 85 in 2000, the town's electrician work force has grown to about 730,320 of whom are registered; only 20 of these have any formal qualification, some of the rest having inherited licences from their relatives. The association has started to issue certificates based on experience. Most electricians are self-styled as 'under-educated' and low-caste village men who learn as a 'hand' on the job while they work for self-employed seniors, all of whom are keen to experiment. Being an electrician is a physically dangerous occupation and the association for registered electricians has a strong esprit de corps. 'The work we do is not illegal but it is informal' explained the president of Arni's electricians' sangam.' Vague about the date of the invention, but faced with a chronic inadequate and unreliable supply of electrical power for irrigation pump-sets, and a constant demand for repairs to breakdowns, Arni's electricians have succeeded in modifying 3 phase technology for 2 phase power supply.[201]Thisenables pump-setsto ride oscillations in power rather than break down.[202]

This innovation involves adapting a condenser (a device to store energy and to release it in spurts) by switching fuses. The TN Electricity Board standard for capacitators is high but local power consumers use poor-quality sub-standard models so the 3-2 switch aids efficiency. In 2012 it cost Rs 600-1000 to purchase and install, and is reckoned to last 2-5 years. Electricians continue to work on new ways of compensating for irregular power through battery inverters (coping with a sudden total power cut, or one phase being down), voltage stabilisation, and what is known as power factor correction.

200http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/resources-greenhouse-gases-technology-and-jobs-indias-informal-economy-case-rice

201Three phase electricity comes in three separate streams (for which three separate wires are needed) designed to oscillate in sequence to generate power.

202 This is not to argue that this invention does not exist elsewhere but the Arni electricians do not know of a parallel invention. See Shah and Verma 2008 Co-management of electricity and groundwater EPW for a similar case in Gujarat.

There is some dispute about the inventor (‘was it Anandan or Annamalai’?) - but as invention yields no innovation rents, *individual entrepreneurship is not as important as the invention*. Electricians describe themselves as ‘open’ and constantly learning and passing on knowledge. They experiment on the job. (For an example at one extreme a bottled cow dung paste to help motors start with two-phase power; and at the other an exploration of borders between electrical and electronics: using electronics to operate small power generators by remote control.)The risk of on-site experiments is explained to the ‘owner’on whose equipment the work takes place. ‘If experiments fail, we repair the failure’ said an unregistered electrician.

It was independently corroborated that the Arni invention has been formally scaled-up and developed with an automatic switch application that is being mass-produced by a Bangalore engineering firm – ‘after consulting’ Arni electricians. Not to be outdone, the electricians are adapting the mass product further.

In sum: a growth in numbers together with increasing in formalisation(lack of registration) both co-exist in this case with informal formalisation (certification). The state’s own inability to enforce standards in supplies, in its own utilities, or in consumers’ appliances, creates economic problems that have generated entrepreneurial responses. Property rights are irrelevant to the local development and diffusion stage, but scaling up has been achieved through free transfer and private appropriation by a company with access to finance and marketing. A combination of the trade association and customers’ appliances is the informal equivalent of the research lab, and a continual interaction between formal firm and informal labour enables diffusion (albeit with large difference between the two in the returns to work).

ADAPTIVE INNOVATION

Four cases are recorded in Appendix 2.Tucked away on an upper floor of a poorly constructed building in a narrow alley is a ‘computer centre’ established in 2010in which innovations have been cleverly adapted to the local economy and society. The ‘centre’ – a room with a balcony – is collectively owned in a complex way by 5 young graduates, two of whom manage the Arni centre for the other micro-investors. They work part-time there and part time in salaried work in another town at some distance, since otherwise it would not break even. Its stated objective is ‘software training’. A three-month course in the rudiments of computer-aided design (CAD) and 3-D design is the basis for which certificates are issued from the ‘centre’. The clientele are village-based and too poor to pay the Rs 3,000 fee as a lump-sum. So the introduction of instalment payment has increased the centre’s social reach. And there is a social benefit: through this training, ‘customers’ schooled in Tamil are forced to acquire ‘screen’ street wisdom in English.

This is a novel adaptive organisational response to lack of adequate capital or adequate demand in which formal educational skills are being diffused to the informal Tamil-language economy in return for an informal formalisation through certification.

In the ring of 40 licensed automated rice mills[203]which started to hug the bypass in 2010, many adaptive innovations have taken place- over and above site design by local freelance engineers.New parboiling processes without stench create a new type of rice that islightly parboiled for middle class consumers. A new post-harvest process has transformed a commodity – rice - into a new category of 'processed food'. A quantum leap in capacity(each mill processing as much as the entire town processed annually in the early 1980s) has required aquantum leap in long-distance year-wise scoping of raw material which has in turn segmented the local paddy market. The new mega oligopolists source most of their supplies from outside the region, while the smaller and older Modern Rice Mills tend to source locally.

These automatic rice mills are formally licensed but otherwise unregulated. Despite their scale, they are not necessarily a revolutionary and ruptural innovation since it is not yet clear whether they reduce costs of production. The branding of 'new' types of process may yet create consumer demand for a costlier product and vindicate automation. The'ring of steel'drives differentiating exchange relations in the local rice economy but the possibility that many independent individual decisions may result in collective over-capacity cannot be ruled out.

ADOPTION

Adoption is by far the commonest route to innovation. It is what local people understand as innovation, and the rest of the discussion of field material is devoted to the derivative spread of technologies, products and practices developed elsewhere. This is nothing new: the Green Revolution epitomised development in the form of continuous innovation-adoption and creative destruction.[204] In the non-agricultural economy, formerly un-commodified or semi-craft commodities or practices have continuously disappeared, to be replaced by new mass-produced commodities(crushed sea shells by paints / turmeric by cosmetics / dhobi services by dry cleaning/ the barber by sound services (for barbers are musicians too) / open defecation - to some extent - by sanitary-ware). On a micro scale this process has combined capital bias with caste continuity resulting in economic differentiation within castes. But what our 2012 field evidence recorded is happening at a revolutionary scale, at a pace and with a scope never before encountered.

[203]Rs 3-4crore each - £750k-£1m
[204] Harriss, 1971

THE ADOPTION OF NEW PROCESS TECHNOLOGY

We were given six examples. One Arni tailor pioneered electrically-powered sewing machines from China (through Chennai) at 2/3 the cost of Indian ‘power’ machines but with ambivalent outcomes. Positive: the tailor not only increased the competitive productivity of his own firm but established a new agency and many machines were sold initially. Negative: despite productivity advantages, due to the erratic and fluctuating electricity supply power, machines are being abandoned in a technological reversion to manual sewing machines.

This case emphasises the importance of infrastructure for competition through process innovation in the informal economy. Infrastructure is also found to be constraininginnovation through the commodification of processes – for instance in the case of deep freezer–cold chains for industrially processed milk products.

THE ADOPTION OF NEW PRODUCTS

We discuss three from a large set of examples here. The first is the transformation of the nature, quality and symbolic meaning of basic food (exemplified by the very rapid rise in high quality parboiled rice marketed, not only to the metropolis but also locally, for nutritional and health benefits). Whereas high quality rice was sold raw in the past for the highest status clientele, by 2012 only 2% of all rice was estimated to be un-parboiled. A similar example is new sources of cooking oil generally endorsed and specifically prescribed by medical doctors: e.g. sunflower oil ‘for cholesterol’, while new palmolene oil is being sold to informal petty street vendors for ‘healthy’ deep frying of snack foods. It is left to individual reputation, rather than state inspection, to assure the quality and healthy properties of these Tamil ‘fast foods’. *The long-standing association between properties of food and health (hot and cold, pure and impure, vegetarian and non-veg) has long been being replaced by modern medical reasoning in which science is yoked to advertising. And now this is pervading the informal food economy of Arni.*

A second example of new products is alcohol. From 10 outlets in 2000 to over 100 in 2012. Sales are formally heavily ‘regulated’ but in practice the state fails to prevent large scale dilution, or black market sales of alcohol hoarded from weekdays for out of hours sales on closing day. Among spirits, arrack has disappeared, substituted for by brandy, whisky and rum in ‘Bottom of the Pyramid’ bottles of 150ml.

Third, but by far the most important, is the *banking revolution.* After an invasion of both nationalised and private banks and ATMs unleashed between 2007 and 2009,[205]transactions that used to be personalised and reimbursed with asymmetrical lags – which for cehigher working capital

[205] After the retreat of rural banking during early liberalisation

requirements on the weaker party [206] -have been very rapidly replaced since 2010by almost instantaneous transactions using 'NEFT'(the National Electronic Fund Transfer)technology. NEFT vastly reduces transactions costs, and depersonalises market exchange. It combines with the replacement of family labour by informal wage workers (reported later – which destroys trust relationships between owners and consumers) to *destroy sales on credit*. A few shops selling lower quality equipment to a poorer clientele continue to attract custom with credit and instalment-repayment.

Private and public banking technology requires licensing to create accounts and title deeds to access loans. It is a powerful incentive for a formalisation confined to these eligibility criteria. Butit is inevitably accompanied by further informalisation. Informal innovation using bank loans may be benign (take-away food from 'meals hotels') but not necessarily so(adulteration). Formal innovation may destroy informal commodity economy (the disappearance of toddy and arrack production).

THE CREATION OF NEW MARKETS

We were given many examples.[207]*Handloom silk and the re-branding of the town*: Threatened with extinction by power loom competition, the local handloom industry has reorganised itself spatially and has merged brands. Arnisarees have been rebranded as 'Made in Kancheepuram'. The cost of production of these 'Kancheesarees' is much lower when outsourced to Arni.[208] In turn, Arni is outsourcing its inferior brand to Salem. The outcome is a huge local revival in informal craft silk production, the only limit to firm size being the supply of skilled supervisors of artisan production. The quality of Arni's production has improved. Returns to weaving have increased. From 2007 to 2012, the industry increased by 50% to 300 firms and its structure concentrated. It is dominated by an oligopoly of 10 big firms, making ever closer links with Chennai-based exporters. A new buyer-governed supply chain is emerging in which export markets in Europe, S.E.Asia and the USA drive design a longside more supplier-governed production for domestic demand at weddings and festivals (such as Deepawali and Pongal).

Even in the informal economy of weaving, the manufacture of image is vital to marketing and so to production. In this case relabeling has had a significant impact on process, product and sources of innovation.

---

[206]BHW Credit, finance and contractual synchrony in a South Indian Market Town' in (eds) I Guerin, S. Morvant and M. Villareal, Microfinance, debt and over indebtedness. Juggling with money.(OUP New Delhi)

207 See the appendix at http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/resources-greenhouse-gases-technology-and-jobs-indias-informal-economy-case-rice

208Arni weavers can make Rs 2 lakh sarees in a fortnight (for which they might earn Rs 25k). (A lakh is 100,000). The conditions of Arni's silk labour market which enable weavers to be paid less need further investigation.

NEW SITES

In a forthcoming paper Guerin argues that change in local economies is driven by the specific social configurations of sites, and that small towns are increasingly attractive sites for investment due to improvements in the quality of the labour force, which arein turn the result of education and the relative quality of the public health environment.[209] From our field research we have reason to doubt that education attracts inward investment to Arni, so much as outward migration, and the public health environment is increasingly hazardous, but within the town site definitely matters. Lefebvre reminds us that site is a socially constructed aspect of production and reproduction relations, mapped onto space.[210]What is innovative about site in this small town? First, the 21st century has seen the consolidation of a new bourgeois residential quarter at one remove from the congested centre, a western suburb resembling that of TV advertisements - spacious and well laid-out, but built by unregistered masons and builders with informal quality inspection. In response, the high-rent central town is being demolished plot by plot, with multi-storeyed cement houses and mini-malls replacing the single storey tiled, courtyard houses, again built by informally qualified workers. And over and above the new residential lay-out and the new sites of production around the ring road and in the regulated market new forms of regulated consumption practice by pass the local town altogether. Local elites use the district HQ, Tiruvannamalai, and Chennai for higher-order consumer durables and leisure activity.

Wealth, spatial reach and the formally regulated economy appear to converge. In fact they all rest on infrastructure and construction industries based heavily on informal labour and informal relations of raw material supply.

NEW WAYS OF KNOWING

In the 21st century, the means of knowledge aboutinnovation in products and processes has developed from word of mouth (pump-sets), cards and pamphlets (groceries) to i) *TV, Fairs, Internet* - about supply and demand as far away as China (wooden furniture, ready-made clothes, silk); and ii)*Advertisements*- with their dual roles of information and ensnaring loyalty have been newly localised in many ways. For one example, mill brands for rice: whereas 10 years ago the town itself was used to brand rice (e.g. Arni Airplane Rice), now a single mill may use three separate own-brands for different social destinations. In another case, groceries, branding is reproduced at micro level. Using family labour at weekends, owners have started to package dry food in plastic, complete with improvised expiry dates. Branded plastic shopping bags are also the mandatory replacement for

209 Guerin I forthcoming Labour in Contemporary South India in (eds) Harriss-White and Heyer Indian Capitalism in Development,Routledge
210Lefebvre, H. (1991) The Production of Space, Oxford:Blackwell

durable cloth bags. In a third example, tailored clothing, brands are now advertised on the outside of clothes rather than inside as formerly. They are also not optional. Arni is part of the logo-turn: the medium is the message.

In some sectors incentives for informal innovation have even been introduced: the Tailors Association president has a fund for incentives and regular prizes are offered for best new practices developed in the town or imported from outside.

Visions of change in the media and threats of change in formal legal regulation trigger imitative informal innovation.

NEW EXCHANGE RELATIONS

The role of the banking sector's payment revolution, described above, has been of paramount importance in the destruction of personalised exchange, with widespread ramifications. One ramification is its role (amid the proliferation of new informal financial institutions (Polzin 2007, forthcoming)) in the emergence of the Regulated Market site for grain transactions, after decades of marketed surplus avoiding it due to production debts that were repaid in kind at sites specified by the trader-lender. The first transaction between producer and trader is now formalised though the open auction of paddy. A new registered and organised labour force works there too. Informal aggregators – lending to, and bulking up the small surpluses of marginal farmers – have found niches there in which they pass themselves off as primary producers. A second ramification of new exchange possibilities is the facilitating of pan-Indian supplies in groceries and foods, and international flows in textiles – all brokered through known intermediaries but from unknown suppliers, and using NEFT bank transfers. The removal of trade restriction on bank loans has permitted new scales of finance for working capital: e.g.'a crore in a store'[211] for rice mills, some of which are insuring their stocks for the first time. But the commonest new element in the bazaar is new models of price formation: out with haggling (for old irrigation ironware, for example); in with fixed prices associated with branding and packaging, even for activities not regulated by the state (unregulated new hardware and interior decoration, state-regulated agrochemicals and pharmaceuticals).

New technology and an expanded role for banking enable a new scale of formally regulated exchange relations.But these leave niches for informal business.[212]

[211] A crore is 10,000,000
212 Theorised by Michel Crozier

ADOPTIVE INNOVATION IN LABOUR PROCESSES

In her study of Arni's silk industry, Camilla Roman (2008) discovered the capacity of the skilled but informal labour force to be innovative. She also stressed the continuity of the workforce's information base, in which their small-scale but disruptive innovations are nurtured. In addition, she traced how innovation has consequences *for* the labour force. Here we order our discussion of innovation by distinguishing these different theatres of agency and innovation.

AGENCY AND INNOVATION BY LABOUR

Notable 21st century changesin workforce agency involves two-way flows of labour (lagging by at least a decade the caste–stratified two-way flows of capital of the 1990s).[213]*In-migrating* labour from Orissa finds '6-month' niches in the labour forces of rice mills and meals hotels (the latter providing language training for migrants while they work under constant supervision).[214]Meanwhile *educated labour out-migrates*to the Chennai-Bangalore corridor('There is more to life than Arni') while uneducated labour flocks in gangs to the brick kilns and construction sites of the metropoles. Elite *children* are forced to migrate long distances to be incarcerated in private English language boarding schools.[215] The local workforce has also been reconfigured by activity and site with the entry of *women*. There is a massive increase in outsourcing and home working in Arni, with women becoming specialist tailors for women's clothes,for instance. The genders are integrated into the market, then subject to a change in industrial structure and then *segregated*.[216]

A second aspect of the agency of Arni's informal labour force –its innovation in the labour process -and the response of its employers is *change in apprenticeships* and *increased 'entrepreneurial hurry'*. For tailors, the training is long- boys start with the sewing of buttons and the stitching of holes and progress by hand and machine over 3 years. Of late the balance between the demand for and supply of apprentices has been disturbed by the existence of alternatives for better-educated boys and men, resulting in. an acute shortage of male tailoring labour. Market incentives have resulted in incomplete apprenticeships becoming the norm – with the result that informal tailors are constantly threatened with undercutting from apprentices who abscond and set up on their own. Supply no longer matches demand and the outcomes have been dramatic. First a slowing of the velocity of production (from 2 hour shirts ('made while you visit the cinema') in 2005 to 20 days in 2012).Second, strong incentives

213 BHW and Janakarajan 2004 Rural India facing the 21st Century Anthem

214In 2012 there were over 100 in Arni. Recruited through contractors in Madurai, Chennai and Coimbatore. The migrant labour force is housed by employers without other perqs or rights and employed for 6 month stints i.e. two shifts a year. Wages are paid directly to the migrant who deals with contractor. 'Management pays' if labour is sick. Though migrants are normally thought to be paid less, wages to migrants are higher than to local workers because migrants are on call 24/7/30.

215In towns not dissimilar to Arni such as Erode, Salem, Tiruchangode, Uthangarai, Namakkal where private schools have been extensively advertised on TV.

216Cf Sneha Krishnan D Phil

are accidentally created for the expansion of ready-made clothing. Third, the entry of women brings a gender differentiation which intensifies with the segmentation of work. Women emerge from their homes to acquire new kinds of learning, not through apprenticeships but in informal training institutes. Several of these have been founded recently in Arni: one train as many as 60 women at a time. Female tailors then lobby, through an un-registered union, for ‘certificates’ from the business association. Similar kinds of repercussion or ‘spill-over effect’ have been reported for electricians and construction workers. Long-employed in the public domains of the local state and in teaching, the entry of educated girls and women [217]into the local commercial workforce and market-place is an ambivalent process because the available local work is not necessarily commensurate with their qualifications (e.g. general retail sales, cool drinks, ready-mades, sweets and bakery work at Rs 150/day).

The unprecedentedly massive exercise of agency on the part of semi-skilled and skilled labour has produced innovation in the informal labour process. Employers have had to support this via certification and further innovation (language training), as well as via increased surveillance (of migrant labour).

Camilla Roman (2008) has reported innovation, as opposed to agency,*by labour r*in craft weaving, especially improvements in design. She sees it resulting from the continuity of technological knowledge, through in formal on-the-job training, lived experience and experimentation. Developmental adaptations to looms are also said to be driven by the desire for reduced physical effort and lower physical risks (though these are often traded off against each other), and the existence nearby of related professional skills/ complementary knowledge (such as computer aided design (CAD).

It is as much by the innovative behaviour of the craft-producing work-force as by the branding entrepreneurship of employers that the threat to the industrial district for handloom weaving (at its peak involving thousands of looms) has been turned into a stimulus.

AGENCY AND INNOVATION BY EMPLOYERS FOR LABOUR

Employers routinely respond in locally innovative ways to demand – pulls (socially constructed through investments in information and through advertising). In their adoptive/ innovative responses, many factors play roles: the existence nearby of technology and complementary technology (silk), networks of contacts with shared repertoires of understanding (through commerce and through the business associations), loyalty in the labour force (lack of which slows up construction projects), the availability of working capital and investment loans (resulting from the banking revolution), and

217Cf Gooptu 2009 and CWM research in our project – Mani, Mody and Sukumar 2013.

returns which compensate for un-revolutionary increased costs of production for transformed and processed products (food).[218]

Changes in the class-structured knowledge base for innovation. The social origins and competences of the local capitalist class are changing. Rice mill innovation no longer requires a background in agriculture, as it did in earlier decades, but instead, in one example, has been based on a background in engineering, steel (metal rods retail) and electricals. As observed for electricians at the start, collegiality is more common than protective secrecy among innovators. Operators of FAMRMs[219] in Karnataka allow Arni'slocal engineers to view their sites and machinery – and even train Arni'sskilled labour.

At the demand of labour: Local business associations have been under pressure from workers informally to *formalise apprenticeships*. The electricians, for instance, have developed a new and informal hierarchy of certificates after various lengths of experience and some exams. This makes it possible for electricians to find work on grounds other than personal recommendation. A similar system of qualification as a precursor to self-employment and outmigration is found in the construction industry. Arni is an informal training ground but as one engineer told us 'It means the construction workforce is constantly learning and constantly changing'.

The division of low-skilled labour is becoming increasingly specialised.' Jobs are classified' said a builder. In the construction industry, the following tasks are recognised as needing distinctive skills: foundation labour; masonry; concrete labour; centring labour; steel fabrication labour; carpentry; transport; plumbing. *Contradictory processes of wage work are developing inside the town.* On the one hand the urban economy is undergoing an explosion of self-employment using the skills of the contemporary economy[220], but on the other the biggest companies (engineering, mills,etc) are gradually integrating formerly self-employed workers into their paid wage-labour force.

*Labour Displacement:*Changes in post-harvest processing and rice mill automationgenerate massive labour displacement and masculinisation – employers seems to have an active dislike of low-caste unskilled and female labour. Before full automation a mill with the capacity of a FAMRM[221] would employ 50 women and 30 men[222]. With full automation, there are just 5 women and 12 men.

Innovation in the labour process by employers of labour often involves further scales of commodification of the technologies and processes of production. For this level of sophistication, a

218Roman (2008), for silk also noted that the capacity to introduce discontinuities depended upon ties of kinship, of fictive kinship, of spatiality, of commensality, shared social functions, and the regulative experience of business associations.

219 Fully automatic modern rice mills

220E.g. electricians from 85 in2000 to 730 in 2012.

221Fully automatic modern rice mill

222 While women would work on the sun-drying yard , half the men would work in management and engineering ('staff') while half casual for unloading and loading and parboiling.

social background unconnected with agriculture or the local rural economy is often necessary. Process commodification creates new elements in the structure of prices. New levels of complexity in the labour market involve contradictory as well as complementary social processes: specialisation, the vertical integration of labour skills, self-employment and labour displacement. Local employers also concede demands for the 'informal formalisation' of labour force skills which they know will lead to reduced dependence of workers on them, the depersonalisation of market transactions, and in the case of men, migration out of Arni.

CHANGES IN THE ORGANISATION OF FAMILY BUSINESSES

'Men don't want to work for others'. 'Self-employment is an aspirational state' (President of the Tailors)

Under the Indian constitution the private sphere, the family, is regulated by customary law derived from a plurality of religions. It is then contrasted with the relative secularity of the state-regulated public sphere. But in self-employment and in the family firm the private meets the public. The customarily regulated family is the building block of the economy. Informality is hard-wired into it.

In Arni there has been a massive expansion of small firms which are run by under-educated self-employed people. They are associated with many of the process and product innovations described above e.g. the electricians who have grown from 85 in 2000 to 730 in 2012, or pumpset retail and repair mechanics who have increased from 10 shops to70. The new skills needed for such work (e.g. boring for tube-wells)are 'learned by doing'. Throughout India this expansion of modern artisanal activity is an uncelebrated feature of liberalisation.[223]

At the same time firms undergo specialisation and complexification, Even tailoring has reorganised itself to handle demand, througha gendered '*vertical integration'* on a micro scale, with separate 'firms' specialising in repairing cutting, sewing and pressing.

Family business is being re-organised in a ruptural change: In the central 'bazaar' (that hosted the dominant forms of market trade and jobs in the modern economy of the 1970s)the mass exit of the educated younger generation to salaried jobs in nearby IT, electronics and auto industries is causing a decline in family labour. This is compensated for by an increase in wage labour. 'Only scions with ' business level education' (low) stay in the bazaar economy - it's hard work – long hours – competition – no holidays - with the further problems of apprenticeships' a pump-set dealer told us. The entry of wage labour into tiny firms rein forces the shift in the 'crafts and craftiness' of the bazaar in which trust-based haggling over price, credit and debt is replaced by norms.

STASIS AND DESTRUCTION WITHIN THE FLUX IN LIVELIHOODS

[223]Bhw 2012 Capitalism and the Common Man *Agrarian South*

In this account of innovation and change, the case of dalits is striking in contrast. We interviewed the representatives of marketplace porters, transport workers, fruit and vegetable sellers and sanitary work, activities dominated by dalits. The contrast between their current work conditions and their aspirations for their children is also very marked.

The erosion of caste exclusivityworks perversely for sanitary workers, permitting a *new downwardsstatus mobility*, while reducing work opportunities for dalits. Between 6 to 8 non SCs have entered Arni's state controlled sanitary workforcewho clean streets, drains and latrines. They are all socially disadvantaged: Naidus and Mudaliars without anyeducation,or'people in cross caste marriages' (a stigmatised novelty),or the widow of a low level government employee given work on compassionate grounds. Here and elsewhere the deliberate lack of change is a technique of labour force control, actively preventing emancipation in the labour force.

Low caste and dalit market-place loaders are controlled differently, having had no wage re-negotiation for five years despite inflation; their wage 'after liquor' is equal to that of agricultural labour. Sources of demand for their work have shifted location: bulk lorries bypass the centre of town, and factories on the periphery develop their own loading labour force. They have been undercut and their territory informally encroached upon by ethnically networked casual labour from Sri Lankan refugees whose desperation doubles the supply of loaders. As a result, work and rates and gang sizes are shrinking and the organisation of labour is on the defensive. Divided by team and village of origin, the Loaders' Union is weak.

Extinction: The negative experience of complete destruction of labour practices was difficult to elicit from Association presidents. *Child labour* has been reported to be on the increase in some parts of India,[224] but the opposite is widely reported to hold for Arni. The*Rotary Societ y*presidentreported 'no child labour'. The t*eachers* spoke of 'a few truants in the bazaar', unknown to their parents, as well as of child migrants who have gone from Arnito 'Salem and Bihar' for brick kiln and construction work. Arni's tailors now have a strict rule not to take child labour in the interests of children's education (a practice also noted for silk labour by Arasi (forthcoming). Education is also responsible for a wave of technological regression not requiring child labour in loom work). 'Education is atrophying the supply of labour' said a Silk Merchant.

CREATIVE DESTRUCTION AND JOBLESS GROWTH?

[224] Corbridge et al forthcoming (British Academy paper)

For at least the first decade of the 21st century, India's liberalisation has been associated with jobless growth, a general feature of registered formal economy. Some analysts see this seeming paradox of growth as being resolved by the recorded expansion of livelihoods in the informal economy. [225] But the town of Arni is generating *jobless growth in the informal economy*.

Between the contradictory forces of proliferation of new forms of petty production, versus labour displacement, versus the exit of family labour, versus the integration of general wage labour in family firms and specialist wage labour in bigger firms, the net balance is an acute labour shortage at all skill levels and in all sectors of the informal economy. We have seen that this drives three kinds of change in the labour process: i) mechanisation and labour displacement (e.g. rice mills); ii) feminisation in a new increase in home-working e.g. tailors and silk; iii) in-migration from North India (e.g. the hotel/catering industry).

What has enabled the 21st century exodus of family labour?

6. INNOVATION IN EDUCATION

In reviewing macro-economic educational endowments and total factor productivity, the development economist Frances Stewart found that education does not so much affect productivity directly through the labour force. Rather productivity was affected by education indirectly through improvements in capabilities to absorb technology, particularly in access to infrastructure, finance and skilled work - and in the education needed for the two-way process of influence between commercial firms and state regulative policy. (Heyer, Fitzgerald and Thorp, 2012, p6).

In the 21st century, education in Arni follows the pattern of Stewart's reasoning, being significant not so much for innovation per se as for the dynamo of change it releases within the town. The key to upward mobility is not seen as being informal innovation. *Upward mobility requires exi*t, and education and competence in English are the key credentials for upward mobility and several kinds of exit. First, from agriculture. Spurred by water scarcities, adverse price structures and labour scarcity (the impact of NREGA),the flight from agriculture fuels a rush of land sales to non-local real estate speculators and mineral water companies. Second,from Arni itself. Spurred by the desire to escape the parochialism and patriarchal authority relations of the family firm, people embark on daily commuting as well as seasonal and permanent migration.

'Arni is becoming an education hub'.'Education is using land to take the place of land'.'The knowledge economy is an extractive industry.' 'The state encourages education but has effectively wrecked it'[226]

[225] A Sinha 2007 in BHW and Sinha Trade Liberalisation and India's Informal Economy OUP
[226]2012 interview with a group of state high school teachers.

In the 21st centurya massive college education cluster has appeared on a tract of dry-land to the north of town, while25 pre-school nurseries , and about 100 new private English-medium schools have been establishedin the Arniregion.[227]The town has transformed itself, in an unprecedented way and at great speed,into an education hub. This is a new and non-trivial sector in the local economy. Everyone we interviewed - poor and rich, female and male, dalit and forward caste - *had education as their central concern* and was aware of the rapid changes. More a compulsion than a demand, this transformation in social aspirations took place at a time when the public education system in Tamil was embroiled in a politics of non-expansion. Whether deliberately intended to incentivise private education or not, this has reinforced local pressure for alternative private English schooling.

Private schools (‘mostly big businessmen’s playthings’ a teacher explained) are formally registered, regulated and state-inspected. But this process is flawed and vulnerable to informal practices such as low and individualised pay, capitation fees (bribes for entry), unregulated teaching standards, even the corruption of examinations. The underfunded state system acts as a social safety net when it receives drop-outs from the private system.

But there is another aspect to informality in education.

For those children educated in Tamil in the state system, and for some in private school sin Arni, there is also a large and growing informal economy of private tuition. Whereas in 2005-, there were 50-60 private tuition centres, by 2012 there were well over 100. These were mostly manned by fresh graduates, often women or retired teachers, with classes ranging from 15 to 20 at the low end, to 200 at the extreme high end. Regular state teachers are not allowed to do this (though a few break the rules[228]).Competition between these tuition centres – effectively a parallel informal education system - is fierce, with more or less misleading advertisements of success crowding the advertising hoardings in the town centre. Popular subjects are the gateways to IT and engineering – 90% of tuition centres cover physics, chemistry and maths, taught in Tamil. Only 20-30% of pupils take English which, though it is sought-after as a medium, is not taken as a subject because the discipline of English is given a low weighting in the aggregate marks.

In this way, the state government dis-incentivises the informal acquisition of the language of the national market, English. For the future labour force, this informal private tuition involves a gruelling 2-3 hours of extra study after a long day’slearning (after 9.30 -4.30 at school and 2 hours of homework).[229]

[227] Not to mention the displacement of demand through long distance migration to private boarding schools.
[228]Unregulated fees range from Rs 2k per subject to Rs 8k, averaging Rs 6k, for teaching the school syllabus, testing and correcting over the 8 month January to August semester.
[229] It is also a way of obtaining after school child care (Hodges, PersComm, 20013)

Speaking to public sector teachers about innovation unleashed a torrent of examples, all drawn from the state system From smaller class sizes through new curricula and the prohibition of physical punishment to the introduction of Activity Based Learning, it seems that the practice of teaching is so receptive to innovation that state education most resembles a model innovation system. At the same time party politics has swung between a freeze on teacher recruitment (DMK) and the failure to allocate recruited teachers to positions (ADMK), resulting in dysfunctional class sizes, wrecking the capacity of the public system to respond to the legal requirement of 100% enrolment and forcing surplus teachers into the private and informal sectors.

We encountered one case of informal invention in education.[230]For children forced to drop out for weeks at a time due to parental sickness and/or the peaked compulsions of work, the PTAs have innovatively organised evening classes to help such children to catch up. AnNGO is also working with state schools in Arni to expand this initiative.

THE PARADOX OF FORMAL EDUCATION AND INNOVATION

Many inventors and adaptive innovators have high levels of education (e.g. the self-employed/capitalist architect –engineer; rice mill automaters), and new levels of skilled engineering labour are now employed to install and maintain more technologically sophisticated machinery. But we learned from representatives of both banks and petrol stations that education contains its own paradox. Higher education which can produce high competence and the ability to manage complex (remote control) systems and IT, is essential for a corporate career. But a complex state or private corporate organisation, requires a compliant passivity of its skilled and educated employees in which local innovation and experimentation is forbidden. *High educational qualifications are not by themselves indicative of a capacity to innovate.*

7. THE STATE AND INFORMAL INNOVATION

The state is normally assumed to be inefficient and un-entrepreneurial.[231] As with the case of education, so more generally, however, our discussions with the business association presidents, an Electricity Board director, the representative of Arni's lawyers, and the leader of the transport workers disclosed the existence of a constant stream of adoptive innovation. (These are listed in the separate Appendix).[232]Here we focus on tendencies in the more or less circumstantial evidence we gathered in 2012 that reveali) the ways in which formal state policy affects the informal economy, ii) how the

[230] Actually suggested in BHW with Camilla Roman 2003 On the Insecure lives of Tamil Nadu's Silk Weaving Families=*Frontline vol 20 no 24*
[231] References to economics texts in particular
[232]http://www.southasia.ox.ac.uk/resources-greenhouse-gases-technology-and-jobs-indias-informal-economy-case-rice

informalisation of the state affects the informal economy,[233]iii) how innovation takes place in and around the 'informalised state' and finally iv) the question of how the state regulates the informal economy – formally and informally.

1. *How formal state policy affects the informal economy.* First, it may indirectly protect the informal economy. For example, formal import controls have been imposed protecting Indian silk yarn,and the silk fabric industry dependent on it, from Chinese competition; similarly state subsidies and incentives to school-goers incentivise private informal tuition. Secondly it provides indispensible hard infrastructure (transport and communications) and soft infrastructure (schooling) for the informal economy. Third, it can destroy elements of the informal economy – as when road widening and tarmacking over the 'central business district' frontages removed the sites for dalit fruit and vegetable, flowers and street food selling. Fourth, it may place an economic safety net under it – with NREGA which in the Arni region provides 100 days of work during seasons of peak competition as well as during slack times. Fifth, it may passively tolerate the informal economy – as inside the Municipal; market. *While the state has policies* ***covering*** *the informal economy, it has no* ***coherent*** *development project for it.*

2.*How the informalisation of the state affects the informal economy*. When the state operates through informal practices or parallel institutions, then informal economic practices are governed by non-state-legitimised forms of authority. For example politicians may regulate the conduct of private schools or may prevent dalits from exercising rights to their municipal housing, even when they fulfil the eligibility conditions. '*What an irony that the municipality doesn't implement its own laws',* declared a sanitary worker unable to secure housing in retirement despite being eligible. The exercise of private status and private interests in selectively implemented state interventions has produced a large literature on the nexus of private and public economic power and the role of politics in reproducing intermediate classes.[234]But it also has effects on the conditions of reproduction of the informal labour force.

3. *How innovation takes place in and around the informalised state*. A case we encountered concerns the Public Works Department, which was reported to have not recruited engineers to permanent jobs since 1989. There is no alternative but for free-lance PWD engineers to build private businesses to do work that is routinely subcontracted by the state. In and around Arni some 20 such businesses, heavily dependent on state patronage, are not regulated or inspected. Qualified engineers then compete for

[233]And vice versa – to be developed.In half-formulated, half-implemented administrative procedures (for example, in the acquisition of land, building occupation permits) multiple procedures are mandatory- only one or two of them are followed and the rest left open to informal interpretation. The constitution of jurisdictions is also informalised in such ways (Champaka, Pers. Comm. 2013)

[234] McCartney and Harriss-White 2000

contracts against the unqualified and unsupervised masons who carry out about a third of the construction work (state and private) in Arni.

4. *How the state regulates the informal economy – formally and informally*. The *formal* state regulation of the informal economy is *by neglect* of its own laws. The state regulates selectively.[235] 'Provided I pay taxes, the state doesn't bother with storage, procurement'. 'It leaves big rice mills and wholesalers alone.'(a miller – this is a significant change from the nexus of interests profiting privately from selective and partially implemented interventions in the late 20th century –no miller then would have been able to say that the stage left them alone) 'Market forces regulate the market now' (a lorry agent). There are rules for the spacing of irrigation wells to protect the water table, but these are honoured in the breach and the spacing of wells is still fixed by divining twigs and coconuts (a pump-set seller). 'There is less regulation than in the past' (an engineer). Less state regulation may become dysfunctional for quality standards which, despite the tendencies towards de-personalisation, will then be regulated by reputation alone. On the Food Control Inspectorate: 'There is one office for the district. They will arrive by bus and check the biggest shops next to the bus stand! They are often not educated people.' (a grocer). This neglect not only allows informal regulative practices to flourish, but also fuels informal practices that parody social protection. The ad hoc character and extreme unreliability of state welfare has long been a negative predisposing condition for collective action and/or individual savings to cover misfortune – there is no change in this. People continue to work till they are too infirm – there is neither an age of retirement nor a concept of retirement in the informal economy.

Whereas in the past what was neglected was the result of careful brokering by collective political pressure mediated through bribery by business associations[236], now the evidence points to a severe lack of state capacity and under-provision of many services (as in the example of refuse collection, below).

Turning to *informal* state regulation of the informal economy, we find that it is done by threat, pre-emption, interference and bribery. On threat, the laws designed to regulate big retail and FDI are already having a shadow impact in the informal economy, where a compressed process of imitation of a form of retailing that has not yet arrived is introducing much change in the retail food economy. Hitherto it has relied on a local culture of modernity involving deep social embedding (through loans,

[235] Despite the GIS/GPS surveillance culture of the TN government (Hodges, PersComm, 2013)
[236] Bribery is theorised as the privatisation of or creation of a market in public resources by officials (patrons) charging citizens (clients) (Krueger 1974, Wade 1984). In earlier field research, collective bribery was found to be initiated by business associations and powerful 'clients' to speed access to resources (licences, infrastructure), to waive obligations to the state (tax), to avoid disciplinary regulation (movement of goods, safety, labour rights etc) to delay or subvert the implementation of market regulation (packaging, transparent price formation, site, in a reversal of the orthodox theory's role of patron and client (White and Harriss-White, 1996). Clearly both balances of power between the state and capital are possible.

a personal clientele, leeway for negotiation (haggling) and variable quality) the changing nature of the purchases made by cash-strapped yet discriminating consumers. Pending the 'earthquake' – the arrival of big retail and supermarkets –the crowded sector of small grocers already faces competition via branding and TV advertisements, discounts and cross-pricing, and the deliberate creation of conditions conducive to impulse-buying. In anticipation of future regulation two grocery shops have already computerised their receipts, stock and accounts. The image consistent with examples on TV and cinema allows a modern impersonalised fixed-price marketing in which chicanery with ('900grams dressed up as a kg') is still possible.

On interference, it is police rather than check-post guards who now regulate freight, for example. The regulative principle has shifted from a concern with the nature of the load and its degree of over-weight to the state of repair of the vehicle. States of transgression which lorry men feel are often quite minor and arbitrary are (privately) fined.

Regulative deficits (which may be caused by deliberate capture, or by lack of staff or equipment (transport, computers)) are reinforced by the prevailing ideology of market efficiency to encourage the informal economy by neglect. Yet we have evidence that the state is capable of being innovative as well as efficient. Informal contriving to protect state practices from public scrutiny achieve long-run 'efficiency', at the expense of costly transparency. Collective responsibility for constant changes in state practices to propitiate informal interests is also an 'efficient' response for the officials involved.[237]

8. THE STATE AND NATURE

THE NON-ADOPTION OF INNOVATION- THECASE OF THE SOLID WASTE ECONOMY

All economic activity produces solid, liquid and gaseous waste. Our research examined waste water as an externality and the GHG implications of water lifting and use; we measured compost as an input, but we have not measured physical waste. It is important to record there markable *lack* of innovation in relation to waste when new, effective technologies exist.[238]

While residents are fastidious about waste in domestic space, in Arnit here is no public consciousness about waste outside. 'The town is sinking in garbage. No-one cares about clean streets' (sanitary worker). The size of the municipal sanitary labour force with its primitive trucks and equipment has remained unchanged over two decades in which solid and liquid waste has multiplied impressively (by a factor of five, some respondents thought). Sanitary workers' pay has been computerised but bank opening hours coincide with their shifts, which makes access very awkward for the dalit workers

[237] Champaka, Pers. Comm. 2013
[238] www.exnora.org

we interviewed to obtain cash to buy food, while the fact that they do have access is a symbolically polluting 'menace' to other customers. The sanitary labour force feels that nobody cares about them. The under-provision of municipal cleaning and refuse collection then incentivises a big sector of the informal economy: moonlighting; the hiring of private services within neighbourhoods; a roving circuit of tribal *irular* waste pickers; a thriving informal recycling business for metal, plastic, card and glass organised in Arnit hrough Chennai by Muslims; and every day a field day for pigs and rats.

NEW SCALES OF ENVIRONMENTAL PREDATION

Like everywhere else,the town is heavily and increasingly dependent on energy from fossil fuel. Competition to control energy is conducted outside the arena of the town. The number of petrol stations doubled to 12 between 2007 and 2012; demand for diesel and petrol tripled and continues to rise, currently being reckoned to average 300 tonnes per station per week. Fuel is not only used for lorries and cars (neither of which can negotiate the central maze of narrow alleys);in the region in and around Arni motorbike ownership is expanding at an expert-estimated rate of 1,000 per month, while demand for diesel power generators is rocketing to substitute for (and complement) the deteriorating electricity supply.

The bourgeois western suburb issaid to be mining the water table as unsustainably as if paddy were being cultivated there. The appetite of the fully automated rice mill paddy driers requires *wood* as well as husk for firing – up to 30-50 tonnes per month per rice mill. Some wood comes from casuarina farms in a radius of 50 km from the town but some is hacked from common land ('I know this is destructive'said an innovating miller). 'Wood cutting' is a further serious problem for the construction industry; for which sand is also mined illegally from the bed of the now permanently dry Palarriver. Over wide tracts of land, agricultural topsoil is also lifted to provide clay for bricks.

Much of this activity is not just informal but illegal. None of this depredation appears to be regulated in practice by the state.

9. THE SOCIAL STRUCTURE OF INFORMAL INNOVATION

Social institutions combine to form a structure which for new institutional economists is a constraint on (profit-maximising) activity. For old institutionalists it makes economic activity possible in the first place; for the 'social structure of accumulation' school it is a matrix stabilising capitalist accumulation and controlling conflict; for Marxist institutionalists it contains forms of economic authority which detract from class formation. All these approaches differ in respect of the institutions considered to be indispensible, some arguing that this is an empirical question, others using the circuits of production and re-production as a guide to what is most important[239], other using ideas of dominance and prominence, or the concept of pre-capitalist institutional 'outliers'. In the absence of anything resembling a formal innovation system in the informal economy, the questions at issue here are empirical ones: which institutions nurture informal innovation and which form obstacles? Do they form a structure? This tentative attempt to answer them from a pilot field projects naturally contestable. Here we tie the evidence from the case material into a higher order narrative.

Over and above the threats to, and transformations of, the family firm (working as self-employed,with or without other family members and wage workers),and the regulative activity of the state, both of which have been handled above , three other kinds of institution stand out for the frequency with which they were mentioned: education, banks and business associations (the latter is hardly surprising since we interviewed their presidents). All are formally registered but they affect informal innovation. It was also clear that informal institutions of identity and gender matter to agency and innovation and we will link the two kind of institution in discussing education here.

Institutions of education are diverse ecosystem involving state, registered private and informal private ownership (tuition centres, apprenticeships, learning by doing, absorbing media messages etc). A high level of formal education by itself does not predispose individuals towards innovation but it facilitates the evaluation of information (as in the media) and access to supportive institutions (like banks). 'Arni has increasingly educated people who read adverts, watch TV and are influenced by the media' said the Chair of the Chamber of Commerce. Education and/or competence in an informal knowledge base (e.g. weaving, electrical repair) provide the continuity that enables the adoption of new practices and other kinds of agency in which material technology and behavioural norms are transformed. Lack of these capabilities hampers innovative agency.

Education however is deeply embedded in institutions of identity and their intersection affects agency and innovation. While women are well represented among classes of workers enduring chronically oppressive conditions, and have entered the labour market as home-workers, no woman was mentioned as an entrepreneur. Educated girls and women aspire to salaried jobs, an educated groom and reduced dowries. Modestly educated dalits work in occupations not requiring their education - fruit and veg, sanitation and recycling, portering, 'rooftop work', blacksmithing, lorry driving and lately informal finance. Though one dalit is the administrator of Arni's municipal bureaucracy and another is a high-ranking teacher, the well-known role models for dalits are three illegal moneylenders

[239]E. O. Wright's 'predisposing factors' for innovative risk taking in worker managed firms for instance include credit markets (subsidised interest); stable income flows to labour; associational democratic governance; risk pooling; geographical anchors; and the known existence of technologies lowering diseconomies of small scale.

with large houses, compounds and swimming pools (an innovation in Arni) whose financial careers emerged from portering and fruit and vegetable selling and are owed to street wisdom rather than formal education.[240].Other Dalit aspirations for ‘exit’ are different from those mentioned by the ‘purer’ castes: the police, the army, chauffeuring. For the minorities, Muslims and Christians, new reservations, each at 3.5%, have been carved out in state employment. Muslim children are educated in Urdu until 6th standard, after which they go to government Tamil schools where they are reported ‘not always to perform well’. Muslim girls are also starting to obtain education but ‘do not transform it into work afterwards’ (a teacher).The lower status identity groups, in encountering social obstacles to the exercise of agency, experience formal education as necessary but far from sufficient.

The aspirations unleashed through education and often thwarted in the marketplace are not only expressed through changes in norms and economic mobility, but also through changes in motive and behaviour. Although profit and a higher standard of living are reported as proof of the benefits of adopting new products and processes, other less obviously economic motives such as collegiality, the expression of social status and the desire to nurture talent in others are evident when they clash with profit and still prevail.[241]

Banks and finance: The effects of the influx of formally registered national banks can hardly be overestimated. First they encourage innovation in new scales of technology, with subsidised loans encouraging capital bias, which in turn requires high rates of capacity utilisation. Banks also allow working capital loans for pure commerce (forbidden until the end of the 20th century).There is no monitoring of envirement or onwards lending into the informal money markets. ‘As long as were-pay the instalments the bank doesn’t interfere at all.’

By virtue of their collateral requirements (title deeds,etc) banks may play a role in formalising the informal economy along the lines advocated so influentially by de Soto (2000)[242]. Loans for education and housing have rapidly increased in size and frequency. Formal property may secure (multiple) loans from (multiple) formal accounts that are subsequently invested in the informal economy or lent onwards to others. These are impossible for banks to monitor (bank manager). Title may be vested in a collective (the family) under the customary laws embedded in the constitution, and hard to associate exclusively with an individual. And ‘there have been problems with duplicate (forged) title deeds in Arni’. Certain banks do not require collateral to lend to some occupation groups. Tailors mentioned their ease of access to formal loans which had been altogether denied them ten years earlier. Dalit sanitary workers in receipt of computerised salary transfers may be awarded loans of up to 10 times their salary and are accumulating formal debt for the first time ever. [243]Yet the new banks are far from

[240]They are said to lend at 5-20% per week and occasionally 10% per day.
[241] Electricians, carpenters
[242]Soto, H. de, 2000, *The Mystery of Capital*, Basic Books Perseus Books Group
[243]up to Rs 1 lakh Rs 1-2k is reported to be a usual outstanding amount for dalit sanitary workers.

routing the big informal financiers in Arni who remain businessmen (traders and agents), landlords and 'finance corporations' (in which a group of savers, including government employees, invest).

Innovation requires risk-taking. For electricians and construction workers this risk may be physical, but for the most part it is financial. We have no direct evidence about the equivalent in the informal economy of venture capital but, since no-one mentioned it, conclude that lack of it is a constraint on disruptive innovation. (As already mentioned, the scaling up of the electricians' invention has been taken over by a large registered company in Bangalore). Innovation through adoption and through the exercise of agency is far less risky in money terms. Nonetheless, risk does permeate the informal economy. 'Half the town is saving against shocks' (Chamber of Commerce). Sickness, marriage alliances (despite the downward drift and increasing optionality of dowries), and private school and college education are as 'shocking' to the budget of a small firm as weather related downturns or business losses. For shock-absorption purposes, bank interest is not high enough to compete with returns from property and gold, which can be cashed or mortgaged easily in the town. In response to the demand for gold, a big jewellery-company from Chennai is setting up in the town. And yet, as with informal money-lending, the biggest savers are widely said to be government officials with the least shock-prone work conditions and contracts.

Business associations: beyond the state's reach informal economic activity is regulated either as though the law were being enforced,[244] or through decisions of business associations. These organisations span the entire spectrum from the formal and nationally federated to the local and non-registered. Basile (2013) studied them closely in 1997.[245] She sees caste as a crucial element in a corporatist system of economic regulation in which the ideology of caste (defined as a hierarchy of social status associated increasingly loosely with occupations), is secularised and increasingly internally differentiated, while the institutions of caste move from the domain of culture to that of the economy and are more or less mapped onto business associations. These are 'manifestations of the social order': defining behaviour, co-opting members across class and thwarting the development of class consciousness. Their regulative roles may include screening entry, apprenticeship, defining contractual measures and types, credit, price control in the 'market' especially for labour and derived markets such as portering and transport[246], working conditions, the guarantee of livelihoods, mobilisation to compensate for accidents and premature death, poverty and social distress. Basile stresses the importance of the state in business association activity: the needs to limit the state's

[244]Olsen, W.K., and J. Morgan."Institutional Change From Within the Informal Sector in Indian Rural Labour Relations." *International Review of Sociology* 20, no. 3(2010) : 535-555.
[245]Basile uses the lens of Gramsci's theory of hegemony - in which the economic interests of capitalism use non-economic, political and cultural means to co-opt subaltern classes.
[246]Arni's silk association has a long history of state-connived containment of informal wages for weavers.

intrusiveness (e.g. from the Labour Act; the Packaging of Commodities Act and VAT)[247], to protect members from the police, to appeal against discrimination, while campaigning (often using bribes) for preferment and for infrastructure, for social rights and contracts. Two questions arise. How have the business associations themselves innovated since the 1997 research; and what role do the trade associations play in informal innovation?

Many associations exist reactively, spurred into action when threatened by the state or needed by members. Only 7 or 8 of the total of 67 have real clout[248] enhanced by federation and political influence at ministerial level. [249]But federation is one innovation that has gathered strength over the last 15 years in Arni. A second is business association support for informal training and the provision of accreditation for skills, a human 'collateral' which in turn permits the development of de-personalised transactions and migration for work. A third is the circulation of trade information, useful for the adoption of innovations from elsewhere. A fourth is the cosmopolitanisation of membership, such that the alignment between caste and trade associations is increasingly weak and acquired skill replaces ascribed merit.

In the process of informal innovation we found sharp contrasts between on the one hand, the oppressive conditions of wage/salaried workers (e.g. for transport workers: delayed payments, partial payments, refusal to renegotiate fixed wages, refusal to employ on permanent contract etc) which are not conductive to innovation; and, on the other, collegial support for invention, adaptive innovation and adoption on the part of petty artisans and small capitalist firms achieved not only through trade associations but also commercial contacts and access to banks.

So all forms of knowledge and education are preconditions forinstances of all types of innovation. Yet, despite the town's being a 'low-caste place', it is clear that being a dalit, belonging to areligious minority and being a womanconfine work possibilities for roughly two thirds of its population topositions where it is much harder to innovate in the informal market place.[250] And the combination of education, banks and business associations do not yet form a ***coherent*** *structure of innovation. The equivalent in the informal economy of the innovation system modelled in science and technology studies spans the bounds of formal and informal regulation in idiosyncratic ways and seems to operate with few inter-linkages – even informal ones. Alternatively laws, regulations and administrative procedures that can be amorphous or over-specified interact to trigger innovation in*

[247]Requiring published maximum retail price indication, lists of inventory , certified weights and measures and quality control in retail, none of which was being observed in Arni, which was resolved (conceded by the state) by an agreement for incremental and delayed implementation.
[248]including those for rice, silk cloth, groceries, gold, the Red Cross (reflecting human rights impulses in town), the Lions, Rotary and the chamber of commerce.
[249] Achievements include a reduction of power-cuts for rice mills and an agreement to let women enter tailoring.
[250] Muslims and Christians are about 10% of the population, Dalits about 15%, women 50%.

ways that have not been traced here. Further research on the social determinants of individual economic agency would be valuable.

10. CONCLUSION

Is the informal economy an obstacle to innovation? Pudumai – the Tamil word for innovation - means miracle as well as modern. There can be no doubting the miracles of individual resourcefulness showcased in this essay. While rural people are the poorest educated and while many ambitious young people leave Arni, those who remain are not detached from the growth process. India's growth, whether at 5or at 9 per cent, is translated into a fast-paced engagement with innovation and institutional churning, and innovation is a precondition for growth.

What kinds of innovation? While most Indian enterprises are in the informal economy it does not follow that the informal economy is the abode of enterprise. Enterprise and innovation are both fuzzy concepts, defined in many ways. But however these concepts are defined, the fieldwork reported here revealed examples of i) Schumpeterian entrepreneurship - the inventive bridging factors of production to create new production methods and technologies, in commodification, in cost-competition, products and forms of organisation; ii) adaptive technological and organisational innovation; iii) the transfer and diffusion of known technologies, processes, products and organisation into new social contexts, iv) the diffusion of knowledge through new roles for the media and education, new images just as capable of transforming local production relations as of feeding new social and economic aspirations; v) other motives for innovation than the realisation of social aspiration and status (not only profit, livelihood and the standard of living but also the problem-solving mentality celebrated by *Jugaad,* the need to respond to selective state failures in provision, regulation and enforcement, pre-emptive reactions to threatened change, collegiality/collective advancement and nurture); vi) innovation and agency by labour and for labour as well as by and for capital; vii) radical disruptive innovation (the NEFT of banks) as well as incremental innovation (cases of informal invention are all incremental); viii) the under-development of innovation rents permitting rapid copying and extensive multipliers and spill-overs with further impacts on the interface between the formal and informal economy and the state; ix) exit and exodus as innovation; x) creative destruction (of child labour, work, technologies, cultures and relations of of exchange, products, forms of organisation, and forms of finance); xi) the continuity of the informally acquired knowledge base as vital to the engagement with novelty. Far removed from the stereotype of 'rural idiocy'[251] and conservatism, these are all evidence of the abundant social and economic resources and relations - and of the range of motivations that might be put to work in a low C transition.

[251] For Marx who coined the phrase, it meant isolation, ignorance and an inability to co-operate.

What roles are played by informal institutions? Key institutions which regulate innovation in the informal economy, incentivising or discouraging novel practices, have been found to include the family-firm, social identity, education (formal and informal), banks (formal) and finance, and more or less well registered and active business associations. The exchange with the state, itself fully capable of innovation, includes the redefinition of the boundary between formal and informal activity (education, energy), selective enforcement (licences), tolerance of informal formalisation (certification) and neglect (in turn the product variously of capture, or of the scarcity of personnel and/or equipment). The informal equivalent of the research lab is the individual guinea-pig in society and the business association. Risk is borne by the innovator, buttressed by savings in which gold still plays an important role. Business associations/guilds grounded in caste are gate-keepers for entry as well as screeners of innovation. In a politics of representation, regulation and mediation, this set of corporatist interests negotiates collegiality within a sector just as it controls the erosion of social barriers to entry. Formal education most resembles an innovation system, but one where formal and informal knowledge institutions intertwine. While some kinds of innovation need training, skills and education, and while English is a passport to economic mobility, education generates its own paradoxes. Much knowledge is learned on the job in various ways - and through self-skilling. People with low education are not uninnovative.[252] People with high education are not necessarily given to innovation or required to innovate inside complex organisations.

Is there an informal structure of innovation resembling an innovation system? The meshing of formal and informal institutions counters the idea that they are discrete epistemological universes (Gupta, 1999) but this does not mean that the formal-informal distinction should be abandoned or that this hybrid 'ecosystem' works in a co-ordinated or systematic way or that it is immune from contradictions. Institutions serving useful roles in the structure of accumulation (gender for instance) may be barriers to agency and innovation. A coherent informal structure of innovation has yet to emerge and may never do so.

What are the implications of these findings about innovation for a new low-carbon industrial revolution that is not yet happening at a pace appropriate to the problem? Although this is not an Indian problem but a global one, the scope of informality is distinctively Indian, and the informal economy is *moving in the opposite direction to a low-carbon economy*. For every single example of energy efficiency (notably the three to two phase switching here) there are many more requiring energy from fossil fuel or the un-sustainable plundering of local natural resources.

That the direction of travel is negative is not the product of the informal economy per se. It reflects the entire Post-Independence thrust of industrialisation. A low carbon economy is a radical novelty as

[252] Indeed Anil Gupta has referred to the poor as knowledge rich and devoted his life to recording the vitality of innovations by poor people in agriculture and rural development (1999, Science, Sustainability and Social Purpose http://www.hks.harvard.edu/sustsci/ists/TWAS_0202/gupta_300199.pdf).

yet far from being accepted discursively as ‘development’. Indeed advocates of development often resist the idea that carbon emissions must be reduced. Appropriate and superior technology exists that can reduce carbon emissions, obstructed not by patent law but if at all by licensing. It is currently designed for a scale above that of the small town informal economy – one challenge is therefore to scale-down (size of new technology) while scaling-up (industrial output). However, the difference in capital intensity between the bazaar and current low C innovation is further exacerbated because many new renewable energy technologies have high capital costs relative to variable (‘running’) costs - and up-front investment costs are unattractive to banks.

But national policy for climate change implies a confrontation with technological / innovation systems already constructed by specific political interests, vested in existing arrangements, path dependent and dense in their demands for fossil fuel. This is reflected not in policy statements - for India is committed discursively to solar energy - but in a knot of poorly co-ordinated regulations: subsidies, tariffs, practices of bank lending, profit extraction and asset ownership, which together lock India into the fossil fuel usage that dominates public support and infrastructure subsidies. Low carbon development is currently conceived as the product of a research, development and diffusion process which cannot do without planning and is assumed to be formally state-regulated.[253] (Formal) market forces alone cannot create the new institutions and destroy the old ones for the new industrial revolution.

In the policy literature on informality the institutions of property rights and finance have pride of place is enjoyed by.[254] But property rights were rarely mentioned to us as problems in the informal economy: the impossibility of protecting innovation rents dynamises rapid diffusion. Even if protected by patents / IP, attempts will be made to reverse-engineer products and technology in the informal economy. Lack of access to formal investment finance is indeed an impediment to those lacking formal titles to property. But bank credit does not always require collateral[255] and once obtained it is easily vired into the informal economy. The scale of capital requirements can also be an impediment to innovation, where it tends at present to be small-scale and labour-intensive, but there is evidence of novel forms of collective organisation to scale up collective venture capital.[256]Lack of knowledge is an obstacle too, but there is an insatiable thirst for knowledge and evidence of informal institutions which provide it. The energy sector is where low carbon transitions must start, and some of the liveliest capabilities are to be found among informally qualified electricians and engineers. The embedding of the informal economy in institutions of identity might even privilege dalits, the most

[253] Harriss-White, Rohra and Singh 2009 EPW
[254] De Soto 2000
[255] It may rely on collective guarantees, on reputation or on stable income flows
[256] Sunali Rohra, 2012 PersComm, see also http://www.ceew.in/blog/

socially under-privileged workers, for, despite the chronically oppressive conditions in which they work, they are expert in energy, waste and refuse.

A non-marginal change in political capabilities would be needed, however, to address the two problems of the sluggish transition to low-carbon technology and the pervasive nature of India's informal economy whose innovative capabilities are not harnessed by the state, and there is no indication in our work so far how it might emerge.

Last, this study of innovation is embedded in a research project on the materiality of the economy, the waste gases from economic activity, and the prospects for a low C transition which negotiates the fact that most economic activity in India is in the informal economy. A*new research agenda* emerges from this pilot project, first and foremost to make progress in the search for a low C transition but also carrying important implications for other research fields:

i)the material stock and flow accounts of a small town, including its energy economy and construction sector;

ii)the waste economy and its institutions: solid, liquid and gaseous

iii) the roles of dalits in the management of solid and liquid waste and their potential as leaders in the management of gaseous waste;

iv) green innovation in the informal economy (exceptionally difficult to locate);

v) the education hub and the knowledge economy, informal knowledge and the informal economy;

vi) liberalisation, partial state intervention, fiscal non-compliance and local capitalism;

vii) the motors and effects of formalisation (the roles of banks, corporate capital and the state).

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Bhw wishes to thank the following people and organisations for the opportunity of presenting the aspect of a collective research project that is reported here: Prof KalpanaKannabiran and the Centre for Social Research Hyderabad, November 2012; Prof Pravin Jha and the Long Term Village Studies Conference JNU, New Delhi, November 2012, Prof Francois Combarnous, Universite Bordeaux IV, March 2013; Prof Xiaolan Fu and the TMD Centre, Oxford/Tsinghua Universities Conference on Innovation and Entrepreneurship for Inclusive and Sustainable Development(August 2013); Prof David Booth and the ClimUrb Conference, Manchester (September 2013). She is grateful to R Champaka and to Dr Sarah Hodges for their searching comments on the early draft.

REFERENCES (incomplete)

1. Camilla Roman, forthcoming, ‘Old is gold but change is permanent: understanding technological change and innovation’ in (ed) B Harriss-White Dynamism of Middle India, Palgrave;

2. F Stewart 1977 Technology and Underdevelopment Macmillan;

3. E O Wright 2012 Worker Managed Firms, Dept of I. R. and Politics, Oxford

4. Fitzgerald Heyer and Thorp Introduction in eds (FHT Overcoming thpersistence of Poverty and Inequality pp1-18

APPENDIX 1: ARNI 2012 QUESTIONNAIRE

TO BUSINESS ASSOCIATION PRESIDENTS AND OTHER NOTABLE REPRESENTATIVES ABOUT INNOVATION IN THE INFORMAL ECONOMY

1. Your sector – how big –number of firms - structure –castes – immigrants

What has been the biggest change in your sector over the last 50-10 years? A technique?A change in organisation?The structure of the sector?Something else?infrastructure? Let's choose the most important for you.

2. Where and when did it arrive? Would you say it was incremental or a big disruptive change?
3. Was it invented in Arni? Was it heard of somewhere else and transferred here? From where? By whom?
4. How was the knowledge acquired for the innovation? How did it affect work and thre social composition of the workforce? Did it have implications for womens' work? How?
5. If a worker innovated how were they involved and were they rewarded?
6. What were the most significant barriers to the innovation? Raw materials? Energy? Transport? Markets?
7. How was new technology adapted to local conditions?
8. What was needed by way of other skills – here and elsewhere? Other techniques and technologies (mobile phone)? Here and elsewhere?
9. What were the costs involved in acquiring these skills and technologies? Who covered them? How? (private loans/ government incentives/ tax breaks/ micro-finance loans?)
10. How was the innovation protected. How did it diffuse? Why?
11. Was it risky to introduce or develop? How were the risks dealt with? Did it result in failure and losses? How were they overcome? Did luck play a role?
12. Who opposed the innovation/ was there hostility? From whom? How expressed? Who lost out because of it? How and why?
13. How did the business association help at various stages? If not the business association , the caste association? The town organisations? An NGO?A political or religious organisation? Another kind of organisation outside the firm?
14. Was the government involved in any way? How? TN govt / parastatals /local municipality /? Did licences and vigilance play a role at all/ ? Where some policies helpful and others not – working in opposite directions? If so what?
15. What role did banks and bog companies play?
16. Were local private colleges and training facilities involved? How? Any informal institutions of learning?

17. How has the change affected the structure of your sector? \profits? Use of profits? Has it made entry more difficult?

18. Have there been further innovations that depend on the one you describe? What has been the impact on work in your sector? In the town? In the rural region?

19. Do you recall any failed innovations – ones which did not spread and were abandoned? Why do you think they failed?

20. Are there any important questions about innovation in your sector that we haven't asked you?

21. What do you want for your children's future?

EVALUATING ALTERNATIVE TECHNOLOGIES AND POLICIES: MULTICRITERIA MAPPING

Barbara Harriss-White

EVALUATING ALTERNATIVE TECHNOLOGIES AND POLICIES: MULTICRITERIA MAPPING

Barbara Harriss-White[257]

Introduction

In a set of production and distribution technologies and institutions that combine to make a supply chain in an economic sector like rice, if a systemic analysisof emissions at each stage is associated with the detail of costs, returns and the organisation of labour, then the highest-emitting part(s) of the system can be identified along with the worst conditions for workers.

It should next be possible to scope alternatives and make a social evaluation of them. This brief essay is about the methods that may be used.

Social Cost Benefit analysis and its problems:

Conventional appraisals of technological options take the form of social cost benefit analysis (SCBA), an attempt to enable rigorous comparisons of the stream of costs and returns from alternative (technological / policy) choices throughout the life of a 'project'. This is the only method that could inform the policy question whether to invest resources in a Kenyan hospital system or an Indian steel plant. Costs are estimated in (international) border prices for tradable goods and 'shadow' prices for domestic non-tradable ones. These pricesreflect real costs to society by un-distorting the effects of market imperfections (and subsidies and taxes) and by incorporating values for positive and negative externalities. Both costs and returns may include weights for the impact of a given choice upon saving, investments and income distribution as well as for certain political goals (or 'merit wants') – for instance employment and current consumption.Future costs and benefits are discounted back to the present by a social rate of interest that represents the opportunity cost of capital to the economy in real terms.

The point about this method is that all values are expressed in money terms.

SCBA has been criticised not only for the difficulties and subjective judgements involved in making money accounts of complex inputs and outputs. Since neither domestic economies nor the world economy work in equilibrium states of perfect competition, why create something that doesn't exist for the purpose of comparison? Weights for savings, consumption and investment contain value judgements, have social implications and are political decisions. The comparative analyses are usually narrow: between two or a few options (with or without streams of benefits); or a single project is evaluated, without any comparator, to ascertain its positive net present value. In practice SCBA is

[257] With thanks to Minerva Singh, Rebecca White, Andy Stirling and Alfy Gathorne-Hardy. References incomplete

often performed ex post rather than ex ante and justifies choices that have already been made for reasons other than the economic.[258]CBA is closed to divergent values, 'hubristic about uncertainty'. Itrequires auniquely authoritative solution as its objective. It suppresses dissent or public deliberation and denies the political nature of technological change.[259] Last but not least it ignores any dimension that cannot be reduced to money values.

Alternatives: MCA and MCM:

A range of social agentsmay not only generate different economic valuations but may also deploydifferent decision parameters, in different combinations and with different weights. With origins in military logistics in WW2, and now best developed for policy in Europe, Multi-Criteria Decision Making or Multi-Criteria Analysis is a class of decision-analytical tools developedover the last half century for evaluative criteria which may conflict. (Cost, quality and safety are regularly invoked as examples).[260] A given technology may not perform equally well in all criteria. In this kind of common problem, when there is no unique optimal solution/technology/policy that performs best on all criteria, a choice rests ona set of 'non-dominated' solutions/technologies/policies in which any other choice is impossible without sacrifice inat least one criterion. Typically there are large numbers of possibilities for criteria. Sopractical social choices then require criteria to be simplified and trade-offs to be calculable.

This family of approachesthen splits between methods to calculate trade-offs using one numeraire ($) (which have the same strengths and weaknesses as SCBA) and those exploring either a defined set or an open set of decision parameters that are not commensurable: for example, the social benefits of alternative biofuels or GM crops, their economic benefits, externalities, risks and environmental damage. In Analytical Decision Hierarchies, alternatives are ranked by pairwise comparisons of each criterion in a set of classes or preference-orderings. MCA can then be used to obtain a technical solution. The sub-field of engineering and economics is highly technically sophisticated - applied "to differing degrees and with varying success in fields such as transport and land-use planning, siting, energy policy, waste management, medicine, commercial decisionmaking, and sometimes technology assessment."[261]… "There is a thriving "market in methods" (Stirling and Mayer, 2001, 533).

But the approach can also be used heuristically to explore dimensions ofchange - in Multi-criteria Mapping (MCM).[262]MCMis a variation on the MCA approach which builds on the fact that socio-economic (class/occupational) position may shape evaluation. Instead of a politics in which all social

[258] Stewart F 1975 A Note on Social Cost Benefit Analysis and Class Conflict in LDCs *World Development* 3,1,31-40
[259] Stirling and Mayer 2001
[260]M Singh 2011
[261]The literature is cited in Stirling and Mayer, 1999
[262] 'Deliberative mapping, briefing 5': www.deliberative-mapping.org

evaluation is compressed and reduced to $ in order to make comparisons and analyse trade-offs, the MCM approach to decisions recognises a plurality of social interests and formally incorporates consultation and deliberation into social decision-making. Rather than leave policy problems as ‘implications for policy’ directed from a technical bridge ‘above’ the ship of state, it directly initiates a social and political conversation about policy implications.

The methodstructuresinformation about social agents’ perceptions and judgments about a series of options.“An explicit (and, as will be seen, somewhat contrived) working distinction betweenthe ostensibly `technical' concept of performance `scores' and the more openly subjective notion of criteria `weightings' is an idea common to all multi-criteria approaches.This offers an especially important feature in exploring the relationship between scientific and socio-political factors in appraisal” (Stirling and Mayer, 2001, p532) .Numerical scores have to be developed to reflect the weights of different social agents across a set of appraisal criteria. Assumptions about the role of politics, risk, uncertainty, the physical environment etc may be built in. Agents may weight the appraisal criteria themselves.The MCM tool computes scores, explores uncertainty, establishes social weights, ranks alternatives, identifies conflicts and consensus, and suggests social outcomes.

MCM software computes quantitative scores, uncertainties (differences between most optimistic and pessimistic scenarios), weights, and final ranks, transcripts of the interview and textual notes. The analysis is iterative and inductive. The usefulness and problems with MCM will become clear through a brief account of two applications.

Example 1.SPRU, 2006: An evaluation of policy options for obesity.[263] Policies need to have social support to be well implemented.There is plentiful evidence that evidence-based policy needs ‘stake holder’ support. Science, expert opinion, stakeholders and political drivers are pre-identified as the institutions responsible for the diffusion of a social response to a problem – the ‘stakeholders’. The MCM exercise in question was framed by reviewing the scale, trends social victims and drivers of obesity before introducing and characterising (in a ‘full description’) a set of 20 varied policy options either proposed or in course of implementation in selected EU countries – all with the specific objective of reducing obesity. Because of the laboriousness of the MCM interviews a small subset of these policies (7) were regarded as a core set, the remainder being discretionary. Next a set of 'criteria' were developed to represent different values or underlying issues which participants use when appraising those options.[264] Then the options were evaluated using each criterion in turn with numerical 'scores' to reflect the performance of each option under each criterion. Representatives from

---

[263]SPRU 2006 Policy options for responding to obesity: evaluating the options Sussex University

[264] Common criteria in policy analysis are : “**Effectiveness:** likely to achieve the intended result, **Utility:** clear benefits to individuals or population groups **Proportionality:** costs are acceptable for the gains **Equality:** no increase in discrimination or disadvantage **Accountability:** open to public scrutiny and challenge SPRU 2006 Policy options for responding to obesity: evaluating the options Sussex University

21 ‘stakeholder categories’ were invited to make optimistic and pessimistic weightings using specified scenarios.Finally a quantitative ‘weighting' was applied to each criterion, in order to reflect its relative importance.[265] Each option was then mapped across criteria and stakeholders to generate a set of consensus proposals for policy and a set of controversial ones.In the event, those interviewed generated a vast range of factors that they took into consideration in discussing and ranking the options.

Example 2.Stirling and Mayer 2001: An application of MCM to GM crops[266]Here the MCM exercise is framed in terms of the political tension generated by different social evaluations of risk, and the path dependence of a host of ramifying institutions when a risky decision is implemented. It was thought possible that stakeholders might conceive risk in ways that are incommensurable; and it is now well established that experts are but one constituency in the policy process, a constituency armed with a great variety of methods of analysing risk and decision making which in itself is a source of confusion to other stakeholders. MCM may be used to integrate a new generation of precautionary, deliberative or participative approaches to decision making with scientific methods such as SCBA. The substantive topic, the risk/safety of releasing GM crops in Europe, was framed in terms of 6 alternative production technologies. The stakeholders were 12 significant, authoritative protagonists in UK debates. Criteria were generated by the protagonists themselves – up to 12 each. General criteria such as precaution, efficiency, sustainability were interrogated in individual discussion. The interviews were long – 2-3 hours – but were claimed to be considerably shorter to the individuals concerned than other types of participatory method. Policy options/technologies were scored on a cardinal rating scale against criteria with reference to a set of specified scientific factors (e.g. employment versus cancer risks).[267]So were the criteria themselves. Normalised performance scores could then be multiplied by the importance weighting that expresses the relative subjective priority of each criterion for each stakeholder. The options were then ranked. Subsequently, the wide range of criteria invoked (117 in this exercise, many thought ex ante by the researchers to be of only indirect, of even scant, relevance to the problem of choice) were grouped (6 were actually generated – see the Table below), the sensitivity analysis of weightings could be explored, and consensus and controversial outcomes derived – along with reasons given for them. Participants were sent the results and asked to comment on the method and the substantive results. These interactions are described in detail in Strling and Mayer, 2001. Policies both for agriculture and for regulatory appraisal methods were generated from the MCM.

---

[265], SPRU, 2006, p10
[266] Stirling A and S Mayer 2001 A novel approach to the appraisal of technological risk: a multicriteria mapping study of a genetically modified crop *Environment and Planning C : Government and Policy*vol 19 pp 529-555
267 “Explicit `anchor points' proved useful for the assignment of scores: for example, reference to the current status quo as a mid-range score, or zero risk as a maximum score. In all cases a high numerical score corresponded with high performance and vice versa.” Stirling and Mayer 2001 p534

Some Comments and Criticisms:

1. MCM explicitly allows for the 'variability of perspectives, interdependency and conditionality among options' (S/M 2001 p1) if not outright conflicts of interest to be made explicit(S/M 2001 pp18-19). It therefore both captures *politics* and makes it explicit in the social valuation. Policy does not remain off-stage as an implication as is usual in research projects, with all the normative assumptions about state recourses and capacities that this procedure embodies, but is directly incorporated into the research process. Nonetheless, in comparison with analyses of the strategies and technologies of power exercised in policy processes (in the establishment of the discursive agenda, in the creation of procedure/law, in the raising of resources (financial and human) and in the organisation of social access to the state[268]), which disturb the assumptions used in framing policy impacts by implication, MCM works with a stylised and simplified model of the politics of policy.

2. The *framing* of the question for MCM is vital to the exerciseEven when the objective is very clear the method generates complexity. In contradistinction to most social science, the analytical procedure is non-reductionist.

3. Little theoretical rigour guides the choice of *'options'* (technologies / policies). SPRU explains (2006, p533) that options were 'pre-selected by researchers' – 'somewhat stylised' but participants could add to them. Stirling and Mayer describe 'various measures being discussed' (p6), 'to cover a range of fields' (p10). Commonly, options are legitimised through expert consensus - at best through defining a specific policy field. This is a 'sandpit-event'[269] approach to the legitimation of options. More systematic approaches have involved consulting a set of documents considered to be authoritative. This is a directive approach to the identification of alternatives. When in 1990, the entire sample of interests in a system of rural markets in West Bengal was systematically asked what policies would help them, there were two significant results,: first, many imaginative suggestions were advanced, few of which were currently reflected in regulative policy; second, many had objectives conflicting with those of other economic interests in the system.[270] In MCM while core options are directed, the extent to which other options suggested by stakeholders can be included is optional and

268see Bina Fernandez, 2012, for a fine deconstruction of the policy process (after Schaffer, 1984).Fernandez, B. 2012.Transformative Policy for Poor Women: A New Feminist Framework. Burlington, VT and Surrey, UK: Ashgate.

269 Adopted by the UK's Natural Environmental Research Council, sandpit events are a deliberately empiricist collaborative and time-bound approach to research design in which preselected experts from a variety of fields are assembled to address a preselected theme in a short and intense period of interaction from which authority flows.http://www.nerc.ac.uk/research/programmes/mre/events/ao-sandpit.asp?cookieConsent=A

[270]BHW 2008 *Rural Commercial Capital*, OUP ch 6.

the extent to which interests in them conflict is a function of the method of choice of stakeholders.

4. The concept of *stakeholders* is a metaphor: stakes may be held in many fields of interest with varying power, materiality and relevance.Important roles are played by the individual, often with no means of sampling for representivity.Theirchoice is a matter of judgment rather than theory: it is achieved through 'spanning a diverse range of institutional interests and perspectives'. (SPRU,2006 ,p 533) through 'consultation of the literature, discussions with potential participants, debates within the research team' (S/M 2001, p9, p11). Choice of stakeholdermay be used to bias and engineer results and to suppress dissent.[271]Willingness of stakeholders to be consulted also shapes the results. Without theory, stakeholders who may be part of the problem may be invited to generate solutions. It is not clear how the selection is weighted so as not to provide a desired result.

5. *Criteria* may be imposed or be chosen by stakeholders (S/M 2001 p13) and then classified and grouped ex post. Certain exercises identify a small set of core criteria and a larger imposed or open ended discretionary set. Subjective judgments are required here. In the EU exercise on obesity, common 'meta'-criteria included 'effectiveness (likelihood to achieve the chosen result) utility (clear benefits to defined groups in society) proportionality (costs are acceptable for gains) equality (no increase in disadvantage) accountability (open to public scrutiny)' (ibid). Open-ended criteria generate large quantities of information needing to be systematised across all options for them to be meaningful and for interviews not to be 'prejudiced rants'.

6. *Scores and weightings* are individually subjective and may be contrived. Normalisation doesn't solve this problem.

7. The interview process is reported to be laborious (SPRU p535)

Other points:

1. *Policy / decision making* has become a science, focussed on the decision and its rationality. Bernard Schaffer was one of the first among many to argue that the decision is an embattled process – his case study of the decision to drop the atomic bomb was a one of a decision that was never actually taken – a consensus moved towards a position in which there was no alternative, an act with fateful consequences to this day.[272] We saw earlier that the policy process has many elements. MCM systematises the contested and consensual elements of the decision but has not yet been extended to other dimensions of the policy process.

[271]Monbiot Stirling and Mayer
[272] Schaffer 1984 Towards Responsibility

2. *Entire policy fields*are technically labelled, a practice that is necessary but exclusionary. Nutrition policy for instance regularly excludes public food distribution or the alcohol industry and its consequences, both of which may overwhelm the effects of nutrition policy per se.[273] MCM could be used to open up a policy field to question but so far it is used to elicit rigorous evaluation of alternatives within a policy field or frame - which is taken as given.

3. *Options:* technologies, policies and organisational structures do not simply slot into a socio-economic system but have dynamic multiplier and spill-over effects throughout a system and over time. The Value Chain literature has contributedinsights into systemic repercussions in research on supplier versus producer driven governance. While it will be possible to open such effects up for discussion in MCM, the method by itself does not enable us to model dynamic consequences of technological change.

However, paraphrasing Joshi on CBA and begging a lot of further questions – a method is good enough if it gives us (shadow prices) that are simply derived, approximately right and which will lead the economy in the right direction'(!)[274]

Questions about our experiment.

1.Framing: An MCM exercise within our project has to question how to identify and then evaluate alternatives to the existing arrangements that either reduce GHGs or improve labour arrangements OR both.Should the question of options be framed in terms of social priorities over time, orof ranking the trade-offs between the evaluative criteria among the options? Or should there be a series of options to meet a fixed material goal? How much iterationbetween stakeholders and researchers over the results might it be possible to accommodate in practice? Can the method substitute for other approaches to impact and be justified in terms of the debate triggered by the set of interviews? Each of these questions involves a different approach to framing.

2. Choice of options: What are the type of optionswhich reduce GHGs while generating decent jobs? Science and technology studies and innovation studies have not generated a *scoping methodology*. Arrays of alternatives are often confined to particular institutions (e.g. in agricultural innovations from the CGIAR, or the IARI) or from a more or less systematic'literature review'. Property rights and commercial secrecy constrain what may be gathered from the internet. Some studies aspire to objectivity through key texts.

In our case we have had to await the results of the measurement stage of the project to know where the GHG hotspots and employment blackspots are sited. Candidates are alternative land use (millets),

[273] BHW and Janakarajan 2004
[274] V Joshi 1970 in ed W Eltis and M Scott Essays in Honour of Sir Roy Harrod' OUP

production technologies (organic/ SRI) energy (renewable), water (solar pumps), cows (mechanisation). Full and comparable descriptions of all possible alternatives will need to be developed. These have to be read in advance by interviewees. [See Appendix here for a draft example.]

3. Stakeholders: How to theorise stakeholders? What does bias mean and how to avoid it? How to handle differences in literacy and language, individual and group interviews (the latter almost unavoidable in India)? How important will gender and caste be in the identification of stakeholders?

(Candidatestakeholderswould be: farmers, labourers, machine providers, cattle industry, wholesalers, rice millers, their labour, lorry owners, supermarket owners/managers, their labour) – market creators / advertisers – educators – insurance – planners – policy makers (IAS officers (finance, agriculture, labour, environment, industry, PDS) ,lobbies and business associations: CII, chambers of commerce, rice industry organisations) – politicians - NGOs and think tanks – labour - journalists.)

Where to be sited? A new approach to site will be needed for this experiment: New Delhi, Chennai, small towns, villages. As well as being multi sited, the method will use Tamil and English.

4. What criteria are being used? (Alternatives may require unfeasible amounts of data) See appendix list.

Costs/returns

costs of not acting

benefit in GHGs

implications for quality and quantity of labour (and how best to summarise this?)

What factors/principles influence a rejection of the criteria? and options?

5. Sensitivity/ scenarios How to develop the political economy? Do we leave this to stakeholders? Do we formally internalise a narrative about the political changes needed for the alternative options to be developed? How are risks to be identified and internalised?

Research path/ procedure:

1. framing ->:

2. Options (policies/technologies) ->

3. Identification of stakeholders

4. Criteria; to develop through the objectives of our research proposal! (cost,cost of not taking action, GHGs, jobs (quality or quantity) vs others' own criteria or neglected issues)->decision on whether criteria are to be open ended or closed, core or discretionary, trade-offable or absolute->

5. Development of comparable narratives for options ->interviewer needs to be able to describe anchor point numbers and their meaning

7. development of numerical scores to reflect individual weighting ->

8. participants' scoring of options under chosen appraisal criteria ->

sensitivity analysis for scores under favourable/unfavourable assumptions optimistic and pessimistic scenarios (roles of actors external to exercise ; descriptions of what the optimistic and pessimistic scenarios involve.) ->

9. participants scoring / weighting of appraisal criteria themselves->

10. assess scores – the software normalises the scores to preserve ratios while avoiding bias due to arbitrarily higher or lower values.

11. explore uncertainty -> weights -> take the scores and multiply by the weightings to give rankings - ranks and outcomes->group the criteria - sensitivity analysis of weightings –

12. feedback – how iterative and interactive it is feasible to be will depend on practicalities of time, space and resources.

Table: List of grouped criteria for the example of GM Crops Stirling and Mayer 2001)

1. Biodiversity (Chemical use, Genetic pollution, Secondary wildlife effects Unexpected effects Ethical Aesthetic Visual)
2. Agriculture (Weed control, Food-supply stability, Agricultural practices, Other effects)
3. Health (Allergenicity, Toxicity, Nutrition, Unexpected effects, Ability to manage
4. Economic (Consumer price benefit, Farmers' or commercial users' yield, profit benefit, benefit overall
5. Social (Individual consumer choice benefit, need, participation, Institutional impacts and demands, Social need benefit and trajectory
6. Other (Ethical, Knowledge Base)

(Source: Sitrling and Mayer 2001)